

THE
Newe Testa-
MENT OF OUR
LORD IESVS
CHRIST.

*Faithfullie translated out
of Greeke.*



Imprinted by IOHN LE-
GATE, Printer to the
Vniuersitie of
Cambridge.

G

02
reth
Than
at A
nina
non
looz
e.*A
he K
rife
and
An
ma
ega
achs
ale
at I
ega
they

THE HOLY
GOSPEL OF IE-
SVS CHRIST AC-
CORDING TO SAINT
MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

THE booke of the generation of
Iesus Christ the sonne of Dauid,
the sonne of Abraham. *Abraham
begate Isaac. And Isaac begate Ia-
cob. And Iacob begat Iudas & his
brethren. *And Iudas begat Phares, and Zara of
Thamar. And Phares begat Esrom. And Esro be-
gat Aram. *And Aram begat Aminadab. And A-
minadab begat Naasson. And Naasson begat Sal-
mon. *And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab. And
Booz begat Obed of Ruth. And Obed begat Ies-
se. *And Iesse begat Dauid the King. And Dauid
the King begate Solomon of her that was the
wife of Urias. *And Solomon begate Roboam.
And Roboam begat Abia. And Abia begat Asa.
And Asa begate Iosaphat. And Iosaphat begat
Joram. And Joram begate Hozias. *And Hozias
begat Ioatham. And Ioatham begat Achaz. And
Achaz begat Ezekias. *And Ezekias begat Ma-
nasses. And Manasses begat Ammon. And Ammon be-
gat Iosias. *And Iosias begat Iakim. And Iakim
begat Iechonias and his brethren about the time
they were caried away to Babylon. *And after
they

S. MATTHEWE.

they were caryed into Babylon, Iechonias begat
13 Salathiel. And Salathiel begat Zorobabel. * And
Zorobabel begat Abiud. And Abiud begat Eli-
14 cim. And Eliacim begate Azor. * And Azor be-
gat Sadoc. And Sadoc begat Achim. And Achim
15 begate Eliud. * And Eliud begate Eleazar. And
Eleazar begat Matthan. And Matthan begat Ja-
16 cob. * And Iacob begate Ioseph the husband
of Marie, of whō was borne I E S V S, that is
17 led Christ. * So all the generations from A-
ham to David, were fourteene generations. And
from David vntil they were caryed away into Ba-
bylon, fourteene generations: & after they were
caryed away into Babylon vntil Christ, fourteene
18 generations. * Nowe the birth of I E S V S
Christ was thus. When as his mother Marie was
betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together,
she was founde with childe of the holy Ghost.
19 * The Ioseph her husband being a iust man, & not
willing to make her a publike exāple, was deter-
20 ded to put her away secretly. * But while he
thought these things, behold, the Angel of the
Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph
the sonne of David feare not to take Marie thy
wife: for that which is conceiued in her, is of the
21 holy Ghost. * And she shall bring forth a sonne,
& thou shalt cal his name I E S V S: for he shall
22 saue his people from their sinnes. * And when
all this was done that it might be fulfilled, which
was spokē of the lord by the prophet, saying, Behold,
a virgine shall be with child, & shall beare a sonne,
& they shall cal his name Emmanuel, which is
with vs.

C H A P. II.

ias began by interpretation, God with vs. *Then Ioseph 27
 being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of
 the Lord had inioyned him, & tooke his wife.
 But he knew her not, til she had brought forth 28
 her first borne sonne, & he called his name Iesus.

C H A P. III.

W Hē Iesus then was borne at Beth-leē in Iu- 1
 dea, in the daies of Herod the king, behold, 2
 there came Wisemē from the East to Hierusale, 3
 saying, *Where is the king of the Iewes that 4
 is born? for we haue seene his starre in the East, 5
 & are come to worship him. *When King He- 6
 rod heard *this*, he was troubled, & al Hierusalem 7
 with him. *And gathering together al the chiefe 8
 Priests, & Scribes, of the people, he asked of thē, 9
 where Christ should be borne. *And they said 10
 unto him, At Beth-leē in Iudea: for so it is writ- 11
 ten by the prophet, *And thou Beth-leem in the 12
 land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes 13
 of Iuda: for out of thee shal come the gouernor 14
 that shal feed that my people Israel. *Then He- 15
 rod priuily called the Wisemen, & diligētly en- 16
 quired of thē the time of the starre that appea- 17
 red, *And sent them to Beth-leem, saying, Go, & 18
 search diligently for the babe: & when ye haue 19
 found him, bring me worde againe, that I may 20
 come also, & worship him. *So when they had 21
 heard the King, they departed: & loe, the starre 22
 which they had seene in the East, went before 23
 them, till it came & stood ouer the place where 24
 the babe was. *And when they saw the starre, 25
 they reioiced with an exceeding great ioy. *And 26

S. MATTHEWE,

- went into the house, & found the babe with his mother, & fell downe, & worshipped him: & they opened their treasures, and presented vnto him giftes, *euē* gold, and frankincense, and myrrour.
- 12 * And after they were warned of God in a dream, that they should not go again to Herod: they returned into their countrey another way.
- 13 * After their departure, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dream, saying, Arise, & take the babe & his mother, and flee into Egypt, & be there till I bring thee word: for Herod will seeke the babe, to destroy him. * So he arose and toke the babe & his mother by night, and departed into Egypt, * And was there vnto the death of Herod, that that might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne.
- 16 * Then Herod, seeing that he was mocked of the Wise men, was exceeding wroth, & sent forth, & slew all the male childre that were in Beth-leem, & in all the coastes thereof, from two yeere of age and vnder, according to the time which he had diligently searched out of the Wise men. * This was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying, * In Rhama was a voice heard, mourning, & weeping, & great howling: Rachel weeping for her childre, & would not be comforted, because they were not. * And when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt, saying, Arise, & take the babe & his mother, & go into the lande of Israel: for they are dead which sought thy life.

CHAP. III.

with Marye brought the babes life. *Thē he arose vp, & tooke 21
 the babe & his mother, & came into the land of
 Israel. *But when he heard that Archelaus did 22
 rigne in Iudea in steade of his father Herod, he
 was afraid to go thither: yet after he was war-
 ned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into
 the partes of Galile, *And went and dwelt in a
 citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled 23
 which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was,*
 that he should be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. III.

And in those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came & 1
 preached in the wildernesse of Iudea, *And 2
 said, Repēt: for the kingdom of heauē is at hand.
 For this is he of whom it is spokē by the pro- 3
 phet Elaias, saying, The voice of him that crieth
 in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the 4
 Lord: make his paths strait. *And this Iohn had
 his garment of camels haire, & a girdle of skin
 about his loins: his meat was also locusts & wild 5
 honey. *Thē went out to him Hierusalē & al Iu- 6
 dea, & al the region round about Iordā. *And they
 were baptized of him in Iordā, confessing their 7
 finnes. *Now whē he saw many of the Pharisea,
 & of the Sadduces come to his baptisime, he
 said vnto thē, O generatiōs of vipers, who hath 8
 rewarmed you to flie from the anger to come?
 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy amēdmēt of 9
 the life. *And thinke not to say with your selues,
 We haue Abraham to our father: for I say vnto 10
 you, that God is able euē of these stones to raise
 vp children vnto Abraham. *And now also is 10

S. MATTHEWE.

the axe put to the roote of the trees : therefore
 euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruit,
 is hewen downe, & cast into the fire. * Indeed I
 baptize you with water to amēdmēt of life, but
 he that cometh after me, is mightier thē I, whose
 shoes I am not worthie to beare: he wil baptize
 you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. * Which
 hath his fanne in his hād, & wil make cleane his
 floore, & gather his wheat into his garner, but
 wil burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.
 * Thē came Iesus frō Galile to Iordā vnto Iohn,
 to be baptized of him. * But Iohn earnestly put
 him backe, saying, I haue need to be baptized of
 thee, and comest thou to me? * Then Iesus an-
 swering, said to him, Let be now: for thus it be-
 cometh vs to fulfil al righteousnes. So he suffred
 him. * And Iesus when he was baptized, came
 straite out of the water. And lo, the heauēs were
 opened vnto him & Iohn saw the Spirit of God
 descending like a done, and lighting vpon him.
 * And lo, a voice came from heauen, saying, This
 is my beloued Sonne, in whō I am well pleased.

C H A P. II II.

Then was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the
 wildernes to be tempted of the deuil. * And
 when he had fasted fortie daies & fortie nights,
 he was afterward hungrie. * Then came to him
 the tempter, & said, If thou be the Sōne of God,
 cōmand that these stones be made bread. * But
 he answering, said, It is writtē, Man shall not line
 by bread only, but by euery word that procee-
 deth out of the mouth of God. * Then the deuil
 tooke

CHAP. IIIL.

tooke him vp into the holy city, & set him on a
 pinnacle of the temple, * And said vnto him, If
 thou be the sone of God, cast thy selfe down: for
 it is writtē, that he wil giue his angels charge o-
 uer thee, & with their hads they shal lift thee vp,
 lest at any time thou shouldest dash thy foot a-
 gainst a stone. * Iesus said vnto him, It is written
 again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.
 * Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceed-
 ing hie mountaine, & shewed him all the king-
 domes of the world, & the glory of them, * And
 said to him, All these wil I giue thee, if thou wilt
 fall downe, & worship me. * Then said Iesus vn-
 to him, Auoid Satan: for it is writtē, Thou shalt
 worship the lord thy god, & him only shalt thou
 serue. * Then the deuil left him: & behold, the
 angels came, & ministred vnto him. * And when
 Iesus had heard that Iohn was cōmitted to pri-
 son, he returned into Galile, * And leauing Naza-
 reth, went & dwelt in Capernaum, which is nere
 the sea in the borders of Zabulō & Nephthalim
 * That it might be fulfilled which was spokē by
 Esaias the Prophet, saying, * The land of Zabu-
 lon, & the land of Nephthalim by the way of the
 sea, beyond Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles: * The
 people which sate in darknes, saw great light, &
 to them which sate in the region, & shadowe of
 death, light is risen vp. * From that time Iesus
 began to preach & to say, Amend your lines: for
 the kingdom of heauen is at hand. * And Iesus
 walking by the sea of Galile, sawe two brethren,
 Simon, which was called Peter, & Andrew his
 brother

S. MATTHEWE

brother, casting a net into the sea (for they were
 2 fishers.) *And he said vnto them, Follow me, and
 3 I will make you fishers of men. * And they
 4 straightway leauing the nets, followed him.
 5 *And whē he was gone forth frō thence, he saw
 6 other two brethrē, James *the sonne* of Zebedeus,
 7 and Iohn his brother in a ship with Zebedeus
 8 their father, mending their nets, & he called thē.
 9 * And they without tarying, leauing the ship, &
 10 their father, followed him. *So Iesus wēt about
 11 all Galile, teaching in their synagogues, & prea-
 12 ching the Gospell of the kingdome, & healing
 13 euery sicknes & euery disease amōg the people.
 14 *And his fame spred abroad through all Syria
 15 & they brought vnto him all sicke people, that
 16 were takē with diuers diseases & torments, and
 17 them that were possessed with deuils; and those
 18 which were lunatike, & those that had *the pal-*
 19 *sie*: & he healed them. *And there folowed him
 20 great multitudes out of Galile, & Decapolis, &
 21 Hierusalem, & Iudea, and from beyond Iordan.

C H A P. V.

2 **A**ND when he saw the multitude, he went vp
 3 into a mountaine: and when he was set, his
 4 disciples came vnto him. *And he opened his
 5 mouth, & taught them, saying, * Blessed are the
 6 poore in spirite, for theirs is the kingdome of
 7 heaven. *Blessed are they that mourne: for they
 8 shalbe comforted. *Blessed are the meeke: for
 9 they shall inherite the earth. *Blessed are they
 10 which hunger and thirst for righteousnesse: for
 11 they shalbe filled. *Blessed are the merciful: for
 12 they

CHAP. V.

they shall obtaiue mercie. *Blessed *are* the pure
in heart : for they shall see God. *Blessed *are* the
peacemakers: for they shalbe called the children
of God. *Blessed *are* they which suffer persecu-
tion for righteousness sake: for theirs is the king-
dom of heauen. *Blessed shall ye be when men
revile you, & persecute *you*, & say all manner of
euil against you for my sake, *salty*. *Reioice and
be glad, for great is your reward in heauē: for so
persecuted thei the prophets which were before
you. *Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt
haue lost his sauer, wherewith shall it be salted?
It is theēseforth good for nothing, but to be cast
out, and to be troden vnder soote of men. *Ye
are the light of the world. A citie that is set on
an hil, can not be hid. *Neither do men light a
candle, & put it vnder a bushel, but on a candle-
sticke, & it giueth light vnto all that are in the
house. *Let your light so shine before men, that
they may see your good works, & glorifie your
Father which is in heauen. *I thinke not that I
am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets. I
am not come to destroy *thē*, but to fulfil them.
*For truly I say vnto *you*, Till heauen and earth
perish, one iote or one title of the Law shal not
scape, till all things be fulfilled. *Whoso euer
therefore shall breake one of these least cōman-
demēts, & teach *mē* so, he shalbe called the least
in the kingdom of heauen : but whoso euer shal
obserue & teach *thē*, the same shalbe called great
in the kingdō of heauen. *For I say vnto *you*, ex-
cept your righteousness exceede the *righteousnes*
of

S. MATTHEWE.

21 of the Scribes & Pharises, ye shall not enter in
 22 to the kingdom of heauen. *Ye haue heard that
 it was said vnto the of the old time, Thou shalt
 not kill: for whosoener killeth, shalbe culpable
 23 of iudgment. *But I say vnto you, whosoener is
 24 angrie with his brother vnadvisedly, shalbe cul-
 pable of iudgement. And whosoener saith vnto
 his brother, Raca, shall be worthy to be punish-
 ed by the Councill. And whosoener shall say,
 25 Foule, shalbe worthy to be punished with hell
 26 fire. *If then thou bring thy gift to the altar, &
 there remembreth that thy brother hath ought
 against thee, *Leave there thine offering before
 the altar, and go thy way: First be reconciled to
 27 thy brother, & the come & offer thy gift. *Agree
 28 with thine aduersary quickly, whiles thou art in
 the way with him, least thine aduersarie deliue
 thee to the Iudge, & the Iudge deliue thee to
 the sergeant, & thou be cast into prisō. *Verily I
 say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, till
 29 thou hast payed the vtmost farthing. *Ye haue
 heard that it was said to the, of old time, Thou
 shalt not commit adulterie. *But I say vnto you,
 30 that whosoener loketh on a womā to lust after
 her, hath committed adulterie with her already in
 his heart. *Wherefore if thy right eye cause thee
 to offend, pluck it out, & cast it fro thee: for bet-
 ter it is for thee, that one of thy members perish
 the than that thy whol body should be cast into hell.
 31 *Also if thy right hand make thee to offend, cut
 it off, & cast it from thee: for better it is for thee
 that one of thy members perish, then that the
 whol

who
 said
 let
 vnto
 (ex
 mit
 is d
 haue
 Tho
 perf
 to y
 it is
 for
 is th
 swe
 mak
 mur
 is m
 that
 for a
 but
 chee
 will
 let h
 com
 *Gi
 bor
 that
 bou
 Lou
 do g
 whic

CHAP. V.

whole body shold be cast into hel.*It hath bin
said also, Whosoever shall put away his wife,
let him giue her a bil of diuorcemēt.*But I say
vnto you, whosoever shall put away his wife,
(except it be for fornication) causeth her to cō-
mit adulterie:& whosoever shal marrie her that
is divorced, committeth adulterie.*Againe, ye
haue heard that it was said to thē of old time,
Thou shalt not forswear thy selfe, but shalt
performe thine oths to the Lord.*But I say vn-
to you, Swear not at all, neither by heaven, for
it is the throne of God.*Nor yet by the earth,
for it is his footstool: neither by Ierusalē: for it
is the city of the gret King.*Neither shalt thou
swear by thine head, because thou canst not
make one hair white or black.*But let your cō-
municatiō be yea, yea: nay, nay.*For whatsoever
is more thē these, cometh of euil.*Ye haue heard
that it hath bin said, An eie for an eie, & a tooth
for a tooth.*But I say vnto you, Resist not euil:
but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right
cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any mā
will sue thee at the law, & take away thy coate,
let him haue thy clok also.*And whosoever wil
compel thee to go a mile, go with him twaine.
*Giue to him that asketh, & frō him that wold
borrow of thee, turne not away.*Ye haue heard
that it hath bin said, Thou shalt loue thy neigh-
bour, & hate thine enemy.*But I say vnto you,
Loue your enemies: blesse them that curse you:
do good to them that hate you, & pray for thē
which hurt you & persecute you,*That ye may

S. MATTHEWE.

be the children of your Father that is in heauen: for he maketh his Sonne to arise on the euill, & the good: & sendeth raine on the iust, & vniust.

- 4 *For if ye loue thē which loue you, what reward shall you haue? Do not the Publicanes euen the same? 7 *And if ye be friendly to your brethren only, what singular thing do ye? do not euē the Publicanes likewise? *Ye shall therefore be perfect, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfect.

C H A P. VI.

- 1 **T**AKE heed that ye giue not your almes before men, to be seene of them, or els ye shall haue no reward of your Father which is in heauen. 2 *Therefore whē thou giuest thine almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blown before thee, as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues & in the streets, to be praised of mē. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their reward. 3 *But when thou doest thine almes, let not thy left hand know 4 what thy right hand doeth, *That thine almes may be in secret, & thy Father that seeth in secret, he wil reward thee openly. 5 *And whē thou praieest, be not as the hypocrites: for they loue to stand, & pray in the Synagogues, & in the corners of the streets, because they would be seene of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their reward. 6 *But whē thou praieest, enter into thy chamber: & when thou hast shut thy doore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secret. & thy Father which 7 seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. *Also when ye pray, vse no vaine repetitions as the heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babling.

fin
Fat
ask
ye,
thy
eue
our
also
tent
the
ner,
ses,y
*But
mon
*Mo
hype
they
vnto
thou
*Th
thy
whic
*Lay
earth
wher
vp tr
ther
thee
wher
also.
thine
*But

CHAP. VI.

Sing. *Be ye not like them therefore: For your
 Father knoweth wherof ye haue need before ye
 aske of him. *After this manner therefore pray
 ye, Our Father which art in heauē, halowed be
 thy name. *Thy kingdō come. Thy wil be done
 even in earth, as *it is* in heauē. *Giue vs this day
 our daily bread. *And forgie vs our detts, as we
 also forgie our detters. *And lead vs not into
 tentation, but deliuer vs from euill: for thine is
 the kingdom, and the power, & the glory for e-
 uer, Amē. *For if ye do forgie mē their trespasses,
 your heavenly Father will also forgie you.
 *But if ye do not forgie mē their trespasses, no
 more wil your father forgie you your trespasses.
 *Moreover, when ye fast, look not sower as the
 hypocrites: for they disfigure their faces, that
 they might seeme vnto men to fast. Verely I say
 vnto you, that they haue their reward. *But whē
 thou fastest, anoint thine head, & wash thy face,
 *That thou seein not vnto mē to fast, but vnto
 thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father
 which seeth in secret, will reward thee openly.
 *Lay not vp treasures for your selues vpon the
 earth, where the mothe & canker corrupt, &
 where theeuēs digge through & steale. *But lay
 vp treasures for your selues in heauē, where nei-
 ther the mothe nor canker corrupteth, & where
 theeuēs neither digge through, nor steale. *For
 where your treasure is, there will your heart be
 also. *The light of the bodie is the eye: if then
 thine eie be single, thy whol body shal be light.
 *But if thine eie be wicked, thē all thy body shal
 be

S. MATTHEWE.

be dark. Wherefore if the light that is in thee, be
 24 darknes, how great is that darknes: * No mā can
 serue two matters: for either he shall hate the
 one, & loue the other, or els he shall leane to the
 one, & despise the other. Ye can not serue God &
 25 riches. * Therefore I say vnto you, be not care-
 full for your life, what ye shall eate, or what ye
 shall drinke: nor yet for your bodie what ye shall
 put on. Is not the life more worth then meat? &
 26 the body then rayment? * Behold the foules of
 the heauen: for they sow not, neither reape, nor
 cary into the barnes: yet your heavenly Fa-
 ther feedeth them. Are ye not much better then
 27 they? * Which of you by taking care is able to
 28 adde one cubit vnto his stature? * And why care
 ye for raiment? Learn how the lilies of the field
 doe growe: they are not wearied, neither spinne
 29 * Yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomō in al his
 30 glory was not araided like one of these. * Where-
 fore if God so cloth the grasse of the field which
 is to day, and to morowe is cast into the ouer
 shall he not doe much more vnto you, O ye of
 31 little faith? * Therefore take no thought, saying
 What shall we eate? or what shall we drinke?
 32 wherewith shall we be clothed? * (For after
 these things seeke the Gentiles) for your heauenly
 Father knoweth that ye haue neede of all these
 33 things. * But seeke ye first the kingdom of God
 & his righteousness, & al these things shall be mi-
 34 nistred vnto you. * Care not then for the mor-
 rowe: for the morow shall care for it selfe: the
 day hath y enough with his owne griefe.

CHAP

CHAP. VII.

Iudge not, that ye be not iudged.* For with 2
 what iudgement ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged, & 3
 with what measure ye mete, it shalbe measured
 to you againe. * And why seest thou the mote 3
 that is in thy brothers eie, & perceiuest not the
 beame that is in thine own eye? * Or how saiest 4
 thou to thy brother, Suffer me to cast out the
 mote out of thine eye, & behold, a beame is in
 thine own eie? * Hypocrit first cast out the beam 5
 out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see
 clearly to cast out the mote out of thy bro-
 thers eye. * Giue yee not that which is holy, to 6
 dogs, neither cast ye your pearles before swine,
 lest they tread them vnder their feet, & turning
 again, al to rent you. * Ask, & it shalbe giue you: 7
 seeke, & ye shall finde: knock, & it shalbe opened
 vnto you. * For whosoever asketh, receueth: & he 8
 that seeketh, findeth & to him that knocketh, it
 shalbe opened. * For what man is there among 9
 you, which if his sonne aske him bread, would
 giue him a stone? * Or if he aske fish, wil he giue 10
 him a serpent? * If ye then, which are euil, can giue 11
 to your children good giftes, how much more
 shall your Father which is in heauen, giue good
 things to them that aske him? * Therefore what- 12
 soeuer ye wold that men should do to you, euē
 so do ye to them: for this is the Law & the Pro- 13
 phets. * Enter in at the strait gate: for it is the 14
 wide gate, & broad way that leadeth to destru-
 ctio: & many there be which go in thereat. * Be-
 cause the gate is strait, & the way narrow that
 leadeth vnto life, & fewe there be that find it.

B. I.

Beware

S. MATTHEWE.

- 25** *Beware of fals Prophets, which come to you in
 sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening
26 wolues. *Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do
 men gather grapes of thornes? or figges of thi-
27 stles? *So euery good tree bringeth forth good
 fruit, & a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill
28 fruit? *A good tree can not bring forth euill
 fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good
29 fruit. *Euery tree that bringeth not forth good
30 fruit, is hewen down, & cast into the fire. *There-
31 fore by their fruites ye shal know them. *Not
 euery one that saith vnto me, Lord, Lord, shall
 enter into the kingdome of heauen, but he that
 doeth my Fathers wil which is in heauen. *Ma-
32 ny will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue
 we not by thy Name prophesied? and by thy
 name cast out deuils? & by thy Name done ma-
33 ny great works? *And the wil I professe to the,
 I neuer knewe you: depart from me, ye that
34 work iniquitie. *Whosoever the heareth of me
 these words, & doth the same, I wil like him to
 a wise man, which hath builded his house on a
35 rock. *And the rain fel, & the floods came, & the
 winds blew, & beat vpon that house, & it fel not
36 for it was prouided on a rock. *But whosoever
 heareth these my words, & doth them not, shall
 be likened vnto a foolish man, which hath build-
37 ed his house vpon the sand. *And the rain fel, &
 the floods came, & the winds blew, & beat vpon
 that house, & it fell, & the fall thereof was great.
28 * And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended
 these words, the people were astonied at his do-

ctrine

CHAP. VIII.

Arise. *For he taught them as one having au- 29
thoritie, & not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

NOwe when he was come downe from the 1
mountaine, great multitudes followed him.
*And lo, there came a Leper & worshipped him, 2
saying, Master, if thou wilt, thou canst make me
cleane. *And Iesus putting forth his hande, 3
touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane: &
immediatly his leprosie was clesed. *Then Ie- 4
sus said vnto him, See thou tel no man, but go,
& shew thy self vnto the Priest, & offer the gift
that Moses comaded, for a witnes to the. *Whē 5
Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came
vnto him a Centuriō, beseeching him, *And said, 6
Master, my seruāt lieth sick at home of the pal-
sie, & is grievously pained. *And Iesus said vnto 7
him, I will come & heale him. *But the Centu- 8
rion answered, saying, Master, I am not worthy
that thou shouldest come vnder my roose: but
speake the word only, & my seruāt shalbe hea-
led. *For I am a mā also vnder the authority of 9
another & haue souldiers vnder me: & I say to
one, Go, & he goeth: & to another, Come, & he
cometh: & to my seruāt, Do this, & he doth it.
*When Iesus heard that, he marueiled & said to 10
the that followed him, Verely, I say vnto you, I
haue not found so great faith, euē in Israel. *But 11
I say vnto you, that many shall come from the
East & West, & shal sit downe with Abraham, &
Isaac, & Iacob, in the kingdom of heauen. *And 12
the childre of the kingdom shalbe cast out into

S. MATTHEWE.

- utter darknes, there shalbe weeping & gnashing
 13 of teeth. * The Iesus said vnto the Centurio, Go
 thy way, & as thou hast beleued, so be it vnto
 thee. And his seruat was healed the same houre.
 14 * And when Iesus came to Peters house, he saw
 his mother laid down, & sicke of a feuer.
 15 * And he touched her hand, & the feuer left her.
 16 so she arose, & ministred vnto them. * Whē the
 euen was come, they brought vnto him many
 that were possessed with deuils: & he cast out
 the spirits with *his* word, & healed al that were
 17 sick, * That it might be fulfilled, which was spo-
 ken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, He took our
 18 infirmities, & bare *our* sicknesse. * And whē Ie-
 sus saw great multitudes of people about him,
 19 he comanded them to go ouer *the water*. * Then
 came there a certaine Scribe, & said vnto him,
 Master, I will followe thee whithersoever thou
 20 goest. * But Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue
 holes, & the birds of the heauē haue nests, but the
 Sōne of man hath not wheron to rest his head.
 21 * And another of his disciples said vnto him, Ma-
 22 ster suffer me first to go, & bury my father. * But
 Iesus said vnto him, Follow me, & let the dead
 23 bury their dead. * And when he was entred into
 24 the ship, his disciples folowed him. * And behold
 there arose a great tempest in the sea, so that the
 shippe was couered with waues: but he was
 25 sleepe. * Then his disciples came, & awoke him,
 26 saying, Master, saue vs, we perishe. * And he said
 vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O ye of little
 faith? Then he arose, & rebuked the winds & the

C H A P. IX.

Sea: & so there was a great calme. * And the men 27
 marueiled, saying, What man is this, that both
 the winds & the sea obey him. * And whē he was 28
 come to the other side into the countrey of the
 Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with
 deuils, which came out of the graues very fierce,
 so that no mā might go by that way. * And be- 29
 hold, they cryed out, laying, Iesus the Sonne of
 God, what haue we to do with thee? Art thou
 come hither to torment vs before the time?
 * Now there was a far off frō thē, a great heard 30
 of swine feeding. * And the deuils belought him, 31
 saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to go into
 the heard of swine. * And he said vnto thē, Go. 32
 So they went out & departed into the heard of
 swine: & behold, the whole heard of swine ran
 headlong into the sea, and dyed in the water.
 * Thē the heardinē fled: & whē they were come 33
 into the citie, they told all things, & what was
 become of thē that were possessed with the de-
 mons. * And behold, al the city came out to meet 34
 Iesus: & when they saw him, they belought him
 to depart out of their coastes.

C H A P. IX.

Then he entred into a ship, & passed ouer, & 1
 came into his owne citie. * And loe, they 2
 brought to him, a man sick of the palsie, laid on
 a bed. And Iesus seing their faith, said to the sick
 of the palsie, Sōne, be of good cōfort: thy sinnes
 are forgiven thee. * And beholde, certaine of the 3
 Scribes said with them selues, This mā blasphem-
 eth. * But when Iesus sawe their thoughtes, he 4

S. MATTHEWE.

saide, Wherefore thinke ye euill things in your
5 hearts? * For whether is it easier to say, Thy sins
6 are forgiven thee, or to say, Arise, & walke? * And
that ye may know that the Son of man hath au-
thoritie in earth to forgiue sins, (then said he vn-
to the sick of the palsey,) Arise, take vp thy bed, &
7 go to thine house. * And he arose, & departed to
8 his own house. * So when the multitude saw it,
they marueiled, & glorified God which had giue
9 such authoritie to men. * And as Iesus passed
forth from thence, he sawe a man sitting at the
custome, named Matthewe, & saide to him,
Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.
10 * And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate in
his house, beholde, many Publicanes & sinners,
that came *thither*, sate downe at the table with
11 Iesus & his disciples. * And when the Pharises
saw that, they said to his disciples, Why eateth
12 your master with Publicanes & sinners? * Now
when Iesus heard it, he said vnto the, The whol
13 need not a Phisition, but they that are sick. * But
go ye & learn what this is, I wil haue mercie, &
not sacrifice: for I am not come to cal the righ-
14 teous, but the sinners to repentance. * The came
the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why doe
we & the Pharises fast oft, & thy disciples fast
15 not? * And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children
of the marriage chamber mourne as long as the
bridegrome is with the? but the daies wil come
when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, &
16 the shal they fast. * Moreouer, no mā pieceth an
old garment with a piece of new cloth: for that
that

CHAP. IX.

that should fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, & the breach is worse. * Neither do they put new wine into old vessels: for the vessels would breake, & the wine would be spilt, & the vessels should perish: but they put new wine to new vessels, & so are both preserved. * And he thus spake vnto the, behold, the ruler of the synagoge came, & worshipped him, saying, My daughter is now deceased, but come & lay thine hand on her, & she shall liue. * And Iesus arose & folowed him with his disciples. * (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood xij. yeres, came behind him, & touched the hem of his garment. * For she said in her selfe, If I may touch but his garment onely, I shall be whole. * The Iesus turned him about, & seeing her, did say, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole at that same momēt.) * Now when Iesus came into the rulers house, & saw the minstrels & the multitude making noise, * He said vnto the, Get you hēce: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn. * And when the multitude were put forth, he went in and tooke her by the hand, & the maid arose. * And this bruit went throughout all that land. * And as Iesus departed thēce, two blind men folowed him, crying, & saying, O sone of David haue mercie vpon vs. * And when he was come into the house, the blind came to him, & Iesus said vnto the, Beleeue ye that I am able to do this? And they said vnto him, Yea, Lord. * Then touched

S. MATTHEWE.

he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be
 30 it vnto you. * And their eyes were opened, & Ie-
 sus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no
 31 man know it. * But when they were departed,
 they spread abroad his fame throughout all that
 32 land. * As they went out, beholde, they
 brought vnto him a dumme man possessed with a
 33 deuill. * And when the deuill was cast out, the
 dumme spake: then the multitude maruailed, say-
 34 ing, The like was neuer scene in Israel. * But the
 Pharises said, He casteth out deuils, through the
 35 prince of deuils. * And Iesus went about all ci-
 ties & townes, teaching in their Synagogues, &
 preaching the gospel of the kingdom, & healing
 euery sickenes & euery disease amōg the people.
 36 * But when he saw the multitude, he had com-
 passiō vpon thē, because they were dispersed, &
 scattered abroad, as sheep hauing no shepheard.
 37 * Thē said he to his disciples, Surety the haruest
 is great, but the labourers are few. * Wherefore
 38 pray the Lord of the haruest, that he would send
 forth labourers into his haruest.

C H A P. X.

1 **A**ND he called his twelue disciples vnto him,
 & gaue thē power against vnclean spirits to
 cast the out, & to heale euery sickenes, & euery
 2 disease. * Now the names of the xij. Apostles
 are these. The first is Simon, called Peter, & An-
 3 drew his brother: Iames the sonne of Zebedeus,
 & Iohn his brother: * Philip & Bartlemew: Tho-
 4 mas the Disciple called the Publican: Iames the sonne
 of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus whose surname was
 Thaddaeus.

CHAP. X.

Thaddeus: * Simon the Cananite, & Iudas Isca- 4
 riot, who also betrayed him. * These xij. did Je- 5
 sus send forth. & commaunded the, saying, Goe
 not into the way of the Gētiles, & into the ci-
 ties of the Samaritans enter ye not: * But rather
 to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. 6
 * And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of hea- 7
 ven is at hand. * Heale the sick: cleanse the lepers: 8
 raise vp the dead: cast out the devils. Freely ye
 haue receiued, freely giue. * Possesse not gold, nor 9
 siluer, nor money in your girdels, * Nor a scrip 10
 for the iourney, neither 2. coates, neither shoes,
 nor a staffe: for the workman is worthy of his
 meat. * And into whatsoever citie or town ye 11
 shall come, enquire who is worthy in it, & there
 abide till ye goe thence. * And when ye come 12
 into an house, salute the same. * And if the house 13
 be worthy, let your peace come vpo it: but if it
 be not worthy, let your peace returne to you.
 * And whosoever shal not receiue you, nor heare 14
 your words, whē ye depart out of that house, or
 that citie, shake off the dust of your feet. * Tru- 15
 ly I say vnto you, it shalbe easier for the of the
 land of Sodō & Gomorrha in the day of iudge-
 ment, then for that city. * Behold, I send you as 16
 sheepe in the middes of wolues: be ye therefore
 wise as serpents, and innocent as doves. * But 17
 beware of me, for they will deliuer you up to
 the Councils, & wil scourge you in their
 synagogues. * And ye shalbe brought to the gou- 18
 ernours & kings for my sake, in witnesse to the
 Jews & to the Gētiles. * But when they deliuer you vp, 19
 take

S. MATTHEW E.

- take no thought how or what ye shal speak: for
it shall be giuen you in that houre, what ye shal
say. * For it is not ye that speak, but the spirit of
your Father which speaketh in you. * And the
brother which betray the brother to death, & the
sister which betray the brother to death, & the
children shal rise against them, & shal cause them to die. * And ye
shalbe hated of all men for my Name: but he
that endureth to the end, he shalbe saued. * And
when they persecute you in this citie, flie into another:
for verely I say vnto you, ye shall not goe
ouer all the cities of Israel, til the Sonne of man
be come. * The disciple is not aboue his master,
nor the seruant aboue his Lorde. * It is ynough
for the disciple to be as his master is, and the
seruant as his Lord. * If they haue called the ma-
ster of the house Beelzebub, how much more
the of his household? * Feare the not therefore:
there is nothing couered, that shal not be discou-
ered: nor hid, that shall not be knowen. * What
I tel you in darknesse, that speak ye in light: and
what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the
houses. * And feare ye not them which kill the
body, but are not able to kil the soule: but rather
feare him, which is able to destroy both
soule & body in hel. * Are not 2. sparrowes sold
for a farthing, & one of the shal not fall on the
ground without your Father? * Yea, & all the
hairs of your head are nombred. * Feare ye
not therefore, ye are of more value then many
sparrowes. * Whosoener therefore shal confesse
me before men, him will I confesse also before
my Father in heauen.

C H A P. XI.

fore my Father which is in heauen.*But whoso- 33
 euer shall denie me before men,him will I also
 denie before my Father which is in heauen.
 *I think not that I am come to send peace into 34
 the earth:I came not to send peace,but the sword.
 *For I am come to set a man at variance against 35
 his father,& the daughter against her mother,&
 the daughter in law against her mother in law.
 *And a mans enemies shall be they of his own hou 36
 sehold.* He that loueth father or mother more 37
 than me,is not worthy of me.And he that loueth
 sonne,or daughter more than me, is not worthy
 of me.*And he that taketh not his crosse, and 38
 followeth after me, is not worthie of me.* He 39
 that wil find his life,shal lose it,& he that loseth
 his life for my sake, shal finde it.*He that recei- 40
 ueth you,receiueh me: & he that receiueh me,
 receiueh him that hath sent me.*He that recei- 41
 ueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall
 receiue a Prophets reward: & he that receiueh
 a righteous-mā,in the name of a righteous mā,
 shall receiue the rewarde of a righteous man.
 * And whosoever shall giue vnto one of these 42
 little ones to drink a cup of cold water onely,
 in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you,
 he shall not lose his reward.

C H A P. XI.

AND it came to passe that when Iesus had
 made an end of comaūding his xii. disciples,
 he departed thence to teach & to preach in
 cities.*And when Iohn heard in the prison the
 workes of Christ,he sent two of his disciples, &
 said

S. MATTHEWE.

- 3** said vnto him, *Art thou he that should come
4 or shall we looke for another? * And Iesus a
 swering, said vnto the, Go, & shew Iohn, wh
5 things ye heare & see. * The Blind receiue sight
 & the halt walke: the lepers are cleansed, & the
 deafe heare: the dead are raised vp, & the poore
6 receiue the Gospel. * And blessed is he that sha
7 not be offended in me. * And as they departed, I
 sus begā to speake vnto the multitude of Iohn
 What wet ye out into the wilderness to see?
8 reede shaken with the wind? * But what went
 ye out to see? A mā clothed in soft raiment? Be
 hold, they that weare soft clothing, are in King
9 houses. * But what went ye out to see? A Pro
 phet? yea, I say vnto you, & more the a proph
10 * For this is he of whom it is written, Behold,
 send thy messenger before thy face, which sha
11 prepare my way before thee. * Verely I say v
 to you, amōg the which are begottē of wom
 arose there not a greater the Iohn Baptist, no
 withstanding, he that is the least in the kingdō
12 of heauen, is greater then he. * And frō the time
 of Iohn Baptist hitherto, the kingdōm of hea
 suffereth violence, & the violent take it by force.
13 * For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied
14 vnto Iohn. * And if ye will receiue it, this is
15 that Elias, which was to come. * He that hath
 eares to heare, let him heare. * But wherunto
 saith I then this generation? it is like vnto little
 children which sit in the markets, & call vnto
16 their fellows, * And say, We haue piped vnto
 you & ye haue not danced, we haue mourned
 vnto

into you, & ye haue not lamented.* For Iohn 18
 came neither eating nor drinking, & they say, He
 hath a deuill.* The Sonne of man came eating 19
 & drinking, and they say, Behold a glutton & a
 drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes & sin-
 ners: but wisdom is iustified of her children.
 *Thē begā he to vpbraide the cities, wherein most 20
 of his great works were don, because they repē-
 ted not.* Wo be to thee, Chorazin. Wo be to 21
 thee, Bethsaida: for if the great works, which were
 done in you, had bene done in Tyrus & Sidon,
 they had repented long ago in sackcloth and
 ashes.* But I say to you, It shalbe easier for Ty- 22
 rus & Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for
 you.* And thou, Capernaum, which art lifted 23
 vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hel:
 for if the great workes which haue bene don in
 thee, had bene done among thē of Sodom, they
 had remained to this day.* But I say vnto you, 24
 that it shalbe easier for thē of the land of Sodo-
 m in the day of iudgemēt, then for thee.* At that 25
 time Iesus answered, & said, I giue thee thanks,
 O Father, Lord of heauē & earth, because thou
 hast hid these things frō the wise & mē of vn-
 derstanding, & hast opened thē vnto babes.* It 26
 is so, O Father, because thy good pleasure was
 such.* All things are giuen vnto me of my Fa- 27
 ther: & no man knoweth the Sōne, but the Fa-
 ther: neither knoweth any man the Father, but
 the Sonne, & he to whō the Sonne will reuele
 him.* Come vnto me, all ye that are weary &
 laden, and I will ease you.* Take my yoke on
 you

you, & learne of me that I am meeke & lowly in heart: & ye shall finde rest vnto your soules. **30** * For my yoke is easie, and my burden light.

C H A P. XII.

1 **A**T that time Iesus wēt on a Sabbath day through the towne, & his disciples were an hungred, & began to plucke the eares of corne & to eate. * And when the Pharises saw it, they said vnto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath. * But he said vnto thē, Haue ye not read what David did when he was an hungred, & they that were with him? * How he entred into the house of God, & did eat the shew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for thē which were with him, but only for the Priestes? * Or haue ye not read in the Law, how that on the Sabbath dayes the Priests in the Temple break the Sabbath, & are blamelesse? * But I say vnto you, that here is one greater then the Temple. * Wherefore if ye knew what this is, I wil haue mercy, & not sacrifice. * For would not haue condēned the innocents. * For the Sonne of man is Lord, *euery* of the Sabbath. * And he departed thence, & went into their Synagogue: * And beholde, there was a man which had his hand dried vp. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale vpon a Sabbath day? that they might accuse him. * And he said vnto them, What man shall there be among you, that hath an ass, or an ox, & if it fall on a sabbath day into a pit, doe ye not take it & lift it out? * How much more shall it be a man better then a sheepe? therefore, it is lawfull

lawful

CHAP. XII

& lowfull to doe well on a Sabbath day.* Then 13
 he said he to the man, Stretch forth thine hād. And
 he stretched it forth, & it was made whole as
 the other.* Thē the Pharises wēt out, & cōsulted 14
 against him, how they might destroy him.* But 15
 when Iesus knew it, he departed thence, & great
 multitudes folowed him, & he healed them all,
 And charged thē in threatning wise, that they 16
 should not make him knowen,* That it might 17
 be fulfilled, which was spokē by E saias the Pro-
 phet, saying,* Behold my seruant whome I haue 18
 chosen, my beloued in whō my soule deliteth: I
 wil put my Spirit on him, & he shal shew iudge-
 ment to the Gentiles.* He shall not strine, nor 19
 rie, neither shal any man heare his voyce in the
 streets: * A bruised reed shall he not breake, & 20
 smoking flaxe shall he not quench, till he bring
 forth iudgement vnto victorie. * And in his 21
 name shall the Gentiles trust. * Then was 22
 brought to him, one possessed with a deuil, both
 blind & dūme, & he healed him, so that he *which*
 was blind & dūme, both spake & saw.* And all 23
 the people were amased, & said, Is not this that
 sonne of Dauid? * But when the Pharises heard 24
 they said, This mā casteth the deuils no other-
 wise out, but through Beel-zebub the prince of 25
 deuils.* But Iesus knew their thoughts, & saide
 to thē, Euery kingdom deuided against it selfe, is
 brought to nought: & euery citie or house deu-
 ided against it selfe, shal not stād.* So if Satan cast 26
 out Satan, he is deuided against him selfe: how
 shall then his kingdome endure? * Also if I 27
 through

- through Beelzebub cast out devils, by whose
 your children cast them out? Therefore they shall
 28 be your iudges.* But if I cast out devils by the
 Spirit of God, then is the kingdō of God come
 29 vnto you.* Els howe can a man enter into
 strong māns house & spoyle his goods, except he
 first bind the strōg man, & thē spoile his house.
 30 *He that is not with me, is against me: and he
 that gathereth not with me, scattereth.* Where
 31 fore I say vnto you, Euery sin & blasphemie shall
 be forgien vnto mē: but the blasphemie against
 the holy Ghost shall not be forgiven vnto men.
 32 *And whosoever shall speak a word against the
 Sonne of man, it shall be forgiven him: but
 whosoever shall speak against the holy Ghost,
 shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world
 33 nor in the world to come.* Either make the tree
 good, & his fruit good: or els make the tree euill
 and his fruit euill: for the tree is knowen by the
 34 fruit.* O generations of vipers, howe can ye
 speak good things whē ye are euill? For of the
 abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
 35 *A good mā out of the good trefure of his heart
 bringeth forth good things: & an euill man out
 of an euill trefure bringeth forth euill things.
 36 *But I say vnto you, that of euery idle word that
 men shall speak, they shall giue account thereof
 37 at the day of iudgement.* For by thy words
 thou shalt be iustified, & by thy words thou
 38 shalt be cōdemned.* Then answered certaine
 of the Scribes & of the Pharises, saying, Master,
 39 would see a signe of thee.* But he answered & said

C H A P. XII.

id to them, An euill & adulterous generation
 seeketh a signe. but no signe shalbe giuen vnto
 e, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas. *For as 40
 onas was 3. dayes & 3. nightes in the whales
 bellie: so shal the Sonne of man be three daies
 and three nightes in the heart of the earth. *The 41
 men of Nineue shal rise in iudgement with this
 generation, & condemne it: for they repented
 at the preaching of Ionas: & beholde, a greater
 then Ionas is here. * The Queene of the South 42
 shall rise in iudgement with this generation, &
 shall condemne it: for she came frō the vtmost
 partes of the earth to heare the wisdom of So-
 mon: and behold, a greater then Solomon is
 here. * Nowe when the vncleane spirit is gone 43
 out of a man, he walketh throughout drie pla-
 ces, seeking rest, and findeth none. * Then he 44
 saith, I will returne into mine house frō whence
 I came: & when he is come, he findeth it empty,
 swept and garnished. * I hen he goeth, & taketh 45
 vnto him seuen other spirites worse then him-
 selfe, & they enter in, & dwell there: & the end
 of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen
 so shall it be with this wicked generation.
 While he yet spake to the multitude, behold, 46
 his mother, & his brethren stood without, desi-
 ring to speake with him. * Then one said vnto 47
 him, Beholde, thy mother & thy brethren stand
 without, desiring to speake with thee. * But he 48
 answered and said to him that tolde him Who
 is my mother? & who are my brethren? * And 49
 he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples

S. MATTHEWE.

50 & said, Behold my mother & my brethren. *
 whosoever shall do my Fathers wil which is
 heauen, the same is my brother and sister, and
 mother.

CHAP. XIII.

1 **T**He same day went Iesus out of the house,
 2 sate by the sea side. * And great multitude
 resorted vnto him, so that he went into a ship
 & sate downe: and the whole multitude stood
 3 on the shore. * Then he spake many things
 them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went
 4 forth to sowe. * And as he sowed, some fell
 the way side, & the foules came & deuoured
 5 vp. * And some fell vpon stonie ground, where
 they had not much earth, & anon they sprang
 6 vp, because they had no depth of earth. * And
 when the sunne was vp, they were parched, &
 7 lack of rooting, withered away. * And some
 among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp
 8 choked them. * Some again fell in good ground,
 and brought forth fruit, one *came* an hundred
 9 fold, some sixty fold, & another thirty fold. *
 10 that hath eares to heare, let him heare. * Then
 the disciples came & said to him, Why speakest
 11 thou to them in parables? * And he answered
 said vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you
 know the secrets of the kingdom of heauen,
 12 to them it is not giuen. * For whosoever
 to him shalbe giuen, & he shall haue abundantly
 but whosoever hath not, frō him shalbe taken
 13 away, euen that he hath. * Therefore speake
 them in parables, because they seeing, doe

n. * See: & hearing, they hear not, neither vnderstād.
 h is * So in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Etai- 14
 er, as, which *prophecie* saith, By hearing, ye shall
 heare, & shall not vnderstand, & seeing, ye shall
 see, and shall not perceiue. * For this peoples 15
 house, heart is waxed fat. & their eares are dull of hea-
 ritud ring, and with their eyes they haue winked, lest
 o a sh they should see with their eyes, and heare with
 e sto their eares, & should vnderstād with their harts,
 ings & should returne, that I might heale them. * But 16
 er we blessed are your eies, for they see: & your eares,
 e fell for they heare. * For verely I say vnto you, that 17
 ured many Prophets & righteous men haue desired
 d, wh to see those things which ye see, and haue not
 y sprou seene *them*, and to heare those things which ye
 . * A heare, & haue not heard *them*. * Heare ye there- 18
 ed, & fore the parable of the sower. * Whensoever 19
 some any man heareth the word of that kingdom, &
 ng vnderstandeth it not, that euil one commeth, &
 d gro catcheth away that which was sown in his
 hund heart: & this is he which hath receiued the seed
 fold. * by the way side. * And he that receiued seede in 20
 * T the stonie ground, is he which hearerh the word,
 y spe and incontinently with ioy receiueth it. * Yet 21
 y were hath he no roote in him selfe, and dureth but a
 to you season: for as sone as tribulation or persecution
 reauen commeth because of the word, by and by he is
 ener b offended. * And he that receiued the seed an-ōg 22
 bund thornes, is he that heareth the worde: but the
 albe care of this world, & the deceitfulnesse of riches
 eake choke the word, & he is made vnfruitful * But 23
 , doe he that receiued the seed in the good ground, is

he that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it,
which also beareth fruit, & bringeth forth, some
an hundred fold, some sixtie fold, & some thirtie
fold. * Another parable put he forth vnto
24 them, saying, The kingdom of heauen is like vnto
to a man which sowed good seede in his field.
25 * But while men slept, there came his enemy, &
sowed tares among the wheat. & went his way.
26 * And when the blade was sprong vp, & brought
27 forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. * Then
came the seruants of the householder, & said vnto
him, Master, sowedst not thou good seede in
28 thy field? from whence then hath it tares? * And
he said to them, Some enuious man hath done
this. Then the seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou
29 then that we go and gather them vp? * But he
said, Nay, least while ye go about to gather the
tares, ye plucke vp also with them the wheate.
30 * Let both grow together vntill the haruest, &
in time of haruest I will say to the reapers, Ga-
ther ye first the tares, & bind them in sheaues to
burne them: but gather the wheate into my
31 barne. * Another parable he put forth vnto
them saying, The kingdome of heauen is like vnto
a graine of mustard seed, which a man taketh &
32 soweth in his field: * Which indeed is the least
of all seedes: but when it is growen, it is the
greatest among herbs, & it is a tree, so that the
birds of heauen come & builde in the branches
33 thereof. * Another parable spake he to them,
The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leauen,
which a woman taketh & hideth in three pecks
of

CHAP. XIII.

of meale, till all be leavened. * All these things 34
spake Iesus vnto the multitude in parables, and
without parables spake he not to them, * That 35
it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the
Prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in para-
bles, & will vtter the thinges which haue bene
kept secret from the foundation of the worlde.
* Then sent Iesus the multitude away, & went 36
into the house. And his disciples came vnto
him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the
tares of that field. * Then answered he & said 37
to them, He that soweth the good seede, is the
Sonne of man, * And the field is the world & 38
the good seede are the children of the kingdō,
& the tares are the childrē of that wicked one.
* And the enemy that soweth them, is the de- 39
uill, & the haruest is the end of the world, & the
reapers be the Angels: * As then the tares are 40
gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in
the end of this world. * The Sōne of man shal 41
send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out
of his kingdome all things that offend, & them
which do iniquitie, * And shall cast them into 42
a fornace of fire. There shall be wailing and gna-
shing of teeth. * Then shall the iust man shine 43
as the sunne in the kingdom of their Father. He
that hath eares to heare, let him heare. * Againe, 44
the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a treasure
hid in the field, which when a man hath found,
he hideth it, & for ioy thereof departeth & sel-
leth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. * A- 45
gaine, the kingdome of heauen is like to a mar-

CHAP. XIII.

- 46 chant man, that seeketh good pearles, * Wh
 hauing found a pearle of great price, went
 47 solde all that he had, & bought it. * Againe,
 kingdom of heauen is like vnto a draw net
 into the sea, that gathereth of al kinds of thing
 48 * Which, when it is full, men draw to land,
 sit and gather the good into vessels, and cast
 49 bad away. * So shall it be at the ende of
 world. The Angels shall go forth, & seuer
 50 bad frō among the iust, * And shall cast the
 into a fornace of fire: there shalbe wailing,
 51 gnashing of teeth. * Iesus said vnto them, V
 derstand ye all these things? They saide vnto
 52 him, Yea, Lord. * Then said he vnto thē, Ther
 fore euery Scribe which is taught vnto the
 kingdom of heauen, is like vnto an houlhold
 which bringeth forth out of his treasure thing
 53 both new and old. * And it came to passe, th
 when Iesus had ended these parables, he depa
 54 ted thence, * And came into his owne countie
 & taught them in their Synagogue, so that the
 were astonied, and said, Whence commeth
 55 wisdom & great workes vnto this man? *
 not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his m
 ther called Marie, & his brethren Iames & Ioh
 56 & Simon & Iudas? * And are not his sisters
 with vs? Whēce then hath he all these thing
 57 * And they were offended with him. Then
 Iesus said to them, A Prophet is not without
 honour saue in his owne countrey, & in his ow
 58 house. * And he did not many great workes
 there, for their vnbeliefes sake.

CHAP. XIII.

AT that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of
the fame of Iesus,* And saide vnto his ser-
uants, This is that Iohn Baptist, hee is risen again
from the dead, and therefore great workes are
wrought by him.* For Herod had taken Iohn,
and bound him, and put him in prison for He-
rodias sake, his brother Philips wife. * For
Iohn said vnto him, It is not lawfull for thee to
haue her. * And when he would haue put
him to death, he feared the multitude, because
they counted him as a Prophet. * But when
Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of
Herodias daunced before them, & pleased He-
rod. * Wherefore he promised with an othe,
that he would giue her whatsoeuer she would
aske. * And shee being before instructed of her
mother, said, Giue me here Iohn Baptists head
in a platter. * And the King was sorie: neuer-
thelesse because of the othe, and them that sate
with him at the table, he commaunded it to be
giuen her,* And sent, & beheaded Iohn in the
prison. * And his head was brought in a plat-
ter, and giuen to the maide, and shee brought it
vnto her mother. * And his disciples came, and
tooke vp the bodie, and buried it, & went and
tolde Iesus. * And when Iesus heard it, hee de-
parted thence by ship into a desert place apart.
And when the multitude had heard it, they
followed him on foot out of the cities. * And
Iesus went forth and saw a great multitude, &
was moued with compassion toward them, &
he healed their sicke. * And when euen was

S. M T T H E W E.

come, his disciples came to him, saying, This is
a desert place, and the time is alreadie past: let
the multitude depart, that they may goe into
16 the townies, and buy vitayles. * But Iesus said
to them, They haue no neede to go away: giue
17 ye them to eat. * Then said they vnto him, We
18 haue here but fise loaues and two fishes. * And
19 he said, Bring them hither to me. * And he com-
maunded the multitude to sit downe on the
grasse, and tooke the fise loaues and two fishes,
and looked vp to heauen, and blessed, & brake,
and gaue the loaues to his disciples, & the dis-
20 ciples to the multitude. * And they did all eat,
and were sufficed, & they tooke vp of the frag-
21 ments that remained, twelue baskets full. * And
they that had eaten, were about fise thousand
22 men, beside women and little children. * And
straightway Iesus compelled his disciples to en-
ter into a shippe, and to goe ouer before him,
23 while he sent the multitude away. * And as
soone as he had sent the multitude away, he
went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: and
when the euening was come, he was there a-
24 lone. * And the shippe was now in the middes
of the sea, and was tossed with waues for it was
25 a contrarie winde. * And in the fourth watch
of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on
26 the sea. * And when his disciples saw him walk-
ing on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It
27 is a spirit, & cried out for feare. * But straight-
way Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good
28 comfort, it is I: be not afraide. * Then Peter
answe-

CHAP. XIII.

answered him, and said, Master, if it be thou, bid
me come vnto thee on the water. * And he 29
said, Come. And when Peter was come down
out of the shippe, he walked on the waters, to
go to Iesus. * But when he saw a mighty wind 30
he was afraide: and as he began to sinke, he
cried, saying, Master saue me. * So immediately 31
Iesus stretched forth his hand, & caught him, &
said to him, O thou of little faith, wherefore
diddest thou doubt? * And as soone as they 32
were come into the shippe, the winde ceased.
* Then they that were in the shippe, came and 33
worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the
Sonne of God. * And when they were come 34
ouer, they came into the land of Gennezaret.
* And when the men of that place knew him, 35
they sent out into all that countrey round a-
bout, and brought vnto him all that were sicke.
* And besought him, that they might touch the 36
hemme of his garment onely: and as many as
touched it, were made whole.

CHAP. XV.

Then came to Iesus the Scribes and Phari-
ses, which were of Hierusalem, saying, * Why 1
do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the
Elders? for they wash not their handes when
they eat bread. * But he answered and said vn- 2
to them, Why doe ye also transgress the co-
mmandement of God by your tradition? * For 3
God hath commaunded, saying, Honour thy
father and mother and he that curseth father or
mother, let him dye the death. * But ye say, 4
Who-

S. MATTHEWE

- Whosoever shall say to father or mother, the gift that is offered by me, thou maiest have profit, * Though he honour not his father, nor his mother, *shalbe free*: thus have ye made the cōmandemēt of God of no authority by your traditions. * O hypocrites, Esaias prophesied well of you, saying. * This people draweth nēere vnto me with their mouth, & honoureth me with the lippes, but their heart is farre from me. * But in vaine they worshippe me teaching for doctrines, mens precepts. * Then he called the multitude vnto him, and saide to them, Heare and vnderstand. * That which goeth into the mouth, defileth not the man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man. * Then came his disciples, and said vnto him, Perceiuest thou not, that the Pharises are offended in hearing *this* saying? * But he answered, and said, Eney plant which mine heauenlie Father hath not planted, shall be rooted vp. * Let them alone, they be the blind leaders of the blind: and if the blind leade the blind, both shal fall into the ditch. * Then answered Peter, and said to him, Declare vnto vs this parable. * Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding? * Perceiue ye not yet, that whosoever entreth into the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? * For those things which proceed out of the mouth, come from the heart, and they defile the man. * For out of the heart come euill thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false

stimoni

C H A P. XV.

Timonies, slanders. * These are the things which 20
 defile the man: but to eat with vnwashed
 hands, defileth not the man. * And Iesus went 21
 thence, and departed into the coastes of Tyrus
 and Sidon. * And behold, a woman a Cananite 22
 came out of the same coastes, and cryed, saying
 vnto him, Haue mercy on me, O Lord, the Sone
 of Dauid: my daughter is miserablie vexed
 with a deuil. * But he answered her not a word. 23
 Then came to him his disciples, and besought
 him, saying, Send her away, for shee cryeth after
 vs. * But he answered, & said, I am not sent, but 24
 vnto the lost sheep of the house Israel. * Yet she 25
 came, & worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.
 * And he answered, and saide, It is not good to 26
 take the childrens bread, & to cast it to whelps.
 * But shee saide, Trueth, Lord: yet in deepe the 27
 whelpes eat of the crummes, which fall from
 their masters table. * Then Iesus answered, and 28
 said vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it
 to thee as thou desirest. And her daughter was
 made whole at that houre. * So Iesus went a- 29
 way from thence, and came neere vnto the Sea
 of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine, & sate
 downe there. * And great multitudes came vn- 30
 to him, hauing with them, halt, blinde, dumme
 maimed, and many other, and cast them downe
 at Iesus feete, and he healed them. * In so much 31
 that the multitude wodered, to see the dumme
 speake, the maimed whole, the halt to goe, and
 the blind to see: and they glorified the God of
 Israel. * Then Iesus called his disciples vnto 32
 him,

S. MATTHEW E.

him, & said, I haue cōpassion on this multitude
because they haue continued with me alread
three daies, & haue nothing to eat: & I wil
let them depart fasting, least they faint in
33 way. * And his disciples said vnto him, What
should we get so much bread in the wilderne
34 as should suffice so great a multitude! * And
Jesus said vnto them, How many loaves ha
ye? And they said, Senen, and a few little fishes
35 * Then he commaunded the multitude to
36 downe on the ground, * And tooke the seau
loaves, and the fishes, and gaue thanks, & brake
them, and gaue to his disciples, and the disciples
37 to the multitude. * And they did all eate, and
were sufficed: and they tooke vp of the frag
38 ments that remained, seuen baskets full. * And
they that had eaten, were foure thousand men
39 beside women, and little childrer. * Then Jesus
sent away the multitude, and tooke shippe, and
came into the partes of Magdala.

C H A P. XVI.

1 **T**Hen came the Pharises and Sadduces, & de
tempt him, desiring him to shewe them
2 signe from heauen. * But he answered, & said
vnto them, When it is euening ye say, Fair
3 weather: for the skie is red. * And in the mor
ning ye say, To day shall be a tempest: for the
skie is red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can
discerne the face of the skie, and can ye not dis
4 cerne the signes of the times? * The wicked ge
neration, and adulterous seeketh a signe, but
there shall no signe be given it, but that signe

CHAP. XVI.

the Prophet Ionas: so he left them, and departed. * And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgottē to take bread with them. * Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heed and beware of the leauen of the Pharisees and Sadduces. * And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is because we haue brought no bread.* * But Iesus knowing it, saide vnto them, O ye of litle faith, why reason yee among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread? * Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fīue loaves, when there were five thousand *men*, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? * Neither the seauen loaves when there were foure thousand *men*, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? * Why perceiue ye not that I said not vnto you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharisees & Sadduces? * Then vnderstood they that he had not said that they should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadduces? * Now when Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whome doe men say that I, the Sonne of man am? * And they saide, Some say, John Baptist: and some, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets. * He saide vnto them, But whome say ye that I am? * Then Simon Peter answered, and saide, Thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God. * And Iesus answered, and saide to him, Blessed art thou, Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood

- blood hath not reueiled it vnto thee, but
 18 Father which is in heauen.* And I say also
 to thee, that thou art Peter, and vpon the
 rocke I will build my Church: and the gates
 19 hell shall not overcome it.* And I will giue
 vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of hea-
 uen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vpon
 earth, shall be bound in heauen: and whatsoe-
 uer thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loose
 20 in heauen.* Then he charged his disciples that
 they should tell no man that he was Iesus the
 21 Christ.* From that time forth Iesus began
 shew vnto his disciples, that he must goe vnto
 Hierusalem, and suffer many thinges of the
 elders, and of the hie Priestes, and Scribes, &
 22 slaine, & be raised againe the third day.* Then
 Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebe-
 him, saying, Master, pity thy selfe: this shall
 23 be vnto thee.* Then he turned backe and said
 vnto Peter. Get thee behind me, Sathan: thou
 art an offence vnto mee, because thou vnder-
 standest not the things that are of God, but
 24 things that are of men.* Iesus then said to his
 disciples, If any man will follow me, let him
 forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, & fol-
 25 low me.* For, whosoever will saue his life shall
 loose it: and whosoever shall loose his life
 26 for my sake, shall finde it.* For what shall it pro-
 fite a man though he should winne the whole
 world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shall
 27 a man giue for recompence of his soule? * For
 the Sonne of man shall come in glorie of
 Father

CHAP. XVII.

father with his Angels, and then shall he giue
to euery man according to his deedes. * Verely
I say vnto you, there bee some of them that
stand here, which shal not tast of death, til they
haue seen the Son of mā come in his kingdom.

CHAP. XVII.

ANd after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and
James, and Iohn his brother, and brought
them vp into an hie mountaine apart, * And
was transfigured before them: and his face did
shine as the Sunne, & his clothes were as white
as the light. * And behold, there appeared vnto
the Moses, & Elias talking with him. * Then
answered Peter, and said to Iesus, Master, it is
good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make
here three tabernacles, one for thee, & one for
Moses, and one for Elias. * While he yet spake,
behold a bright cloude shadowed them: and
beholde, there came a voice out of the cloude,
saying, This is that my beloued Son, in whom
I am well pleased: heare him. * And when the
disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, &
were sore afraid. * Then Iesus came and touch-
ed them, and said, Arise, and be not afraide.
* And when they lifted vp their eyes, they saw
no man, saue Iesus onely. * And as they came
down from the mountain, Iesus charged them,
saying, Shewe the vision to no man, vntill the
Sonne of man rise againe from the dead. * And
his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say
the Scribes that Elias must first come? * And
Iesus answered and saide vnto them, Certenly
Elias

S. MATTHEWE.

- Elias must first come, and restore all things.
- 12 *But I say vnto you that Elias is come already and they knewe him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they wou'd: likewise shall also the Sonne of man suffer of them. *
- 13 Then the disciples perceined that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist. *
- 14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, and fell downe at his feet, *
- 15 And saide Master, haue pitie on my sonne: for he is lunaticke, and is sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, & oft times into the water. *
- 16 And I brought him to thy disciples and they could not heale him. *
- 17 Then Iesus answered, & saide O generation faithlesse, and crooked how long now shall I be with you! how long now shall I suffer you! bring him hither to me. *
- 18 And Iesus rebuked the deuil: & he went out of him & the child was healed at that houre. *
- 19 Then came the disciples to Iesus apart, & saide, Why could we not cast him out? *
- 20 And Iesus said vnto them, Because of your vnbeliefe: for verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith *as much* as is a grain of mustard seed, ye shal say vnto this mountaine, Remove hence to yonder place, & it shall remove, & nothing shalbe impossible vnto you. *
- 21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out but by prayer & fasting. *
- 22 And they being in Galilee, Iesus sayed vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be delivered into the handes of men, *
- 23 And they shall kill him, but the thirde day shall he rise againe. *
- 24 And they were very sorie. *
- 25 And when they were come

CHAP. XVIII.

hings
 already
 ne vnto
 all al
 hen the
 hem o
 come to
 certain
 d saide
 is lunc
 e falk
 * And
 y coul
 & saide
 w lon
 shall
 d Ies
 & the
 me the
 ild ne
 hem, I
 y vnto
 of m
 ine, I
 emou
 * How
 ayer
 is saide
 cle linc
 y the
 again
 y we
 con

come to Capernaum, they that receyued polle
 money, came to Peter, & said, Doeth not your
 Master pay polle money? * He saide, Yes, And 25
 when hee was come into the house, Iesus pre-
 sented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Si-
 mon? Of whome doe the kinges of the earth
 take tribute, or polle money? of their children,
 or of straungers? * Peter sayde vnto him, Of 26
 straungers. Then sayde Iesus vnto him, Then
 are the children free. * Neuerthelesse, least wee 27
 should offend them, goe to the sea, and cast in
 an angle, and take the first fishe that commeth
 vp; & when thou hast opened his mouth, thou
 shalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take,
 and giue it vnto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

d Ies
 & the
 me the
 ild ne
 hem, I
 y vnto
 of m
 ine, I
 emou
 * How
 ayer
 is saide
 cle linc
 y the
 again
 y we
 con

The same time the disciples came vnto Iesus
 saying, Who is the greatest in the king-
 dome of heauen? * And Iesus called a little
 child vnto him, and set him in the middes of
 them, * And I said, Verely I say vnto you, except
 ye be conuerted, and become as litle children,
 ye shall not enter into the kingdome of hea-
 uen. * Whosoever therefore shall humble him- 4
 selfe as this litle child, the same is the greatest
 in the kingdome of heauen. * And whosoever 5
 shall receiue one such litle childe in my Name,
 receiueth me. * But whosoever shall offend one 6
 of these litle ones which belecue in me, it were
 better for him that a millstone were hanged a-
 bout his neck, & that he were drowned in the
 depth of the sea. * Woe be vnto the world be- 7

- cause of offences: for it must needs be that
 fences shall come, but woe be vnto that man
 8 by whom the offence commeth. * Wherefore
 if thine hand or thy foote cause thee to offend,
 cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is bet-
 ter for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed,
 then hauing two hands, or two feet, to be cast
 9 into euerlasting fire. * And if thine eye cause
 thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from
 thee: it is better for thee to enter into life
 with one eye, then hauing two eyes to be cast
 10 into hell fire. * See that ye despise not one
 of these litle ones: for I say vnto you, that in hea-
 uen their Angels alwaies behold the face of my
 11 Father which is in heauen. * For the Sonne
 12 of man is come to saue that which was lost. * How
 thinke ye? If a man haue an hundreth sheep,
 one of them bee gone astray, doth he not leaue
 ninety and nine, and goe into the mountain
 13 and seeke that which is gone astray? * And
 so be that he finde it, verely I say vnto you,
 he reioyceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety
 14 and nine which went not astray. * So it is
 not the will of your Father which is in heauen,
 that one of these litle ones should perishe.
 15 * Moreouer, if thy brother trespass against
 thee, goe and tell him his fault betweene thee
 & him alone: if he heare thee thou hast wonne
 16 thy brother. * But if he heare thee not, take
 with thee one or two, that by the mouth of
 two or three witnesses every worde may be
 17 confirmed. * And if he refuse to heare thee,

CHAP. XVIII.

sell it vnto the Church: & if he refuse to heare
 the Church also, let him be vnto thee as an hea-
 then man, & a Publicane. * Verely I say vnto 18
 you, Whatsoever ye bind on earth, shalbe boūd
 in heauen: and whatsoever ye loose on earth,
 shalbe loosed in heauen. * Again, verely I say vn- 19
 to you, that if two of you shall agree in earth
 vpo any thing, whatsoever thei shal desire, it shal
 be giuen the of my Father which is in heaue.
 * For where two or three are gathered toge- 20
 ther in my Name, there am I in the middes of
 them. * Then came Peter to him, & said, Master, 21
 how oft shall my brother sinne against me, & I
 shall forgue him? vnto seuen times? * Iesus said 22
 vnto him, I say not to thee, vnto seuen times,
 but vnto seuentie times seuen times. * There- 23
 fore is the kingdom of heauen likened vnto a
 certaine king, which would take an account of
 his seruants. * And when he had begun to rec- 24
 ken, one was brought vnto him, which ought
 him ten thousand talents. * And because he had 25
 nothing to pay, his Lord commaunded him to
 be sold, & his wife, & his children, & all that he
 had, & the dette to be paid. * The seruant there- 26
 fore fel down & worshipp: d him, saying, Lord,
 reframe thine anger toward me, and I will pay
 thee all. * Then that seruants Lord had compas- 27
 sion, and loosed him, and forgave him the dette.
 * But when the seruant was departed, he found 28
 one of his fellow seruants which ought him an
 hundred pence, and he laid hands on him, and
 throtled him, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

S. MATTHEW E.

- 29 * Then his fellow seruant fel down at his feet
and besought him, saying, Refraine thine anger
30 toward me & I wil pay thee all. * Yet he would
not, but went and cast him into prison, till he
31 should pay the dette. * And when his other fel-
low seruants saw what was done, they were wroth
ry sorie, & came, & declared vnto their Lord
32 that was done. * Then his Lord called him vnto
him, & said to him, O euill seruant, I forgave
thee all that dette, because thou prayedst me
33 * Oughtest not thou also to haue had pitie on
thy fellow seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee?
34 * So his Lord was wroth, & deliuered him
to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was
35 due to him. * So likewise shall mine heavenly
Father do vnto you, except ye forgiue fro your
hearts ech one to his brother their trespasses.

C H A P. XIX.

- 1 **A**ND it came to passe, that when Iesus had
finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee,
le, & came into the coasts of Iudea beyond Ierusa-
2 dan. * And great multitudes followed him, and
3 he healed them there. * Then came vnto him
the Pharises tempting him, & saying to him,
it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon
4 euery occasion? * And he answered, & said vnto
them, Haue ye not read, that he which made
them at the beginning, made them male & female,
5 male? * And said, For this cause, shall a man leave
father & mother, & cleaue vnto his wife, & they
6 which were two shall be one flesh? * When
fore they are no more twaine, but one flesh.

CHAP. XIX.

No man therefore put asunder that, which God
 hath coupled together. * They saide to him, 7
 Why did then Moses command to giue a bill
 of diuorcement, & to put her away? * He said 8
 vnto thē, Moses, because of the hardnes of your
 heart, suffered you to put away your wiues: but
 from the beginning it was not so. * I say there- 9
 fore vnto you, that whosoever shall put away
 his wife, except *it be* for whoredome, & marrie
 another, committeth adulterie: and whosoever
 marrieth her which is diuorced, doeth commit
 adulterie. * Then said his disciples to him, If the 10
 matter be so betweene man and wife, it is not
 good to marrie. * But he saide vnto them, All 11
 men can not receiue this thing, saue they to
 whom it is giuē. * For there are some eunuches, 12
 which were so borne of *their* mothers bellie: &
 there be some eunuches, which be gelded by
 men: & there be some eunuches, which haue
 gelded them selues for the kingdom of heauen.
 He that is able to receiue *this*, let him receiue
 it. * Then were brought to him little children 13
 that he should put *his* hāds on them & pray: &
 the disciples rebuked them. * But Iesus said, Suf- 14
 fer the little children, and forbid them not to
 come to me: for of such is the kingdom of hea-
 uen. * And when he had put his hāds on them, 15
 he departed thence. * And behold, one came & 16
 said vnto him, Good Master, what good thing
 shall I do, that I may haue eternall life? * And 17
 he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good?
 there is none good but one, *even* God, but if

S. MATTHEWE.

- thou wilt enter into life, keepe the cōmandments. * He saidē to him, Which ? And Iesus said, These. Thou shalt not kill : Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnes. * Honour thy father & mother : and thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. * The yong man said vnto him, I haue obserued all these things from my youth, what lacke I yet? * Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go, sell that thou hast, & giue it to the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, & come and follow me. * And when the yong man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions. * Then Iesus said vnto his disciples, Verely, I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen. * And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camell to goe through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. * And when his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amased, saying, Who then can be saved? * And Iesus bowed himselfe, & said vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all thinges are possible. * Then answered Peter, & said to him, Beholde, we haue forsaken all, & followed thee: what therefore shall we haue? * And Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say to you, that when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his Maiestie, ye which followed me in the regeneration, shall sit also vpon twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel. * And whoso

C H A P. XX.

shall forsake houses, or brethren, or sisters, or fa-
ther, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for
my Names sake, he shall receiue an hundreth
fold more, & shall inherite euerlasting life. * But
many that are first, shalbe last, & the last shall be
first.

C H A P. XX.

For the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a
certaine housholder, which went out at the
dawning of the day, to hire labourers into his
vineyard. * And he agreed with the labourers
for a penie a day, & sent the into his vineyard.
And he went out about the third houre, and
sawe other standing idle in the market place,
And said vnto them, Go ye also into *my* vine-
yard, & whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you: and
they went their way. * Again he went out a-
bout the sixt & ninth houre, and did likewise.
And he went about the eleuenth houre, and
found other standing idle, and said vnto them,
Why stand ye here al the day idle? * They said
vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He
said vnto them, Go ye also into *my* vineyard, &
whatsoeuer is right, that shal ye receiue. * And
when euen was come, the master of the vine-
yard said vnto his steward, Call the labourers,
& giue them their hire, beginning at the last till
they come to the first. * And they *which were*
hired about the eleuenth houre, came & receiued
euery man a penie. * Now when the first came,
they supposed that they should receiue more,
but they likewise receiued euery man a penie.
And when they had receiued it, they murmu-

S. MATTHEWE.

- 12** red against the master of the house, * Saye
 These last haue wrought but one houre, & thou
 hast made them equal vnto vs, which haue beare
13 the burden and heate of the day. * And he
 answered one of them, saying, Friend, I do thee
 wrong: diddest thou not agree with me for
14 penie? * Take that which is thine owne, & goe
 thy way: I will giue vnto this last, as much
15 to thee. * Is it not lawfull for me to doe as
 wil with mine owne? Is thine eye euill bec-
16 cause I am good? * So the last shalbe first, & the
17 first: for many are called, but few chosen. * And
 Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, and tooke
 twelue disciples apart in the waie, & said vnto
18 them, * Beholde, we goe vp to Hierusalem,
 the Sonne of man shall be delivered vnto
 chiefe Priests, & vnto the Scribes, & they shall
19 condemne him to death, * And shall deliuer
 him to the Gentiles, to mocke, and to scourge,
 & crucifie him, but the thirde day he shall rise
20 againe. * Then came to him the mother of
 Iames & Iohannes children with her sonnes, worshipping
21 him, and desiring a certaine thing of him. * And
 he said vnto her, What wouldest thou? she
 said to him, Graunt that these my two sonnes
 may sit, the one at thy right hand, & the other
22 at thy left hand in thy kingdome. * And
 Iesus answered and saide, Ye knowe not what
 ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup, &
 to be baptized with baptism that I shall bee baptized with?
23 They said to him, We are able. * And he

vnto them, Ye shall drink in deede of my cup,
 and shalbe baptized with the baptisme that I
 am baptized with, but to sit at my right hande,
 and at my left hand, is not mine to giue: but *it*
shall be giuen to them for who it is prepared of
 my Father. * And when the *other* ten heard this, 24
 they disdained at the two brethren. * Therefore 25
 Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Ye know
 that the lordes of the Gentiles haue dominati-
 on ouer them, and they that are great exercise
 authoritie ouer them. * But it shall not be so 26
 among you: but whosoever will be great a-
 mong you, let him be your seruant. * And who- 27
 soever will be chiefe among you, let him be
 your seruant. * Euen as the Sonne of mā came 28
 not to be serued, but to serue, and to giue his
 life for the ransome of many. * And as they de- 29
 parted from Iericho, a great multitude follow-
 ed him. * And behold, two blinde men sitting 30
 by the way side, when they heard that Iesus
 passed by, cryed, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of
 Dauid, haue mercie on vs. * And the multitude 31
 rebuked them, because they should holde their
 peace: but they cried the more, saying, O Lord,
 the sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on vs. * Then 32
 Iesus stooke still, and called them, and saide,
 What will ye that I should doe to you? * They 33
 said to him, Lord, that our eyes may be ope-
 ned. * And Iesus moued with compassion, 34
 touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes
 receiued sight, and they followed him.

S. MATTHEWE.

- 1 **A**ND when they drew neere to Hierusalem,
& were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount
of the Olives, then sent Iesus two disciples
- 2 * Saying to them, Goe into the towne that
is before you, and anon ye shall finde an asse
bound, & a colt with her: loose them, & bring
3 them vnto me. * And if any mā say ought
to you, say ye, that the Lord hath neede of
4 and straightway he will let them goe. * All this
was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was
5 spoken by the Prophet, saying, * Tell ye the
daughter of Sion, Beholde, thy king commeth
vnto thee, meeke, and sitting vpon an asse, and
6 colte, the foale of an asse vfed to the yoke. *
And the disciples went, and did as Iesus had com-
7 manded them, * And brought the asse & the
colte, and put on them their clothes, & set
8 thereon. * And a great multitude spread
their garments in the way: & other cut down
9 branches from the trees, and strawed them
in the way. * Moreover, the people that went
before, and they also that followed, cryed,
10 saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, blessed
be he that cometh in the name of the Lord,
11 Hosanna thou which art in the highest hea-
uens. * And when he was come into Hierusalem,
12 the citie was moued, saying, Who is this?
And the people saide, This is Iesus that Prophet
13 of Nazareth in Galile. * And Iesus went into
the Temple of God, and cast out all them that
sold, and bought in the Temple, and overthrew
the tables of the money changers, and the seates
of them that sold the doves.

CHAP. XXI.

men that sold doves. * And said to them, It is
 written, My house shalbe called the house of
 prayer: but ye haue made it a denne of theenes.
 Then the blinde and the halt came to him in
 the Temple, and he healed them. * But when
 the chiefe Priestes & Scribes saw the maruiles
 that he did, & the children crying in the Tem-
 ple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Da-
 uid, they disdained, * And said vnto him, Hea-
 rest thou what these say? And Iesus saide vnto
 them: Yea, read ye neuer, By the mouth of babes
 and sucklings thou hast made perfect the praise?
 So he left them, and went out of the citie vn-
 to Bethania, & lodged there. * And in the mor-
 ning, as hee returned into the citie, hee was hun-
 gry. * And seeing a figge tree in the way, hee
 came to it, and found nothing thereon, but
 leaves onely, and said to it, Neuer suite grow
 on thee henceforwards. And anone the figge
 tree withered. * And when his disciples saw it,
 they maruelled, saying, How soone is the figge
 tree withered! * And Iesus answered & said vn-
 to the, Verily I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, &
 doubt not, ye shal not only do that, *which I haue*
done to the fig tree, but also if ye say vnto this
 mountaine, Take thy selfe away, and cast thy
 selfe into the sea, it shalbe done. * And whatso-
 ener ye shal aske in prayer, if ye beleene, ye shal
 receiue it. * And when he was come into the
 Temple, the chiefe Priestes, and the Elders of
 the people came vnto him, as hee was teaching,
 and saide, By what authoritie doest thou these
 things?

S. MATTHEWE.

- 24 things? & who gaue thee this authoritie? * The
 Iesus answered and said vnto them, I also w
 aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tel
 I likewise will tell you by what authoritie I
 25 these things. * The baptisme of Iohn, when
 was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they
 soned among themselves, saying, If we shal
 From heauen, hee will say vnto vs, Why did
 26 not then beleue him? * And if we say, Of me
 we feare the multitude, for all hold Iohn
 27 Prophet. * Then they answered Iesus, & said
 We can not tell. And he said vnto them, Ne
 ther tell I you by what authoritie I doe the
 28 things. * But what thinke ye? A certaine ma
 had two sonnes, and came to the elder, & said
 Sonne, goe and worke to day in my vineyard.
 29 * But he answered, and said, I will not: yet af
 30 ward hee repented himselfe, and went. * The
 came he to the second, and saide likewise. And
 he answered, and said, I will, syr: yet he w
 31 not. * Whether of them twaine did the w
 of the Father? They said vnto him, The first.
 Iesus said vnto them, Verilie I say vnto you, that
 the Publicanes, & the harlots go before you
 32 to the kingdom of God. * For Iohn came vnto
 you in the way of righteousness, & ye beleue
 him not: but the Publicanes & the harlots be
 leued him, & ye, though ye saw it, were not mo
 ued with repentance afterward, that ye might
 33 beleue him. * Heare another parable, There
 was a certaine householder, which planted
 vineyard

vineyard, and hedged it round about, and made
 a winepresse therein, and built a towre, and let
 out to husbandmen, and went into a strange
 country. * And when the time of the fruit drew
 neere, hee sent his seruants to the husbandmen
 to receiue the fruites thereof. * And the hus-
 bandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and
 killed another, & stoned another. * Again hee
 sent other seruants, more then the first, and they
 did the like vnto them. * But last of all hee sent
 vnto them his owne Sonne, saying, They will
 reuerence my Sonne. * But when the husband-
 men saw the Sonne, they said among themselues,
 This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let
 vs take his inheritance. * So they tooke him, &
 cast him out of the vineyarde, and slew him.
 When therefore the Lord of the vineyarde
 shall come, what will he doe to those husband-
 men? * They said vnto him, He will cruelly de-
 stroy those wicked men, and will let out his
 vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shall
 bring him the fruites in their seasons. * Iesus
 said vnto them, Read ye neuer in the scriptures,
 The stone which the builders refused, the same
 is made the head of the corner? This was the
 Lords doeing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.
 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of
 God shall be taken from you, and shalbe given
 to a nation, which shall bring forth the fruites
 thereof. * And whosoener shall fall on this
 stone, he shalbe broken: but on whome soeuer
 it shall fall, it will dash him a piéces. * And
 when

S. MATTHEW.

when the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.* And they seeking to lay hands on him feared the people, because they tooke him for a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 **T**hen Iesus answered, and spake vnto the
2 againe in parables, saying, * The kingdom
of heauen is like vnto a certaine King who
3 married his sonne, * And sent forth his
4 seruants, to call them that were bid to the
wedding, but they would not come. * Againe
5 he sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them
which are bidden, Behold, I haue prepared
a dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed,
and all things are readie: come vnto the
6 marriage. * But they made light of it, and
went to their waies, one to his farme, and another
about his marchandise. * And the King
7 tooke his seruants, and intreated them
to stay, but they would not. * Then he
8 sent forth his warriers, and destroyed those
murderers, and burnt vp the
9 citie. * Then said he to his seruants, The
wedding is prepared: but they which were
10 bidden, were not worthy. * Goe ye therefore
into the hie wayes, and as many as ye
11 finde there, inueite to the marriage. * So
those seruants went out into the hie wayes,
and gathered together all that euer they
found, both good and bad: so the wedding
was furnished with guests. * Then the King
came in, to see the guests.

and saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment. * And he said vnto him, Freind, 12
how camest thou in hither, and hast not on a
wedding garment? And he was speechles. * Then 13
said the King to the seruants, Binde him hand
and foote: take him away, and cast him into
yttter darkenesse: there shall be weeping and
gnashing of teeth. * For many are called, but 14
few are chosen. * Then went the Pharises and 15
tooke counsell how they might tangle him in
talke. * And they sent vnto him their disciples 16
with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know
that thou art true, and teachest the way of God
truly, neither carest for any man: for thou con-
siderest not the person of men *. Tell vs there- 17
fore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to giue
tribute vnto Cesar, or not? * But Iesus perceiued 18
their wickednes, and saide, Why tempt ye me,
ye hypocrites? * Shewe me the tribute money. 19
And they brought him a penie. * And he saide 20
vnto them, Whose is this image and superscrip-
tion? * They said vnto him, Cessars. Then said 21
he vnto them, Giue therefore to Cesar, the
things which are Cessars, and giue vnto God,
those things which are Gods. * And when 22
they heard it, they marueiled, and left him, and
went their way. * The same day the Sadduces 23
came to him (which say that there is no resur-
rection) and asked him, * Saying, Master, Mo- 24
ses saide, If a man die, hauing no children, his
brother shall marrie his wife by the right of
consanguinitie, & raise vp seed vnto his brother. * Now 25
there

S. MATTHEWE.

there were with vs seuen brethren, and the
 married a wife, and decessed: and hauing no
 36 issue, left his wife vnto his brother. * Likewise
 37 * And last of all the woman died also. * Then
 38 fore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she
 39 of the seuen? for all had her. * Then Iesus
 swered, and saide vnto them, Ye are deceiued
 not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power
 40 God. * For in the resurrection they neither ma-
 rie wiues, nor wiues are bestowed in marriage
 41 but are as the Angels of God in heauen. * And
 concerning the resurrection of the dead, haue
 ye not read what is spoken vnto you of God
 42 saying, * I am the God of Abraham, and the
 God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God
 43 not the God of the dead but of the liuing. * And
 when the multitude heard it, they were
 44 nued at his doctrine. * But when the Pharisees
 had heard, that he had put the Sadduces to
 45 lence, they assembled together. * And one
 of them, *which was* an expounder of the Law,
 46 asked him a question, tempting him, and saying
 47 * Master, which is the great commaundement
 48 in the Lawe? * Iesus saide to him, Thou shalt
 loue the Lorde thy God with all thine heart
 49 with all thy soule, and with all thy mind. * This
 50 is the first and the great commandement. * And
 the second is like vnto this, Thou shalt loue
 51 thy neighbour as thy selfe. * On these two
 commandements hangeth the whole Lawe, and the
 52 Prophets. * While the Pharisees were gathered
 together

C H A P. XXIII.

together, Iesus asked them, * Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose Sonne is he? They said vnto him, Dauids. * He saide vnto them, Howe then doth Dauid in spirite call him Lord, saying * The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool? * If then Dauid call him Lorde, howe is he his Sonne? * And none could answer him a word, neither durst any from that day forth aske him any moe questions.

C H A P. XXIII.

Then spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, * Saying, The Scribes & the Pharisees sit in Moses seate. * All therefore whatsoever they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe: but after their workes doe not: for they say, & doe not. * For they binde heauie burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders; but they themselues will not mooue them with one of their fingers. * All their works they doe for to be seene of men: for they make their phylacteries broad, and make long the fringes of their garments, * And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the chiefe seates in the assemblies, * And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men Rabbi, Rabbi. * But be not ye called, Rabbi: for one is your doctor, to wit, Christ, and all ye are brethren. * And call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one, your Father which is in heauen. * Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, even Christ. * But he that is greatest among

S. MATTHEWE.

- 12** mong you, let him be your seruant. * For whosoever will exalt him selfe, shall be brought lowe: & whosoever will humble him selfe, shall be exalted. * Wo therefore be vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites, because ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues goe not in, neither suffer ye them that would enter, to come in. * Wo be vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. * Woe be vnto you Scribes & Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea & land to make one of your profession: when he is made, ye make him two folde more the child of hell, then you your selues. * Wo be vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoever sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gold of the Temple, he offendeth. * Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the golde? * And whosoever sweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the offering that is vpon it offendeth. * Ye fooles & blind, whether is greater, the offering, or the altar which sanctifieth the offering? * Whosoever therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. * And whosoever sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it, & by him that dwelleth therein. * And he that sweareth by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. * Woe be to you

Scri

C H A P. XXIII.

Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye tithe
 mint, & anise, & cummin, and leaue the weigh-
 tier matters of the law as iudgement, & mercie,
 and fidelitie. These ought ye to haue done, and
 not to haue lest the other. * Ye blinde guides, 24
 which straine out a gnat, & swallowe a camell.
 * Wo be to you, Scribes & Pharises, hypocrites: 25
 for ye make cleane the outer side of the cup, &
 of the platter: but within they are full of bri-
 berie & excesse. * Thou blinde Pharise, cleanse 26
 first the inside of the cup and platter, that the
 outside of them may be cleane also. * Wo be 27
 to you, Scribes & Pharises, hypocrites: for ye
 are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare
 beautifull outward, but are within full of dead
 mens bones & of all filthines. * So are ye also: 28
 for outwarde ye appeare righteous vnto men,
 but within ye are full of hypocrisie & iniquitie.
 * Wo be vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypo- 29
 crites: for ye builde the tombes of the Pro-
 phets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righte-
 ous, * And say, If we had bene in the dayes of 30
 our sathers, we would not haue bene partners
 with them in the blood of the Prophets. * So 31
 then ye be witnesses vnto your selues, that ye
 are the children of them that murdered
 the Prophets. * Fulfill ye also the measure of 32
 your sathers. * O serpents, the generation of vi- 33
 pers, howe should ye escape the damnation of
 hell! * Wherefore beholde, I send vnto you 34
 Prophets, & wise men, and Scribes, and of them
 ye shall kill and crucifie: and of them shall ye

S. MATTHEWE.

35 scourge in your Synagogues, & persecute from
 cite to cite. * That vpon you may come all
 the righteous blood that was shed vpon the
 earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous,
 vnto the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Bara-
 36 chias, whom ye slew betweene the Temple and
 the altar. * Verely I say vnto you, al these things
 37 shall come vpon this generation. * Hierusalem,
 Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, & sto-
 nest them which are sent to thee, howe often
 would I haue gathered thy children together,
 as the henne gathereth her chickens vnder her
 38 winges, and ye would not! * Beholde, your ha-
 39 bitation shall be left vnto you desolate: * For
 I say vnto you, ye shall not see mee henceforth
 till that ye say, Blessed is hee that commeth in
 the Name of the Lorde.

C H A P. XXIIII.

A ND Iesus went out, and departed from the
 Temple, and his disciples came to him, to
 shewe him the building of the Temple. * And
 Iesus saide vnto them, See ye not all these
 thinges? Verely I say vnto you, there shall not
 be here left a stone vpon a stone, that shall not
 3 bee cast downe. * And as hee sate vpon the
 mount of Oliues, his disciples came vnto him
 apart, saying, Tell vs, when these thinges shall
 be, and what signe shall be of thy comming, &
 4 of the end of the worlde. * And Iesus answered
 & said vnto them, Take heede that no man de-
 5 ceive you. * For many shal come in my name
 6 saying, I am Christ, & shall deceiue many. * And

CHAP. XXIIII.

ye shall heare of warres, & rumours of warres:
 see that ye be not troubled: for al these things
 must come to passe, but the end is not yet. * For 7
 nation shall rise against nation, and realme a-
 gainst realme, & there shalbe famine, and pesti-
 lence, and earthquakes in diuers places. * All 8
 these are but the beginning of sorrowes. * Then 9
 shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, & shall
 kill you, and ye shall be hated of all nations for
 my Names sake. * And then shall many be of- 10
 fended, & shall betray one another, & shall hate
 one another. * And many false prophets shall 11
 arise, & shall deceiue many. * And because ini- 12
 quitie shalbe increased, the loue of many shalbe
 cold. * But he that endureth to the end, he shal 13
 be saued. * And this Gospel of the kingdome 14
 shalbe preached through the whole world for a
 witnesse vnto all nations, & then shall the ende
 come. * When ye therefore shall see the abo- 15
 mination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the
 Prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that rea-
 deth consider it) * Then let them which be in 16
 Iudea, flee into the mountaines. * Let him which 17
 is on the house top, not come downe to fetch
 any thing out of his house. * And he that is in 18
 the field, let him not returne backe to fetch his
 clothes. * And woe *shall be* to them that are 19
 with childe, & to them that giue sucke in those
 dayes. * But pray that your flight be not in the 20
 winter, neither on the Sabbath day. * For then 21
 shalbe great tribulation, such as was not from
 the beginning of the worlde to this time, nor
 shall

S. MATTHEWE.

- 22 shall be. * And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the electes sake those dayes shalbe shortened.
- 23 * Then if any shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there, beleue it not. * For there shall arise false Christes & false prophets, & shall shew great signes & wonders, so that if it were possible, they should deceiue the very elect. * Behold, I haue tolde you before.
- 24 * Wherefore they shall say vnto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth: Beholde, he is in the secret places, beleue it not. * For as the lightning cometh out of the East & is seene into the West, so shall also the coming of the Sonne of man be.
- 25 * For wheresoeuer a dead carkeis is, thither will the Eagles be gathered together. * And immediatly after the tribulations of those dayes, shall the Sunne be darkened, and the Moone shall not giue her light, and the stars shall fall from heauen, & the powers of heauen shall be shaken.
- 26 * And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the kindreds of the earth mourne, as they shall see the Sonne of man come in the cloudes of heauen with power & great glory.
- 27 * And he shall send his Angels with a great sound of a trumpet, & they shall gather together his elect from the four windes, & from one end of the heauens vnto the other. * Now learne the parable of the figge tree: when the bough is yet tender, & it putteth forth leaues, ye know that Sommer is neere.
- 28 * So likewise

ye, when ye see all these things, know that *the*
kingdome of God is neere, euen at the doores.
** Verily I say vnto you, this generation shal not* 34
*paste, till all these things be done. * Heauen and* 35
earth shall passe away: but my wordes shall
*not passe away. * But of that day and houre* 36
knoweth no mā, no not the Angels of heauen,
*but my Father only. * But as the dayes of Noe* 37
were, so likewise shall the cōming of the Sonne
*of man be. * For as in the dayes before the* 38
flood, they did eat and drinke, marrie, and giue
in marriage, vnto the day that Noe entred into
*the Arke, * And knewe nothing, till the flood* 39
came, & tooke them all away: so shall also the
*comming of the Sonne of man be. * Then two* 40
shalbe in the fieldes. the one shalbe receiued: &
*the other shalbe refused. * Two women shalbe* 41
grinding at the mill: the one shall be receiued,
*and the other shall be refused. * Watch there-* 42
fore: for ye know not what houre your master
*will come. * Of this be sure, that if the good-* 43
man of the house knewe at what watch the
thiefe would come, he would surely watch, and
not suffer his house to be digged thorowe.
** Therefore be ye also readie: for in the houre* 44
that ye thinke not, wil the Sonne of mā come.
** Who then is a faithfull seruaunt and wise,* 45
whome his master hath made ruler ouer his
*household, to giue them meate in season? * Blef-* 46
sed is that seruant, whome his master when he
*cometh, shall finde so doing. * Verely I say* 47
vnto you, he shall make him ruler ouer all his

S. MATTHEWE.

48 goods. * But if that euill seruant shall say
 his heart, My master doth deferre his comming
 49 * And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate
 and to drinke with the drunken: * That ser-
 50 uants master will come in a day, when he look-
 keth not for him, & in an houre that he is not
 51 ware of, * And will cut him off, and giue him
 his portion with hipocrites: there shalbe weep-
 ping and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 **T**hen the kingdome of heauen shalbe like
 ned vnto ten virgins, which tooke their
 lamps, & went forth to meete the bridegrome.
 2 * And five of them were wise, and five foolish.
 3 * The foolish tooke their lamps, but tooke not
 4 oyle with them. * But the wise tooke oyle
 5 their vessels with their lamps. * Now while
 the bridegrome taried long, all slumbred and
 6 slept. * And at midnight there was a cry made.
 Behold, the bridegrome commeth: goe out
 7 meete him. * Then all those virgins arose, and
 8 trimmed their lamps. * And the foolish said
 to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lamps
 9 are out. * But the wise answered, saying, No
 10 so, lest there will not be ynough for vs & you,
 but goe ye rather to them that sel, and buye
 11 your selues. * And while they went to buye,
 the bridegrome came: and they that were ready
 went in with him to the wedding, and the
 12 door was shut. * Afterwardes came also the other
 13 virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, * But
 answered, & said, Verely I say vnto you, I know

CHAP. XXV.

you not. * Watch therefore : for yee knowe
 neither the day nor the houre, when the Sonne
 of man will come. * For *the kingdome of heauen*
 is as a man that goeing into a straunge coun-
 trey, called his seruants, and deliuered to them
 his goods. * And vnto one he gaue five talents,
 and to another two, and to another one, to e-
 uery man after his owne abilitie, and straight-
 way went from home. * Then hee that had re-
 ceined five talents, went and occupied with
 them, and gained other five talents. * Likewise
 also, hee that *receined* two, he also gained other
 two. * But he that receined that one, went and
 digged it in the earth, & hid his masters money.
 * But after a long season, the master of those
 seruants came, and reckoned with them. * Then
 came he that had receined five talents, and
 brought other five talents, saying, Master, thou
 deliueredst vnto me five talents behold, I haue
 gained with them other five talents. * Then his
 master saide vnto him, It is well done good
 seruant and faithfull, Thou hast beene faithfull
 in little, I will make the ruler ouer much: enter
 into thy masters ioy. * Also hee that had recei-
 ned two talents, came, and said, Master, thou de-
 liueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue
 gained two other talents. * His master
 said vnto him, It is well done good seruant, &
 faithfull, Thou hast beene faithfull in little, I
 will make the ruler ouer much: enter into thy
 masters ioy. * Then he which had receined the
 one talent, came, and said, Master, I knew thou
 wast

S. MATTHEWE.

wast an hard man, which reapest where thou
 sowedst not, and gatherest where thou straw-
 edst not. * I was therefore afraid, and went, &
 hid thy talent in the earth: behold, thou hast
 thine owne. * And his master answered & said
 vnto him, Thou euil seruant and slouthful, thou
 knewest that I reape where I sowed not, & ga-
 ther where I strawed not. * Thou oughtest
 therefore to haue put my money to the ex-
 changers, and then at my comming shouldst
 haue receiued mine owne with vantage. * Take
 therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto
 him which hath ten talents. * For vnto every
 man that hath, it shalbe given, and he shal haue
 aboundance, and from him that hath not, euen
 that he hath, shalbe taken away. * Cast there-
 fore that vnprofitable seruant into vtter dark-
 nesse: there shalbe weeping and gnashing of
 teeth. * And when the Sonne of man cometh
 in his glorie, and all the holy Angels with him,
 then shall he sit vpon the throne of his glorie.
 * And before him shalbe gathered all nations,
 and he shall separate them one from another, as
 a shepheard separateth the sheepe from the
 goates. * And he shal set the sheepe on his right
 hand, and the goates on the left. * Then shall
 the King say to them on his right hand, Come
 ye blessed of my Father: take the inheritance of
 the kingdome prepared for you from the founda-
 tion of the world. * For I was an hungred,
 and ye gaue me meat: I thirsted, and ye gaue
 me drinke: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me

CHAP. XXV.

in vnto you. * *f* was naked, and ye clothed me: 36
 I was sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison,
 and ye came vnto me. * Then shall the righte- 37
 ous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee
 an hungred. and fed thee? or a thirst, and gaue
 thee drinke? * And when saw we thee a stran- 38
 ger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and
 clothed thee? * Or when saw we thee sicke, or 39
 in prison, and came vnto thee? * And the King 40
 shall answer, and say vnto them, Verily I say vn-
 to you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one
 of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done
 it to me. * Then shall he say vnto them on the 41
 left hand, Depart from me ye cursed, into euer-
 lasting fire which is prepared for the deuill &
 his angels. * For I was an hungred, and ye gaue 42
 me no meat: I thirsted & ye gaue me no drink:
 * I was a straunger, and ye tooke me not in vn- 43
 to you *f* was naked, and ye clothed me not:
 sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not. * The 44
 shall they also answer him, saying, Lord whē saw
 we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or
 naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not mini-
 ster vnto thee? * Then shall he answer them, 45
 and say, Verily I say vnto you, in as much as ye
 did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it
 not to me. * And these shall goe into euerla- 46
 sting paine, and the righteous into life eter-
 nall.

CHAP. XXVI.

ANd it came to passe, when Iesus had finish-
 ed all these sayings, he saide vnto his disci-
 ples,

3. MATTHEW E.

- 2 ples, * Ye knowe that after two daies is the
 Pasceouer, and the Sonne of man shall be deli-
 3 uered to be crucified. * Then assembled together
 the chiefe Priestes, and the Scribes, and the
 Elders of the people into the hall of the
 4 Priest called Caiaphas, * And consulted together
 that they might take Iesus by subtiltie,
 5 kill him. * But they said, Not on the feast day,
 6 least any vproare be among the people. * And
 when Iesus was in Bethania, in the house
 7 of Simon the leper, * There came vnto him a
 woman, which had a boxe of very costly oin-
 tment, and powred it on his head, as he sate
 8 at the table. * And when his disciples saw it, they
 had indignation, saying, What needed this
 9 waste? * For this ointment might haue beene
 sold for much, and beene giuen to the poore.
 10 * And Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, Why
 trouble ye the woman? for shee hath wrought
 11 a good worke vpon me. * For ye haue the
 poore alwayes with you, but me shall ye not
 12 haue alwaies. * For in that she powred this
 ointment on my body, shee did it to bury me.
 13 * Verely I say vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gos-
 pel shall be preached throughout al the world,
 there shall also this that she hath done, be
 14 remembred of for a memorial of her. * Then one of
 the twelve, called Iudas Iscariot, went vnto the
 15 chiefe Priests, * And said, What will ye giue
 me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they
 16 appointed vnto him thirtypieces of siluer. * And
 from that time he sought opportunitie to

CHAP. XXVI.

him. * Now on the first day of the feast of 17
 unleavened bread, the disciples came to Iesus,
 saying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we
 prepare for thee to eate the Pasceouer? * And he 18
 said, Go ye into the citie to such a man, and
 say to him, The Master saith, My time is at
 hand: I will keepe the Pasceouer at thine house
 with my disciples. * And the disciples did as Ie- 19
 sus had giuen them charge, and made readie
 the Pasceouer. * So when the euen was come, 20
 he sate downe with the twelue. * And as they 21
 did eate, he said, Verely I say vnto you, that one
 of you shall betray me. * And they were excee- 22
 ding sorowfull, and began euery one of them
 to say vnto him, Is it I, Master? * And he answered 23
 and said, He that dippeth his hand with me
 in the dishe, hee shall betray me. * Surely the 24
 Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of
 him: but woe be to that man, by whome the
 Sonne of man is betrayed: it had beene good
 for that man, if he had neuer bene born. * Then 25
 he which betrayed him, answered and saide,
 Is it I, Master? He said vnto him, Thou hast said
 it. * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the 26
 bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it, &
 gaue it to the disciples and said, Take, eate: this
 is my body. * Also he tooke the cup, and when 27
 he had giuen thanks, he gaue it them, saying,
 Drinke ye all of it, * For this is my blood of 28
 the New testament, that is shed for many, for
 the remission of sinnes. * I say vnto you, that I 29
 will not drinke henceforth of this fruite of the
 vine.

S. MATTHEWE.

- vine, vntill that day, when I shall drinke it new
 30 with you in my Fathers kingdom. * And when
 they had sung a Psalm, they went out into the
 31 mount of Olives. * Then said Iesus vnto them,
 All ye shall be offended by me this night. for it
 is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the
 32 sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered. * But af-
 ter I am risen againe, I will go before you into
 33 Galile. * But Peter answered, and said vnto him,
 Though that all men shoulde be offended by
 34 thee, yet will I neuer be offended. * Iesus saide
 vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, that this night
 before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denye me
 35 thrise. * Peter said vnto him, Though I should
 die with thee, I will in no case denie thee. I like-
 36 wise also said all the disciples. * Then went Ie-
 sus with them into a place which is called
 Gethsemane, and said vnto his disciples, Sit ye
 37 here, while I go, & pray yonder. * And he tooke
 vnto him Peter, & the two sonnes of Zebedee,
 and began to waxe sorrowfull, and grievously
 38 troubled. * Then said Iesus vnto them, My soule
 is very heavy, *even* vnto the death: tary ye here,
 39 and watch with me. * So he went a litle further,
 and fell on his face, and prayed, saying. O my
 Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from
 me: neuerthelesse, not as I will, but as thou
 40 wilt. * After, he came vnto the disciples, and
 found them a sleepe, and said to Peter, What
 couldest thou not watch with mee one houre?
 41 * Watch, and pray, that ye enter not into tem-
 ptation: the spirit indeed is ready, but the flesh

CHAP. XXVI.

is weake. * Again he went away the second 42
 time, and prayed saying, O my Father, if this
 cuppe cannot passe away from me, but that I
 must drinke it, thy will be done. * And he came 43
 and found them a sleepe againe, for their eyes
 were heauie. * So he left them and went away 44
 againe, and prayed the third time, saying the
 same wordes. * Then came he to his disciples 45
 and said vnto them, Sleep henceforth, and take
 your rest: behold, the houre is at hand, and the
 Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sin-
 ners. * Rise, let vs go: behold, he is at hand that 46
 betrayeth me. * And while he yet spake, loe, Iu- 47
 das, one of the twelue, came, and with him a
 great multitude with swordes and stauces, from
 the hie Priests and Elders of the people. * Now 48
 he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token,
 saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, that is he, lay
 hold on him. * And forthwith he came to Je- 49
 sus, and saide, God saue thee, Master, and kissed
 him. * Then Iesus said vnto him Friend, wher- 50
 fore art thou come? Then came they, and laide
 hands on Iesus, and tooke him. * And behold, 51
 one of them which were with Iesus, stretched
 out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a
 seruant of the hie Priest, and smote off his eare.
 * Then saide Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sword 52
 into his place: for all that take the sword, shall
 perish with the sword. * Either thinkest thou, 53
 that I can not now pray to my Father, and he
 will giue me moe then twelue legions of An-
 gels? * How then should the Scriptures be ful- 54
 filled,

S. MATTHEWE.

- 55 filled, *which say*, that it must be so? * The same
 56 houre said Iesus to the multitude, Ye be come
 out as *it were* against a thiefe with swords and
 57 staves to take me: I sate dailie teaching in the
 Temple among you, & ye tooke me not. * But
 58 al this was done that the Scriptures of the Pro-
 phets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples
 59 forsooke him, and fled. * And they tooke Iesus
 and led him to Caiaphas the hie Priest, where
 60 the Scribes & the Elders were assembled. * And
 Peter folowed him a far off vnto the hie Priests
 hall, and went in, and sate with the servants to
 61 see the end. * Now the chiefe Priestles and the
 Elders, and all the whole counsell sought false
 62 witnes against Iesus, to put him to death. * But
 they found none, and though many false wit-
 63 nesses came, yet found they none: but at the
 last came two false witnesses, * And said, This
 man saile, I can destroy the Temple of God,
 64 & builde it in three dayes. * Then the chiefe
 Priest arose, and said to him, Answerest thou
 nothing? What is the matter that these men
 65 witnes against thee? * But Iesus held his peace.
 Then the chiefe Priest answered & said to him,
 charge thee swear vnto vs by the living God,
 to tell vs, if thou be that Christ, the Sonne of
 66 God, or no. * Iesus saide to him, Thou hast
 saide it: neuerthelesse I say vnto you, hereafter
 shall ye see the Sonne of man, sitting at the
 right hand of the power of God, and come in
 67 the cloudes of the heauen. * Then the hie Priest
 rent his clothes, saying, He hath blasphemed.

what haue we any more neede of witnesses? behold, now ye haue heard his blasphemy. * What thinke ye? They answered, & said, He is guiltie of death. * Then spet they in his face, and buffeted him, and other smote him with rods, * Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, Who is he that smote thee? * Peter sate without in the hall: & a maide came to him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galile: * But he denied before them all, saying, I wote not what thou sayest. * And when he went out into the porch, another maide saw him, & said vnto them that were there, This man was also with Iesus of Nazareth. * And againe he denied with an othe, saying, I knowe not the man. * So after a while came vnto him they that stood by, & said vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them: for open thy speach bewrayeth thee. * Ehen began he to curse him selfe, and to sweare, saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crew. * Then Peter remembered the wordes of Iesus, which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

C H A P. XXVII.

WHen the morning was come, all the chiefe Priestes, & the Elders of the people tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death, * And led him away bound, and deliuered him vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour. * Then when Iudas which betrayed him, sawe that he was condemned, he repented him selfe, and brought a

S. MATTHEWE.

- gaine the thirtie *pieces* of siluer to the chiefe
4 Priestes, and Elders, * Saying, I haue sinned be-
5 trayng the innocēt blood. But they said, What
6 is that to vs ? see thou to it. * And when he had
cast downe the siluer *pieces* in the Temple, he
departed, and went, & hanged him selfe. * And
the chiefe Priests tooke the siluer *pieces*, & said,
It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the
7 treasure, because it is the price of blood. * And
they tooke counsell, and bought with them a
potters fild, for the buriall of straungers.
8 * Wherefore that field is called, The fild of
9 blood, vntil this day. * (Then was fulfilled that
which was spoken by Ieremias the Prophet,
saying, And they tooke thirtie siluer *pieces*, the
price of him that was valned, whom *they* of the
10 children of Israel valued. * And they gaue them
for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me)
11 * And Iesus stood before the gouernour, & the
gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou that king
of the Iewes? Iesus said vnto him, Thou sayest it.
12 * And whē he was accused of the chiefe Priests,
13 and Elders, he answered nothing. * Then saide
Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not howe many
14 things they lay against thee ? * But he answered
him not to one worde, in so much that the go-
15 uernour marueiled greatly. * Now at the feast,
the gouernour was wont to deliner vnto the
16 people a prisoner, whome they would. * And
they had then a notable prisoner, called Barab-
17 bas. * When they were then gathered toge-
ther, Pilate saide vnto them, Whether will ye
that

CHAP. XXVII.

that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus
 which is called Christ? * (For he knew well,
 that for enuie they had deliuered him. * Also
 when he was set downe vpon the iudgement
 seat, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou no-
 thing to do with that iust man: for I haue suf-
 fered many things this day in a dreame by rea-
 son of him.) * But the chiefe Priestes & the El-
 ders had perswaded the people, that they should
 aske Barabbas, & should destroy Iesus. * Then
 the gouernour answered, and said vnto them,
 Whether of the twaine will ye that I let loose
 vnto you? And they said, Barabbas. * Pilate said
 to them, What shal I do then with Iesus, which
 is called Christ? They all said to him, Let him
 be crucified. * Then saide the gouernour, But
 what euill hath he done? Then they cryed the
 more, saying, Let him be crucified. * When Pi-
 late saw that he auailed nothing, but that more
 tumult was made, he tooke water & washed his
 hands before the multitude, saying, I am inno-
 cent of the blood of this iust man: looke you
 to it. * Then answered all the people, and said,
 His blood be on vs, & on our children. * Thus
 let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged
 Iesus, & deliuered him to be crucified. * Then
 the souldiers of the gouernour tooke Iesus into
 the common hall, and gathered about him the
 whole band, * And they stripped him, and put
 about him a skarlet robe, * And platted a crown
 of thornes, & put it vpon his head, & a reede in
 his right hande, and bowed their knees before
 him,

S. MATTHEWE.

him, and mocked him, saying, God saue thee,
30 King of the Iewes, * And spitted vpon him, and
31 tooke a reede, & smote him on the head. * Thus
when they had mocked him, they tooke the
robe from him, and put his owne raiment on
32 him, & led him away to crucifie him. * And as
they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, na-
med Simon: him they compelled to beare his
33 crosse. * And when they came vnto the place
called Golgotha, (that is to say, the place of
34 *dead mens skulles*) * They gaue him vineger to
drinke mingled with gall: and when he had ta-
35 sted thereof, he would not drinke. * And when
they had crucified him, they parted his gar-
ments, & did cast lots, that it might be fulfilled,
which was spoken by the Prophet, They deu-
ded my garments among them, and vpon my
36 vesture did cast lots. * And they sate and wat-
37 ched him there. * They set vp also ouer his
head his cause written, **THIS IS IESVS
THE KING OF THE IEWES.**
38 * And there were two thienes crucified with
him, one on the right hand and another on the
39 left. * And they that passed by, reuiled him, wag-
40 ging their heades, * And saying Thou that de-
stroyest the Temple, & buildest it in three daies,
saue thy selfe: if thou be the Sonne of God,
41 come downe from the crosse. * Likewise also
the his Priestes mocking him, with the Scribes,
42 and Elders, & Pharises, said, * He saued others,
but he can not saue him selfe: if he be the King
of israel, let him now come downe from the
crosse,

CHAP. XXVII.

crosse. & we will beleue in him. * He trusteth 43
 in God, let him deliuer him now, if he will haue
 him : for he said, I am the Sonne of God. * The 44
 selfe same thing also the thienes which were
 crucified with him, cast in his teeth. * Now from 45
 the sixth houre was there darkenesse ouer all the
 land, vnto the ninth houre. * And about the 46
 ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loud voyce, say-
 ing, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani ? that is, My God,
 my God, why hast thou forsaken me ? * And 47
 some of them that stood there, whē they heard
 it, said, This man calleth Elias. * And straight- 48
 way one of them ran, & tooke a spondge. & fil-
 led it with vineger, and put it on a reed, & gaue
 him to drinke. * Other said, Let be : let vs see, 49
 if Elias will come and saue him. * Then Iesus 50
 cryed againe with a loud voyce, & yeelded vp
 the ghost. * And behold, the vaile of the Tem- 51
 ple was rent in twaine, from the toppe to the
 bottome, and the earth did quake, & the stones
 were clouen. * And the graues did open them 52
 selues, and many bodyes of the Saintes, which
 slept, arose, * And came out of the graues after 53
 his resurrection, and went into the holy Citie,
 and appeared vnto many. * When the Centu- 54
 rion, and they that were with him watching Ie-
 sus, sawe the earthquake, and the thinges that
 were done, they feared greatly. saying, Truly
 this was the Sonne of God. * And many wo- 55
 men were there beholding him a farre off,
 which had followed Iesus from Galile, mini-
 string vnto him. * Among whom was Marie 56

S. MATTHEWE.

57 Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and
 Ioses, & the mother of Zebedeus sonnes. * And
 when the euen was come, there came a rich mā
 of Arimathea named Ioseph, who had also him
 58 selfe bene Iesus disciple. * He went to Pilate,
 and asked the body of Iesus. Then Pilate com-
 59 maunded the body to be deliuered. * So Ioseph
 tooke the bodie, & wrapped it in a cleane
 60 linnen cloth. * And put it in his new tombe,
 which he had hewen out in a rocke, and rolled
 a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and
 61 departed. * And there was Marie Magdalene,
 and the other Marie sitting ouer against the se-
 62 pulchre. * Nowe the next day that followed
 the Preparation of the Sabbath, the hie Priester
 63 and the Pharises assembled to Pilate, * And
 said, Syr, we remember that that deceiuer said,
 while he was yet aliue, Within three dayes I
 64 will rise. * Commaunde therefore, that the se-
 pulchre be made sure vntill the third day, least
 his disciples come by night, and steale him a-
 way, and say vnto the people, He is risen from
 the dead: so shall the last error be worse then
 65 the first. * Then Pilate saide vnto them, Ye
 haue a watch: goe, and make it sure as yee
 66 knowe. * And they went, and made the sepul-
 chre sure with the watch, and sealed the
 stone.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 **N**OW in the end of the Sabbath, when the
 first day of the weeke began to dawne, Ma-
 rie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to see
 the

CHAP. XXVIII.

the sepulchre, * And behold, there was a great
earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord descen-
ded from heauen, and came and rolled backe
the stone from the doore, & fate vpon it. * And
his countenance was like lightning, and his rai-
ment white as snow. * And for feare of him, the
keepers were astonied, and became as deade
men. * But the Angel answered, and said to the
women. Feare ye not for I know that ye seeke
Iesus which was crucified: * He is not here, for
he is risen, as he said: come, see the place where
the Lord was laide, * And go quickly, and tell
his disciples that he is risen from the dead: and
behold, he goeth before you into Galile: there
ye shall see him: loe, I haue told you. * So they
departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare
and great ioy, and did runne to bring his disci-
ples word * And as they went to tell his disci-
ples, behold, Iesus also met them, saying, God
saue you. And they came, and tooke him by
the feete, and worshipped him. * Then saide Ie-
sus vnto them, Be not aïraid. Goe, *and* tell my
brethren, that they goe into Galile, and there
shal they see me. * Now when they were gone,
behold, some of the watch came into the city, &
shewed vnto the high Priests al the things that
were done. * And they gathered them together
with the Elders, and tooke counsell, and gaue
large money vnto the souldiers. * Saying, Say,
His disciples came by night, & stole him away
while we slept. * And if this matter come before
the Gouvernour to be heard, we will perswade
him,

S. MARKE.

him, and so vse the matter, that you shall not
 15 neede to care. * So they tooke the money, and
 did as they were taught: and this saying is noi-
 16 sed among the Iewes vnto this day. * Then the
 cleuen disciples went into Galile into a moun-
 17 taine, where Iesus had appointed them. * And
 when they saw him, they worshipped him: but
 18 some doubted. * And Iesus came, & spake vn-
 to them, saying, All power is giuen vnto me in
 19 heauen, and in earth. * Goe therefore, and teach
 all naticas, baptizing them in the name of the
 Father, & of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghost,
 20 * Teaching them to obserue all things, what-
 soener I haue commaunded you: and loe, I am
 with you alway, vntill the end of the world,
 A M E N.

THE HOLY GOSPEL
 OF IESVS CHRIST,
 according to Marke.

C H A P. I.

1 **T**HE beginning of the Gospel of
 Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God:
 2 * As it is written in the Pro-
 phets, Behold, I send my messen-
 ger before thy face, which shall
 3 prepare thy way before thee. * The voyce of
 him that cryeth in the wildernesse is: Prepare
 the way of the Lord: make his paths straight.
 4 * Iohn did baptize in the wildernes, and preach
 the baptisme of amendement of life, for remis-
 5 sion of sinnes. * And all the countrey of In-
 dea,

CHAP. 12

And they of Hierusalem went out vnto him,
 and were all baptized of him in the riner Ior-
 dan, confessing their sinnes. * Now Iohn was 6
 clothed with camels heare, & with a girdle of
 skin about his loynes: and he did eate locustes
 & wilde honie, * And preached, saying, A strō- 7
 ger then I, commeth after me, whose shoos lat-
 chet I am not worthy to stoupe downe, & vn-
 loose. * Trueth it is, I haue baptized you with 8
 water: but hee will baptize you with the holy
 Ghost. * And it came to passe in those daies, 9
 that I E S V S came from Nazareth, a citie of
 Galile, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordan.
 * And as soone as he was come out of the water, 10
 Iohn saw the heauens clouen in twaine, & the
 holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue.
 * Then there was a voyce from heauen, saying, 11
 Thou art my beloved Sonne, in whome I am
 well pleased. * And immediately the spirite 12
 drineth him into the wildernesse. * And he was 13
 there in the wildernesse fourtie dayes, and was
 tempted of Satan: he was also with the wilde
 beastes, and the Angels ministred vnto him.
 * Now after Iohn was committed to prison, Ie- 14
 sus came into Galile, preaching the Gospell of
 the kingdome of God, * And saying, The time 15
 is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hād:
 repent and beleue the Gospell. * And as he 16
 walked by the sea of Galile, he saw Simon, and
 Andrewe his brother, casting a net into the sea,
 (for they were fishers.) * Then Iesus said vnto 17
 them, Follow mee, and I will make you to be
 fishers

S. MARK.

- 18** fishers of men. * And straightway they forsook
19 their nets, and followed him. * And when he
 had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames
the sonne of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as
 they were in the shippe, mending their nets.
20 * And anon he called them: and they left their
 father Zebedeus in the shippe with his hired
21 seruants, and went their way after him. * So
 they entred into Capernaum, and straightway
 on the Sabbath day he entred into the Syna-
22 gogue, and taught. * And they were astonied
 at his doctrine, for he taught them as one that
23 had authority, & not as the Scribes. * And there
 was in their Synagogue a mā, in whom was an
24 vnclean spirit, & he cryed out, * Saying, Ah, what
 haue we to doe with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth?
 Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee what
25 thou art, *euē* that holy one of God. * And Iesus
 rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come
26 out of him. * And the vncleane spirit tare him,
 and cryed with a loud voyce, and came out of
27 him. * And they were all amased, so that they
 demaunded one of another, saying, What thing
 is this? what new doctrine is this? for he com-
 maundeth euē the foule spirits with authori-
28 tie, and they obey him. * And immediately his
 fame spread abroad throughout all the region
29 bordering on Galile. * And as soone as they
 were come out of the Synagogue, they entred
 into the house of Simon and Andrew, with
30 Iames and Iohn. * And Simons wiues mother
 lay sicke of a feuer, and anon they told him of
 her

CHAP. I.

her. * And he came and tooke her by the hād, 31
 and listēd hēr vp, and the feuer forsooke her by
 and by, and theē ministrēd vnto them. * And 32
 when euen was come, at what time the sunne
 setteth, they brought to him all that were dis-
 eased, and them that were possessed with deuils.
 * And the whole citie was gathered together 33
 at the doore. * And he healed many that were 34
 sicke of diuers diseases: and he cast out many
 deuils, and suffered not the deuils to say that
 they knew him. * And in the morning very 35
 early before day, *Iesus* arose and went out in-
 to a solitarie place, and there prayed. * And Si- 36
 mon, and they that were with him, followed
 carefully after him. * And when they had found 37
 him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.
 * Then he said vnto them, Let vs goe into the 38
 next townes, that I may preach there also: for I
 came out for that purpose. * And he preached 39
 in their Synagogues throughout al Galile, and
 cast the deuils out. * And there came a leper 40
 to him, beseeching him, and kneeled downe vn-
 to him, and said to him, If thou wilt, thou canst
 make me cleane. * And *Iesus* had compassion, 41
 and put forth his hand, and touched him, and
 saide to him, I will: be thou cleane. * And as 42
 soone as he had spoken, immediately the le-
 prosie departed from him, and he was made
 cleane. * And after he had giuen him a strait 43
 commaundement, he sent him away forth-
 with, * And saide vnto him, See thou 44
 say nothing to any man, but get thee hence,
 and

S. MARK.

and shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer
for thy cleansing those things, which Moses com-
45 manded, for a testimoniall vnto them. * But
when he was departed, he began to tell many
things, and to publish the matter, so that Iesus
could no more openly enter into the city, but
was without in desert places: and they came to
him from every quarter.

C H A P. II.

1 **A**FTER a few daies, he entred into Capernaum
2 againe, & it was noised that he was in the
house. * And anon, many gathered together, in
3 so much that the places about the doore could
not receive any more: & he preached the word
vnto them. * And there came vnto him, that
4 brought one sicke of the palsie, borne of foure
men. * And because they could not come neere
vnto him for the multitude, they vncouered the
5 roofe of the house where he was: & when they
had broken it open, they let downe the bed,
6 wherein the sicke of the palsie lay. * Now when
Iesus sawe their faith, he said to the sicke of the
7 palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiven thee. * And
there were certaine of the Scribes, sitting there,
8 and reasoning in their hearts, * Why doth this
man speake such blasphemies? who can forgive
9 sinnes, but God onely? * And immediatly when
Iesus perceined in his Spirit, that thus they rea-
soned with themselves, he said vnto them, Why
reason ye these things in your hearts? * Whe-
ther is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie,
Thy sinnes are forgiven thee? or to say, Arise,
and

CHAP. II.

and take vp thy bed, and walke? * But that ye 10
 may know, that the Sonne of man hath autho-
 ritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he said vnto the
 sick of the palfie) * I say vnto thee, Arise, & take 11
 vp thy bed, and get the hence into thine owne
 house. * And by and by he arose, and tooke vp 12
 his bed, and went forth before them all, in so
 much that they were all amased, and glorified
 God, saying, We neuer saw such a thing. * Then 13
 he went forth againe toward the sea, & all the
 people resorted vnto him, and he taught them.
 * And as Iesus passed by, he sawe *Leui the sonne* 14
 of Alpheus sit at the receit of custome, and said
 vnto him, Follow me. And he arose, & follow-
 ed him. * And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at 15
 table in his house, many Publicanes & sinners
 sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for
 there were many that followed him. * And whē 16
 the Scribes & Pharises sawe him eate with the
 Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disci-
 ples, How is it, that he eateth & drinketh with
 Publicanes & sinners? * Now when Iesus heard 17
 it, he said vnto them, The whole haue no need
 of the Phisition, but the sick. I came not to call
 the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.
 * And the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises did 18
 fast, and came and said vnto him, Why do the
 disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises fast, and thy
 disciples fast not? * And Iesus said vnto them, 19
 Can the children of the marriage chamber fast,
 whiles the bridegroom is with them? as long as
 they haue the bridegrom with the, they can not
 fast.

S. M A R K E.

- 20 fast. *But the daies will come, when the bride-
groom shall be taken from them, & then shall
21 they fast in those daies. *Also no man soweth a
piece of new cloth in an old garment: for els the
new piece that filled it vp, takerh away *some*
what from the olde, and the breach is worke.
22 *Likewise, no man putteth new wine into old
vessels: for els the new wine breaketh the ves-
sels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels
are lost: but new wine must be put into new ves-
23 sels. *And it came to passe, as he went through
the corn on the Sabbath day, that his disciples,
as they went on their way, began to pluck the
24 eares of corn. *And the Pharises said vnto him,
Behold, why doe they on the Sabbath day, that
25 which is not lawfull? *And he saide to them,
Haue ye neuer read what Dauid did, when he
had need, and was an hungred, *both* he, and they
26 that were with him? *How he went into the
house of God, in the daies of Abiathar the hie
Priest, and did eate the shewbread, which were
not lawfull to eate, but for the Priestes, & gaue
27 also to them which were with him? *And he
said to them, the Sabbath was made for man,
28 and not man for the Sabbath, *Wherefore the
Sonne of man is Lord, euen of the Sabbath.

C H A P. III.

- 1 **A**ND he entred againe into the Synagogue, &
and there was a man which had a withered
2 hande. *And they watched him whether hee
would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they
3 might accuse him. *Then he said vnto the man
which

CHAP. III.

which had the withered hand, Arise: *stand forth*
in the middes. * And he said to them, Is it lawful
to doe a good deed on the Sabbath day, or to
doe euill? to saue the life or to kill? But they
held their peace. * Then he looked round about
on them angerlie, mourning also for the hard-
nes of their hearts, and said to the man, Stretch
forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: And
his hande was restored as whole as the other.
* And the Pharises departed, and straightway
gathered a councill with the Herodians against
him, that they might destroy him. * But Iesus a-
noided with his disciples to the sea: and a great
multitude followed him from Galile, and from
Iudea, * And from Ierusalem, and from Idumea,
and beyond Iordan. and they that dwelled a-
bout Tyrus and Sidon, when they had heard
what great thinges he did, came vnto him in a
great number. * And he commaunded his dis-
ciples, that a litle shippe should waite for him,
because of the multitude, lest they should
throng him. * For he had healed many, in so
much that they preassed vpon him, to touch
him, as many as had plagues. * And when
the vncleane spirites saw him, they fell downe
before him, and cryed saying, Thou art the
Sonne of God. * And hee sharpelie rebuked
them, to the ende they should not vtter him.
* Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called
vnto him whome he would, and they came vn-
to him. * And hee appoynted twelue that they
should be with him, and that hee might sende
them

SIMONE.

- 15 them to preache, * And that they might haue
 power to heale sickneses, and to cast out deuils.
 16 * And the first was Simon, & he named Simon
 17 Peter. * Then Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and
 Iohn, Iames brother (and surnamed them Boa-
 18 nerges, which is the Sonnes of thunder) * And
 Andrewe, and Phillip, and Bartlemewe, & Mat-
 thew, and Thomas, and Iames, *the same* of Al-
 pheus, and Thaddeus, & Simon the Cananite,
 19 * And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, &
 20 they came home. * And the multitude assem-
 bled againe, so that they could not so much
 21 as eate bread. * And when his kinsfolkes heard
 of it, they went out to lay hold on him, for they
 22 saide that he was beside himselfe. * And the
 Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem,
 said, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince
 23 of the devils he casteth out deuils. * But he cal-
 led them vnto him, and said vnto them in pa-
 24 rables, How can Satan drine out Satan? * For
 if a kingdome be deuided against it selfe, that
 25 kingdome can not stand. * Or if a house be de-
 uided against it selfe, that house can not conti-
 26 nue. * So if Satan make insurrection against him
 selfe, and be deuided, he cannot indure, but is
 27 at an end. * No man can enter into a strong
 mans house, and take away his goods, except
 he first bind that strong man, and then spoyle
 28 his house. * Verely I say vnto you, al sinnes shall
 be forgien vnto the children of men, & blas-
 29 phemies wherewith they blaspheme: * But hee
 that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall

never

CHAP. IIII.

never have forgiveness, but is culpable of eternal damnation. * Because they said, He had an vnclane spirit. * Then came his brethren and mother, and stood without, and sent vnto him, and called him. * And the people sate about him, and they saide vnto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren seeke for thee without. * But he answered them, saying, Who is my mother and my brethren? * And hee looked round about on them, which sate in compasse about him, and saide, Behold my mother and my brethren. * For whosoever doeth the will of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

And he began againe to teach by the sea side, and there gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, & sate in the sea, and al the people was by the sea side on the land. * And he taught them many things in parables, & said vnto them in his doctrine, * Harken: Behold, there went out a sower to sowe. * And it came to passe as he sowed, that some fell by the way side, & the fowles of the heauen came, and deuoured it vp. * And some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth, and by and by sprang vp, because it had not deapth of earth. * But as soone as the sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had not roote, it withered away. * And some fell among the thornes, and the thornes grewe vp, and choked it, so that it gaue no fruite. * Some againe fell

in good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprong
 vp, and grewe, and it brought forth, some thir-
 tie folde, some sixtie fold, and some an hundred
 folde. * Then he said vnto them, He that hath
 9 eares to heare, let him heare. * And when he
 10 was alone, they that were about him with the
 11 twelue, asked him of the parable. * And he said
 vnto them, To you it is giuen to knowe the
 mysterie of the kingdome of God : but vnto
 them that are without, all things are done in
 12 parables, * That they seeing, may see, and not
 discerne : and they hearing, may heare, and not
 vnderstand, least at any time they should turne,
 13 and their sinnes should be forgiven them. * A-
 gaine he saide vnto them, Perceiue ye not this
 parable? howe then shoulde ye vnderstand all
 14 other parables? * The sower soweth the word.
 15 * And these are they that *receiue the seed* by
 the way side, in whome the word is sowne: but
 when they haue heard it, Satan commeth im-
 mediately, and taketh away the word that was
 16 sown in their heartes. * And likewise they that
 receiue the seed in stonie ground are they, which
 when they haue heard the word, straightwayes
 17 receiue it with gladnesse: * Yet haue they no
 roote in them selues and endure but a time: for
 when trouble and persecution ariseth for the
 18 word, immediatly they be offended. * Also they
 that receiue the seed among the thornes, are
 19 such as heare the word: * But the cares of this
 worlde, and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the
 lustes of other things enter in, and choke the
 word.

wor
 rece
 hear
 fru
 an h
 met
 vnd
 stick
 be c
 shal
 hea
 Tak
 ye r
 you
 him
 tha
 hat
 Go
 gro
 day
 not
 for
 ear
 soc
 tet
 * y
 the
 for
 m
 ear
 ear
 wor

CHAP. III.

word, and it is vnfruitfull. * But they that haue 20
 receiued seede in good ground, are they that
 heare the word, and receiue it, and bring foorth
 fruite: one *corne* thirtie, another sixtie, & some
 an hundred. * Also he saide vnto them, Com- 21
 meth the candle in, to be put vnder a bushel, or
 vnder the bed, and not to be put on a candle-
 stick? * For there is nothing hid, that shal not 22
 be opened: neither is there a secret, but that it
 shall come to light. * If any man ~~hath~~ eares to 23
 heare, let him heare. * And he saide vnto them, 24
 Take heede what ye heare. With what measure
 ye mete, it shalbe measured vnto you: and vnto
 you that heare, shall more be giuen. * For vnto 25
 him that hath, shall it be giuen, and from him
 that hath not, shalbe taken away, euen that he
 hath. * Also he saide, So is the kingdome of 26
 God, as if a man should cast seede into the
 ground, * And should sleepe, & rise vp night & 27
 day, and the seede should spring & grow vp, he
 not knowing howe. * For the earth bringeth 28
 forth fruite of it selfe, first the blade, then the
 eares, after that full corne in the eares. * And as 29
 soone as the fruit sheweth it selfe, anon he put-
 teth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.
 * He saide moreouer, Whereunto shall we liken 30
 the kingdome of God? or with what compari-
 son shall we compare it? * It is like a graine of 31
 mustard seede, which when it is sown in the
 earth, is the least of all seedes that be in the
 earth: * But after that it is sown, it groweth 32
 vp, and is greatest of all herbes; & beareth great

branches, so that the foules of heauen may build
 33 vnder the shadow of it. * And with many such
 parables he preached the word vnto them, as
 34 they were able to heare it. * And without pa-
 rables spake he nothing vnto them: but he
 expounded all thinges to his disciples apart.
 35 * Now the same day when euen was come, he
 said vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other
 36 side. * And they left the multitude, and tooke
 him as he was in the ship, and there were also
 37 with him other little shippes. * And there arose
 a great storme of winde, and the waues dashed
 38 into the ship, so that it was now full. * And he
 was in the sterne asleepe on a pillowe: and they
 awoke him, and saide to him, Master, carest thou
 39 not that we perish? * And he rose vp, and rebu-
 ked the winde, and said vnto the sea, Peace, and
 be still. So the winde ceased, and it was a great
 40 calme. * Then he said vnto them, Why are ye
 so fearfull? howe is it that ye haue no faith?
 41 * And they feared exceedingly, and said one to
 another, Who is this, that both the winde and
 sea obey him?

C H A P. V.

1 **A**ND they came ouer to the other side of the
 2 sea into the countrey of the Gadarens. * And
 when he was come out of the shippe, there met
 him incontinently out of the graues, a man
 3 which had an vncleane spirit: * Who had his
 abiding among the graues, and no man coulde
 4 binde him, no not with chaines, * Because that
 when he was often bounde with fetters and
 chaines,

CHAP. V.

chaines, he plucked the chaines asunder & brake
 the feters in pieces, neither coulde any man
 tame him. * And alwayes both night and day
 he cryed in the mountaines, and in the graues,
 and stroke him selfe with stones. * And when
 he sawe Iesus a farre off, he ranne & worshipped
 him. * And cryed with a loud voyce, and said,
 What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne
 of the most high God? I will that thou sweare
 to me by God, that thou torment me not. (For
 he saide vnto him, Come out of the man, thou
 vncleane spirit.) * And he asked him, What is
 thy name? and he answered, saying, My name is
 Legion: for we are many. * And he prayed him
 instantly, that he would not sende them away
 out of the countrey. * Nowe there was there
 in the mountaines a great heard of swine feed-
 ing. * And all the devils besought him, say-
 ing, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter
 into the. * And incontinently Iesus gaue them
 leaue. Then the vncleane spirits went out, and
 entred into the swine, and the hearde ranne
 headlong from the high banke into the sea,
 (and there were about two thousand swine) and
 they were choked vp in the sea. * And the
 swineheards fled & told it in the citie, & in the
 countrey, & they came out to see what it was
 that was done. * And they came to Iesus, and
 sawe him that had bene possessed with the de-
 uill and had the Legion, sitte both clothed, and
 in his right minde: and they were afraid. * And
 they that sawe it, tolde them what was done to

3. MARKE.

him that was possessed with the deuill, and con-
 17 cerning the swine. * Then they began to pray
 him, that he would depart from their coastes.
 18 * And when he was come into the shippe, he
 that had bene possessed with the deuill, prayed
 19 him that he might be with him. * Howbeit,
 Iesus would not suffer him, but said vnto him,
 Goe thy way home to thy friendes, and shewe
 them what great things the Lorde hath done
 vnto thee, and how he hath had compassion on
 20 thee. * So he departed, and began to publish in
 Decapolis, what great things Iesus had done
 21 vnto him: and all men did maruaile. * And
 when Iesus was come ouer againe by ship vnto
 the other side, a great multitude gathered toge-
 22 ther to him, & he was neere vnto the sea. * And
 beholde, there came one of the rulers of the Sy-
 nagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he
 23 sawe him, he fell downe at his feete. * And be-
 sought him instantly, saying, My little daughter
 lyeth at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou
 wouldest come and lay thine handes on her,
 24 that she may be healed, & liue. * Then he went
 with him, and a great multitude followed him,
 25 and thronged him. * (And there was a certaine
 woman, which was diseased with an issue of
 26 blood twelue yeeres, * And had suffered many
 thinges of many Physicions, and had spent all
 that she had and it auailed her nothing, but she
 27 became much worse. * When she had heard of
 Iesus, she came in the preasse behinde, and tou-
 28 ched his garment. * For she said, If I may but
 touch

touch his clothes, I shalbe whole. * And strait- 29
way the course of her blood was dried vp, and
she felt in her body, that she was healed of the
plague. * And immediately when Iesus did 30
knowe in him selle the vertue that went out of
him, he turned him round about in the preasse,
and said, Who hath touched my clothes? * And 31
his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the mul-
titude throng thee, and sayest thou, Who did
touch me? * And he looked round about, to 32
see her that had done that. * And the woman 33
feared and trembled: for she knew what was
done in her, and she came and fel downe before
him, and tolde him the whole trueth. * And he 34
said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee
whole: go in peace, & be whole of thy plague.)
* While he yet spake, there came from the *same* 35
ruler of the Synagogues house *certaine* which
said, Thy daughter is dead: why discailest thou
the Master any further? * Assoone as Iesus 36
heard that worde spoken, he saide vnto the ru-
ler of the Synagogue, Be not astraide: onely be-
leeue. * And he suffered no man to follow him 37
saue Peter and Iames, and Iohn the brother of
Iames. * So he came vnto the house of the ru- 38
ler of the Synagogue, and sawe the tumult, and
them that wept and wayled greatly. * And he 39
went in, and saide vnto them, Why make ye
this trouble, and weepe? the childe is not dead,
but sleepeth: * And they laught him to scorne: 40
but he put them all out, and tooke the father, &
the mother of the childe, and them that were

with him, and where in where the childe lay,
41 * And tooke the childe by the hand, and said
42 vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpre-
tation, Mayden, I say vnto thee, Arise. * And
straightway the mayden arose, and walked: for
43 she was of the age of twelue yeres, and they
were astonied out of measure. * And he cha-
ged them straightly that no man should know
of it, and commaunded to giue her meate,

CHAP. VI.

1 **A**ND he departed thence, and came into his
owne countrey, and his disciples followed
him. * And when the Sabbath was come, he
began to teach in the Synagogue, and many
that heard him, were astonied, and saide, From
whence hath this man these things! and what
wisdom is this that is giuen vnto him, that
euen such great workes are done by his handes!
2 * Is not this that carpenter, Maries sonne, the
brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda & Si-
mon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And
they were offended in him. * Then Iesus saide
3 vnto them, A Prophet is not without honour,
but in his owne countrey, and among his owne
kindred, and in his owne house. * And he could
4 there doe no great workes, save that hee laide
his handes vpon a few sicke folke, and healed
5 them. * And he marueiled at their vnbeliefe, &
went about by the townes on euery side, tea-
6 ching. * And hee called vnto him the twelue, &
7 began to send them forth two and two, and
8 gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits. * And

com

CHAP. VI.

commanded them, that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staffe onely: neither scrippe, neither bread, neither money in their girdles: * But that they should be shod with sandales, and that they should not put on two coates. * And he said vnto them, Where-soeuer ye shall enter into an house, there abide till ye depart thence. * And whosoever shall not receiue you, nor heare you, when ye depart thence, shake off the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnesse vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, it shalbe easier for Sodome or Gomorrah at the day of iudgement, then for that citie. * And they went out, and preached, that men should amend their liues. * And they cast out many deuils: and they annointed many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed *them*. * Then King Herod heard of *him*: (for his name was made manifest) and said, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great works are wrought by him. * Other said, It is Elias, & some saide, It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets. * So when Herod heard it, he saide, It is Iohn whome I beheaded: he is risen from the dead. * For Herod himselfe had sent forth, and had taken Iohn. and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philips wife, because he had married her. * For Iohn said vnto Herod, It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife. * Therefore Herodias laid wait against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not. * For Herod feared Iohn, know-

S. MARKE.

- knowing that he ~~was~~ a iust man and an holy, & reuerenced him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. * But the
- 21 time beeing conuenient, when Herod on his birth day made a banquet to his Princes and captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile: * And the
- 22 daughter of the same Herodias came in, & danced, and pleased Herod, & them that sate at table together, the King said vnto the mayd, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I will giue it thee.
- 23 * And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I will geue it thee, ~~even~~ vnto the halfe of my kingdome. * So she went forth,
- 24 and said to her mother, What shall I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head. * Then she came in straightway with hast vnto the king, & asked,
- 25 saying, I would that thou shouldest giue me ~~now~~ now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptift. * The
- 26 the King was very sorie: yet for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate at table with him,
- 27 he would not refuse her. * And immediately the King sent the hangman, & gaue charge that his head should be brought in. So he went and
- 28 beheaded him in the prison, * And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the maide, and
- 29 the maide gaue it to her mother. * And when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke up
- 30 his bodie, and put it in a tombe. * And the Apostles gathered themselues together to Iesus, and tolde him all things, both what they had
- 31 done, and what they had taught. * And he said vnto them, Come ye apart into the wilderness,

CHAP. VI.

And rest a while: for there were many commers
 and goers, that they had not leasure to eate.
 * So they went by ship out of the way into a 32
 desert place. * But the people saw^r them when 33
 they departed, and many knew him, and ranne
 asfoote thither out of all cities, and came thi-
 ther before them, & assembled vnto him. * Then 34
 Iesus went out, and saw a great multitude, and
 had compassiō on them, because they were like
 sheepe which had no shepheard: & he began to
 teach them many things. * And when the day 35
 was now farre spent, his disciples came vnto
 him, saying, This is a desert place, and now the
 day is farre passed. * Let them depart that they 36
 may goe into the countrey and townes about,
 and bye them bread: for they haue nothing to
 eate. * But he answered, and said vnto them, 37
 Giue yee them to eat. And they said vnto him,
 Shal we goe, and bye two hundreth peniworth
 of bread, and giue them to eate? * Then he said 38
 vnto them, How many loaves haue ye? goe and
 looke. And when they knew it, they said, Five,
 & two fishes. * So he commaunded them to 39
 make them all sit downe by companies vpon
 the greene grass. * Then they sate downe by 40
 rowes, by hundreds, and by fifties. * And hee 41
 tooke the five loaves, and the two fishes, and
 looked vp to heaven, and gaue thanks, & brake
 the loaves, and gaue them to his disciples to set
 before them, and the two fishes hee deuided a-
 mong them all. * So they did all eate, & were 42
 satished. * And they tooke vp twelue baskets 43
 full

S. M A R K E.

- 44 full of the fragments, and of the fishes. * And
 they that had eaten, were about five thousand
 45 men. * And straightway hee caused his disciples
 to goe into the shippe, and to goe before vnto
 the other side vnto Bethsaida, while he sent a-
 46 way the people. * Then as soone as he had sent
 the away, he departed into a mountain to pray.
 47 * And when euen was come, the ship was in
 the mids of the sea, and he alone on the lande.
 48 * And hee saw them troubled in rowing, (for
 the winde was contrarie vnto them) & about
 the fourth watch of the night, hee came vnto
 them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue
 49 passed by them. * And when they saw him wal-
 king vpon the sea, they supposed it had beene a
 50 spirit, and cried out. * For they all saw him, and
 were sore afraid: but anon he talked with them,
 and saide vnto them, Be ye of good comfort: it
 51 is I, be not afraide. * Then hee went vp vnto
 them into the ship, & the winde ceased, & they
 were much more amased in themselves, and
 52 marueiled. * For they had not considered the
 matter of the loaves, because their hearts were
 53 hardened. * And they came ouer, and went in-
 54 to the land of Gennesaret, and arrived. * So whe
 they were come out of the shippe, straightway
 55 they knew him, * And ranne about throughout
 all that region round about, and began to cary
 hither & thither in couches all that were sicke,
 56 where they heard that he was. * And whither-
 soeuer he entred into townes, or citics, or vil-
 lages, they laide their sicke in the streetes, and
 praised

CHAP. VII.

pealed him that they might touch at the least the edge of his garment. And as many as touched him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

Then gathered vnto him the Pharises, & certaine of the Scribes which came from Hierusalem. * And when they saw some of his disciples eate meate with common hands, (that is to say, vnwashed) they complained. * (For the Pharises, & all the Iewes, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the Elders. * And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not: and many other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obserue, as the walking of cups, and pottes, and of brasen vessels, & of beddes.) * Then asked him the Pharises and Scribes, Why walke not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eat meat with vnwashed hands? * Then he answered & said vnto the, Surely Esai hath prophecied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with lips, but their hart is far away from me. * But they worship mee in vaine, teaching for doctrines the commandements of men. * For ye lay the commandement of God apart, & obserue the tradition of men, as the washing of pottes and of cuppes, and many other such like things ye do. * And he said vnto them, Well, ye reiect the commaundement of God that ye may obserue your owne tradition. * For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: &,
Whose

S. MARK.

- Whosoever shall speak euill of father or mother
 11 let him die the death. * But ye say, If a man say of
 father or mother, Corban, *that is*, By the gift that
 is offered by me, thou maiest haue profit, *he shall*
 12 *be free.* * So ye suffer him no more to doe anie
 13 thing for his father, or his mother, * Making
 the worde of God of none authoritie, by your
 tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye doe
 14 many such like thinges. * Then he called the
 whole multitude vnto him, & said vnto them,
 15 Harken you all vnto me, & vnderstand. * There
 is nothing without a man, that can defile him,
 when it entreth into him: but the things which
 proceed out of him, are they which defile the
 16 man. * If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.
 17 * And when he came into an house, away from
 the people, his disciples asked him concern-
 18 ing the parable. * And hee saide vnto them,
 What? are ye without vnderstanding also? Do
 ye not know that whatsoeuer thing from with-
 out entreth into a man, can not defile him,
 19 * Because it entreth not into his heart, but into
 the belly, & goeth out into the draught which
 20 is the purging of all meates? * Then he saide,
 That which commeth out of man, that defileth
 21 man. * For from within, *euere* out of the heart
 of men, proceede euill thoughtes, adulteries, for-
 22 nications, murthers, * Theftes, couetousnesse,
 wickednesse, deceit, vnekeannesse, a wicked eye,
 23 backiting, pride, soolesnesse. * All these euill
 24 things come from within, & defile a man. * And
 from thence he arose, and went into the boat.

CHAP. VII.

of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an
 city, and would that no man should haue
 knowen: but he could not be hid. * For a cer- 25
 taine woman, whose litle daughter had an vn-
 cleane spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at
 his feete, * (And the woman was a Greeke, a 26
 Syrophenissian by nation) and shee besought
 him that he would cast out the deuill out of
 her daughter. * But Iesus saide vnto her, Let the 27
 children first be fed: for it is not good to take
 the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto whelps.
 * Then shee answered, & said vnto him, Truth, 28
 Lorde: yet in deepe the whelpes eate vnder the
 table of the childrens crummes. * Then he said 29
 vnto her, For this saying goe thy way: the deuill
 is gone out of thy daughter. * And when shee 30
 was come home to her house, she found the de-
 uill departed, and her daughter lying on the
 bed. * And he departed againe from the coastes 31
 of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of
 Galile, through the middes of the coastes of
 Decapolis. * And they brought vnto him one 32
 that was deafe, and stambred in his speech, &
 praied him to put his hand vpon him. * Then 33
 he tooke him aside from the multitude, and put
 his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and tou-
 ched his tongue. * And looking vp to heauen, 34
 he sighed, & said vnto him Ephphatha, that is,
 Be opened. * And straightway his eares were 35
 opened, and the string of his tongue was loo-
 sed, and he spake plaine. * And he commaunded 36
 them, that they should tell no man: but how
 much

S. MARKE.

37 much soeuer he forbade them, the more a-
deale they published it, * And were beyon
measure astonied, saying, He hath done al this
well: hee maketh both the deafe to heare, and
the dumme to speake.

C H A P. VIII.

2 **I**N those daies when there was a very great
multitude, and had nothing to eate, Iesus cal-
6 led his disciples to him and said vnto them, *
haue compassiō on the multitude, because they
haue now continued with mee three dayes and
haue nothing to eate. * And if I send them away
fasting to their owne houses, they would faint
by the way: for some of them came from far.
4 * Then his disciples answered him, Whence
can a man satisfie these with bread here in the
5 wilderness? * And he asked them, How many
6 loaves haue ye? And they said, Seuen. * Then he
commanded the multitude to sit downe on
the ground: and he tooke the seuen loaves, and
gaue thanks, brake *them*, and gaue to his dis-
ciples to set before *them*, and they did set *them*
7 be'ore the people. * They had also a few small
fishes: and when he had giuen thanks, he com-
8 manded them also to be set before *them*. *
they did eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke
vp of the broken meat that was left, seuen
9 kets full * (And they that had eaten, were about
10 foure thousand) so he sent them away. * And
11 anon he entred into a ship with his disciples,
and came into the partes of Dalmanutha. * And the
Pharises came forth, and began to dispute with

CHAP: VIII.

him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, and
tempting him. *Then he sighed deeply in his spirit, and said, Why doth this generation seeke
a signe? Verely I say vnto you, a signe shal not
be giuen vnto this generatiō. *So he left them,
and went into the ship againe, and departed to
the other side. *And they had forgotten to take
bread, neither had they in the ship with them,
but one loafe. * And he charged them, saying,
Take heed & beware of the leapen of the Pha-
rises, and of the leauen of Herod. * And they
reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is be-
cause we haue no bread.* *And whic Iesus knew
it, he said vnto them, Why reason ye *thus*, be-
cause ye haue no bread? perceiue ye not yet,
neither vnderstād? haue ye your hearts yet hard-
ned? *Haue ye eyes, & see not? & haue ye eares,
& heare not? & do ye not remember? *When
I brake the fīue loaves among fīue thousand,
how many baskets full of broken meate tooke
ye vp? They said vnto him, Twelue. *And when
I brake seuen among foure thousand, how ma-
ny baskets of the leauings of broken meate
tooke ye vp? And they saide, Seven. * Then he
said vnto them, How *is it* that yee vnderstand
not? * And hee came to Bethsaida, and they
brought a blinde man vnto him, and desired
him to touch him. * Then he tooke the blinde
man by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and
put in his eyes, and put his handes vpon him,
and asked him, if he saw ought. *And he loo-
ked vp, and said, I see men: for I see them wal-

H. i.

king

21 MARK 8

- 25 king like trees. *After that, he put his hands
again vpon his eyes, and made him looke
again. And he was restored to his sight, and saw
- 26 euery man a farre off clearely. *And he sent him
home to his house, saying, Neither go into the
- 27 towne, nor tell it to any in the towne. *And Je-
sus went out, and his disciples into the townes
of Cesarea Philippi. And by the way he asked
his disciples, saying vnto them, Whome doe
- 28 men say that I am? *And they answered, Some
say, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and some,
- 29 One of the Prophets. *And he said vnto them,
But whome say yee that I am? Then Peter an-
swered, and saide vnto him, Thou art the
- 30 Christ. * And he sharply charged them, that
concerning him they should tel no man. * Then
- 31 he began to teach them, that the Sonne of man
must suffer many things, and should be repre-
hended of the Elders, and of the hie Priests, and of
the Scribes, and be slaine, & within three daies
- 32 rise againe. *And hee spake that thing boldly.
Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to re-
buke him. * Then he turned backe, and looked
- 33 on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get
thee behind me, Satan: for thou vnderstandest
not the things that are of God, but the things
- 34 that are of men. * And he called the people
to him with his disciples, & saide vnto them,
Whosoever will followe me, let him forsake
himselfe, and take vp his crosse and follow me.
- 35 *For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it:
but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake,

C H A P. IX.

the Gospels, he shall save it. * For what shall it
 profite a man, though he should win the whole
 world, if he lose his soule? * Or what exchange
 shall a man give for his soule? * For whosoever
 shall be ashamed of me, and of my wordes a-
 mong this adulterous and sinneful generation,
 of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed al-
 so, when he cometh in the glorie of his Fa-
 ther with the holy Angels.

C H A P. IX.

ANd he saide vnto them, Verely I say vnto
 you, that there be some of them that stand
 here, which shall not taste of death, till they
 haue seene the kingdome of God come with
 power. * And sixe daies after, Iesus taketh vnto
 him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and carieth
 them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way
 alone, and his shape was changed before them.
 * And his raiment did shine, & was very white,
 as snowe, so white as no fuller can make vpon
 the earth. * And there appeared vnto them E-
 lias with Moses, and they were talking with Ie-
 sus. * Then Peter answered & said to Iesus, Ma-
 ster, it is good for vs to be here: let vs make
 also three tabernacles, one for thee, & one for
 Moses, and one for Elias. * Yet he knewe not
 what he saide: for they were afraide. * And there
 was a cloud that shadowed them, and a voice
 came out of the cloud, saying, This is my belo-
 ued Sonne: heare him. * And suddenly they
 looked round about, and saw no more any ma-
 ne Iesus onely with them. * And as they came

H.2.

downe

S. M A R K E.

- downe from the mountaine, hee charged them that they should tell no man what they had seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen from the dead againe. * So they kept that matter to them selues, and demaunded one of another, what the rising from the dead againe should meane. * Also they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes, that Elias must first come? * And he answered, and said vnto them, Elias verely shall first come, and restore all things: and as it is written of the Sonne of man, he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. * But I say vnto you, that Elias is come (and they haue done vnto him whatsoever they would) as it is written of him. * And when he came to *his* disciples, he sawe a great multitude about them, and the Scribes disputing with them. * And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were amased, and ranne to him, and saluted him. * Then he asked the Scribes, What disonte you among your selues? * And one of the companie answered, and said, Master, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which hath a dumme spirit: * And whetsoener he taketh him, he teareth him, and hee someth, and gnasheth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out, and they could not. * Then he answered him, and said, O faithlesse generation, howe long now shall I be with you! how long now shall I suffer you! Bring him vnto me. * So they brought him vnto him: and

CHAP. IX.

Soone as the spirite sawe him, he tare him, and
 he fell downe on the grounde, wallowing and
 foming. * Then he asked his father, How long 21
 time is it, since he hath bene thus? And he said,
 Of a childe. * And oft times he casteth him in- 22
 to the fire, and into the water to destroy him:
 but if thou canst doe any thing, helpe vs, and
 haue compalsion vpon vs. * And Iesus said vn- 23
 to him, If thou canst belecue it, all thinges are
 possible to him that beleeueth. * And straight- 24
 way the father of the childe, crying with teares,
 saide, Lorde, I beleue: helpe mine vnbeliefe.
 * When Iesus sawe that the people came run- 25
 ning together, he rebuked the vncleane spirite,
 saying vnto him, Thou dumme and deafe spirit,
 I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no
 more into him. * Then *the spirit* cryed, and rent 26
 him sore, and came out, & he was as one dead,
 in so much that many saide, He is dead. * But 27
 Iesus tooke his hand and list him vp, and he a-
 rose. * And when he was come into the house, 28
 his disciples asked him secretly, Why coulde
 not we cast him out? * And he said vnto them, 29
 This kinde can by no other means come forth,
 but by prayer, and fasting. * And they depar- 30
 ted thence, & went together through Galile, &
 he would not that any should haue knowen it.
 * For he taught his disciples, & said vnto them, 31
 The Sonne of man shall be deliuered into the
 handes of men, and they shall kill him, but after
 that he is killed, he shall rise againe the thirde
 day. * But they vnderstood not that saying, and 32

S. MARK.

- 33 were afraide to aske him. * After, he came to
Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he
34 asked them, What was it that ye disputed a-
mong you by the way? * And they held their
35 peace: for by the way they reasoned among
them selues, who *should be* the chiefest. * And
he fate downe, and called the twelue, and saide
to them, If any man desire to be first, the same
36 shalbe last of all, and seruant vnto all. * And he
tooke a little child, and set him in the midder
of them; and tooke him in his armes, and saide
37 vnto them, * Whosoever shall receiue one of
such litle children in my Name, receiueth me:
and whosoever receiueth me, receiueth not me,
38 but him that sent me. * Then Iohn answered
him, saying, Master, we sawe one casting out de-
mons by thy Name, which followeth not vs, and
we forbaide him, because he followeth vs not.
39 * But Iesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no
man that can doe a miracle by my Name, that
40 can lightly speake euill of me. * For whoso-
41 uer is not against vs, is on our part. * And who-
soever shall giue you a cuppe of water to
drinke for my Names sake, because ye belong
to Christ, verely I say vnto you, he shall not
42 lose his rewarde. * And whosoever shall of-
fend one of these litle ones, that beleeue in me;
it were better for him rather, that a millstone
were hanged about his necke, and that he were
43 cast into the sea. * Wherefore if thine hande
cause thee to offende, cut it off: it is better for
thee to enter into life, maimed, then hauing two

hande
shall
not, a
thy f
better
two
new
dyet
if thi
it is
of G
beca
eth n
tery
facci
but
be k
peac

A
and
he v
Pha
a m
* A
did
ses
put
to
thi

C H A P. X.

handes to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer
 shall be quenched, * Where their worme dieth
 not, and the fire neuer goeth out. * Likewise, if
 thy foote cause thee to offende, cut it off: it is
 better for thee to go halfe into life, then hauing
 two feete to be cast into hell, into the fire that
 neuer shall be quenched, * Where their worme
 dyeth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. * And
 if thine eye cause thee to offende, plucke it out:
 it is better for thee to goe into the kingdome
 of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to
 be cast into hell fire, * Where their worme dy-
 eth not, and the fire neuer goeth out. * For e-
 uery man shall be salted with fire: and euery
 sacrifice shall be salted with salt. * Salt is good:
 but if the salt be vnfaulcie, wherewith shall it
 be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and haue
 peace one with another.

C H A P. X.

AND he arose from thence, and went into the
 coastes of Iudea by the farre side of Iordan,
 and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as
 he was wont, he taught them againe. * Then the
 Pharises came & asked him, if it were lawfull for
 a man to put away *his* wife, and tempted him.
 * And he answered, and said vnto them, What
 did Moses command you? * And they said, Mo-
 ses suffered to write a bill of diuorcement, & to
 put her away. * Then Iesus answered, & said vn-
 to the, For the hardnes of your heart he wrote
 this precept vnto you. * But at the beginning of

S. MARKE.

the creation God made them male and female.
7 * For this cause shall man leaue his father and
8 mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, * And they
9 twaine shall be one flesh: so that they are no
10 more twaine, but one flesh. * Therefore, what
11 God hath coupled together, let not man sepa-
12 rate. * And in the house his disciples asked him
13 againe of that matter. * And he said vnto them,
14 Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marrie
15 another, committeth adulterie against her, * And
16 if a woman put away her husband, & be married
17 to another, she committeth adulterie. * Then
18 they brought little children to him, that he
19 should touch them, and his disciples rebuked
20 those that brought them. * But when Iesus saw
21 it, he was displeased, and said to them, Suffer the
22 little children to come vnto me, and forbid
23 them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.
24 * Verely I say vnto you, Whosoever shall not
25 receiue the kingdome of God as a little child,
26 he shall not enter therein. * And he took
27 them vp in his armes, and put his handes vpon
28 them, & blessed them. * And when he was gone
29 out on the waye, there came one running, and
30 kneeled to him, & asked him, Good master, what
31 shall I do, that I may possesse eternall life? * Ie-
32 sus saide to him, Why callest thou me good?
33 there is none good but one, euen God. * Thou
34 knowest the commandements, Thou shalt not
35 comit adulterie. Thou shalt not kil. Thou shalt
36 not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witness.
37 Thou shalt haue no man. Honour thy father and
38 mother.

CHAP. X.

mother. * Then he answered, & saide to him, 20
 Master, all these things I haue obserued frō my
 youth. * And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued 21
 him, & said vnto him, One thing is lacking vn-
 to thee, Goe, and sell all that thou hast, & giue
 it to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in
 heauen, and come, follow me, and take vp the
 crosse. * But he was sad at that saying, & wēt a- 22
 way sorrowful: for he had great possessiōs. * And 23
 Iesus looked round about, and said vnto his dis-
 ciples, How hardly doe they that haue riches,
 enter into the kingdome of God! * And his 24
 disciples were afraid at his words. But Iesus an-
 swered againe, & said vnto them, Children, how
 hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter
 into the kingdome of God! * It is easier for a 25
 camel to goe through the eye of a needle, then
 for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of
 God. * And they were much more astonied, 26
 saying with themselves, Who then can be sa-
 ued? * But Iesus looked vpon them, and saide, 27
 With men *it is* impossible, but not with God:
 for with God all things are possible. * Then 28
 Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue for-
 saken al, & haue folowed thee. * Iesus answered, 29
 and said, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man
 that hath forsaken house, or brethren, or sisters,
 or father, or mother, or wife or children, or lāds
 for my sake & the Gospels, * But he shal receiue 30
 an hundredfold, now at this present, houses,
 and brethren, & sisters, & mothers, & children,
 & lands with persecutions, & in the worlde to
 come,

9. M A R K E.

- 31 come, eternall life. * But many *that are first*
 32 *shalbe last, & the last, first.* * And they were in
 the way going vp to Hierusalem, & Iesus went
 before them, & they were troubled, & as they
 folowed, they were afraide, and Iesus tooke the
 33 twelue againe, & began to tell the what things
 should come vnto him, * *Saying,* Behold, we go
 vp to Hierusalem, & the Sonne of man shalbe
 deliuered vnto the hie Priests, & to the Scribes,
 & they shall condemne him to death, & shall
 34 deliuer him to the Gentiles. * And they shall
 mocke him, & scourge him, & spit vpon him, &
 kill him: but the third day he shall rise againe.
 35 * Then Iames & Iohn the sonnes of Zebedee
 came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that
 thou shouldest doe for vs that that we desire.
 36 * And he saide vnto them, What would ye
 37 should doe for you? * And they saide to him,
 Graunt vnto vs, that we may sit, one at thy
 right hande, and another at thy left hande
 38 in thy glorie. * But I E S V S saide vnto
 them, Ye knowe not what ye aske: Can
 ye drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of,
 & be baptized with the baptisme that I shalbe
 39 baptized with? * And they said vnto him, We
 can. But Iesus said vnto them, Ye shall drinke
 in deede of the cup that I shall drinke of, & be
 baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shall
 40 be baptized: * But to sit at my right hand, and
 at my left, is not mine to giue, but *it shalbe giue*
 41 *men to them, for whome it is prepared.* * And
 when the tenne heard that, they began to dis-

daine

C H A P. X.

daine at Iames & Iohn. * But Iesus called them 42
 vnto him, and said to them, Ye know that they
 which are princes among the Gentiles, haue
 domination ouer them, and they that be great
 among them, exercise authoritie ouer them.
 * But it shall not be so among you: but who- 43
 soeuer will be great among you, shalbe your
 seruant. * And whosoever wil be chiefe of you, 44
 shalbe the seruant of all. * For euen the Sonne 45
 of man came not to be serued, but to serue, and
 to gine his life for the ransome of many. * The 46
 they came to Iericho: and as he went out of
 Iericho with his disciples, & a great multitude,
 Bartimeus the sonne of Timeus, a blinde man,
 sat by the waies side, begging. * And when he 47
 heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began
 to crie, and to say, Iesus the Sonne of David,
 haue mercie on me. * And many rebuked him, 48
 because he should hold his peace: but he cryed
 much more, O Sonne of David, haue mercy on
 me. * Then Iesus stood still, and commaunded 49
 him to be called: and they called the blinde,
 saying vnto him, Be of good comfort, arise, he
 calleth thee. * So he threw away his cloke, & 50
 rose, and came to Iesus. * And Iesus answered, 51
 and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe
 vnto thee? And the blind saide vnto him, Lord,
 that I may receiue sight. * Then Iesus saide vnto 52
 him, Goe thy way: thy faith hath saued thee.
 And by and by he receiued his sight, & follow-
 ed Iesus in the way.

C H A P.

S. MARKE.
CHAP. XI.

- 1** **A**Nd when they came neere to Hierusalem,
to Bethphage & Bethania vnto the mount
of Olines. he sent forth two of his disciples,
2 * And saide vnto them, Goe your wayes into
that towne that is ouer against you, & as soone
as ye shall enter into it, ye shall finde a colt ty-
ed, whereon neuer man sate: loose him, & bring
3 him. * And if any man say vnto you, Why do
ye this? Say that the Lord hath neede of him,
4 and straightway he will send him hither. * And
they went their way, and found a colt tyed by
the doore without, in a place where two wayes
5 met, and they loosed him. * Then certaine of
them that stood there, said vnto them, What do
6 ye loosing the colt? * And they said vnto them,
as Iesus had commaunded them: So they let
7 them goe. * And they brought the colt to Ie-
sus, and cast their garments on him, and he sat
8 vpon him. * And many spred their garments
in the way: others cut downe branches of the
9 trees, and strawed them in the way. * And they
that went before, and they that followed, cry-
ed, saying, Hosanna: blessed be he that cometh
10 in the Name of the Lord. * Blessed be the king-
dome that cometh in the Name of the Lord
of our father Dauid: Hosanna, *O thou which art*
11 *in the highest heauens.* * So Iesus entred into
Hierusalem, & into the Temple: & when he had
looked about on all things, & now it was eue-
ning, he went forth into Bethania with the
12 twelue. * And on the morow when they were

come

CHAP. XL.

come out from Bethania, he was hungrie. * And
 seeing a figge tree a far off, that had leaues, hee
 went to see if he might finde any thing thereon:
 but when he came vnto it, he found nothing
 but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet.
 * Then Iesus answered, and saide to it, Ne-
 uer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while
 the worlde standeth: and his disciples heard it.
 * And they came to Hierusalem, & Iesus went
 into the temple, & began to cast out them that
 sold and bought in the Temple, & ouerthrew
 the tables of the money changers, & the seates
 of them that sold doves. * Neither woulde he
 suffer that any man should cary a vessel through
 the Temple. * And he taught, saying vnto them,
 Is it not written, Mine house shalbe called the
 house of prayer vnto all nations? but you haue
 made it a denne of theeues. * And the Scribes
 and hie Priests heard it, and sought how to de-
 stroy him: for they feared him, because the whole
 multitude was astonied at his doctrine. * But
 when euen was come, Iesus went out of the
 cite. * And in the morning as they iourneyed
 together, they saw the figge tree dried vp from
 the rootes. * Then Peter remembred, and saide
 vnto him, Master, behold, the figge tree which
 thou cursedst, is withered. * And Iesus answered,
 & said vnto them, Haue the faith of God. * For
 verely I say vnto you, that whosoener shall say
 vnto this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and
 cast into the sea, & shal not wauer in his heart,
 but shall belceue that those thinges which hee
 saith,

S. M A R K E.

- 24 **W**hich, shall come to passe, whatsoeuer he saith
shall be *done* to him. * Therefore I say vnto you,
whatsoeuer ye desire when ye pray, beleeue that
ye shall haue it, and it shall be *done* vnto you.
- 25 * But when ye shall stand, and pray, forgive, if
ye haue any thing against any man, that your
Father also which is in heauen may forgive you
- 26 your trespasses. * For if you will not forgive,
your Father which is in heauen, will not par-
don you your trespasses. * Then they came
- 27 gaine to Hierusalem: and as he walked in the
Temple, there came to him the hie Priests and
the Scribes, & the Elders, * And said vnto him,
- 28 By what authoritie doest thou these things? &
who gaue thee this authoritie, that thou shouldest
doe these things? * Then Iesus answered, &
saide vnto them, I will also aske of you a cer-
taine thing, and answere yee me, and I will tell
- 29 you by what authoritie I do these things. * The
Baptisme of Iohn was it from heauen, or of men?
- 30 I aske you. * And they thought with them-
selves, saying, If we shal say from heauen, he will
say, Why then did ye not beleeue him? * But if
- 31 we say of men, we feare the people: for all men
counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede.
- 32 * Then they answered, and said vnto Iesus, We
can not tell. And Iesus answered, & saide vnto
them, Neither will I tell you by what authori-
tie I doe these things.

C H A P. XII.

- A**ND he began to speake vnto them in parables, A certaine man planted a vineyard, &

com

compassed it with an hedge, and digged a pie
 for the winepresse, and built a towre in it, and
 let it out to husbandmen, and went into a
 strange countrey. *And at the time, he sent to 3
 the husbandmen a seruant, that hee might re-
 ceine of the husbandmen of the fruite of the
 vineyard. *But they tooke him, and beat him, 3
 and sent him away empty. *And againe he sent 4
 vnto them another seruant, and at him they
 cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him a-
 way shamefully handled. *And againe he sent 5
 another, and him they slewe, and many other,
 beating some, & killing some. *Yet had he one 6
 sonne, his deare beloued: him also he sent the
 last vnto them, saying, They will reuerence my
 sonne. *But the husbandmen said among them- 7
 selues, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him,
 & the inheritance shalbe ours. *So they tooke 8
 him, and killed him, and cast him out of the
 vineyarde. *What shall then the Lord of the 9
 vineyard doe? He will come and destroy these
 husbandmen, and giue the vineyarde to others.
 *Haue ye not read so much as this Scripture? 10
 The stone which the builders did refuse, is made
 the head of the corner. *This was done of the 11
 Lord, and it is maruicilous in our eyes. *Then 12
 they went about to take him, but they feared
 the people: for they perceived that hee spake
 that parable against them: therefore they left
 him, and went their way. *And they sent vnto 13
 him certaine of the Pharises, and of the Hero-
 dians that they might take him in his talk. *And 14
 when

S. MARKE.

when they came, they said vnto him, Master, we
 know that thou art true and carest for no man:
 for thou considerest not the person of men, but
 teachest the way of God trulie. Is it lawfull to
 15 giue tribute to Cesar, or not? * Should we giue
 it, or should we not giue it? But he knew their
 hypocrisie, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye
 16 me? Bring me a peny. that I may see it. * So they
 brought it, and he saide vnto them, Whose is
 this image and superscription? and they said
 17 vnto him, Cesars. * Then Iesus answered, & said
 vnto them, Giue to Cesar the things that are
 Cesars, and to God, those that are Gods: & they
 18 marueiled at him. * Then came the Saddu-
 ces vnto him, (which say there is no resurrec-
 19 tion) and they asked him, saying. * Master, Moses
 wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die, & leaue
 his wife, and leaue no children, that his brother
 should take his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his
 20 brother. * There were seuen brethren, and the
 first tooke a wife, & when he died, left no issue.
 21 * Then the second tooke her, & he died, neither
 22 did he yet leaue issue, & the third likewise: * So
 those seuen had her, and left no issue: last of all
 23 the wife died also. * In the resurrexiō then, what
 shall they be? for seuen had her to wife. * Then Iesus
 24 answered, and said vnto them, Are ye not there-
 fore deceiued, because ye know not the Scrip-
 25 tures, neither the power of God? * For when
 they shall arise againe from the dead, neither
 men marrie, nor wīues are married, but are

CHAP. XII.

the Angels which are in heauen. * And as touching the dead, that they shall rise againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moses, how in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, & the God of Isaac, & the God of Jacob? * God is not the god of the dead, but the God of the liuing, Ye are therefore greatly deceived. * Then came one of the Scribes that had heard the disputing together, & perceiuing that he had answered them wel, he asked him which is the first commaundement of all? * Iesus answered him, The first of all the commaundements is, Heare, Israel, the Lord our God is the onely Lord. * Thou shalt therefore loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, & with al thy soule, & with all thy minde & with all thy strength: this is the first commaundement. * And the second is like, that is, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. There is none other commaundement greater then these. * Then the Scribe said vnto him, Wel Master, thou hast said the trueth, that there is one God. & that there is none but he. * And to loue him with all the heart & with all the vnderstanding, & with all the soule, & with all the strength, & to loue his neighbour as him selfe, is more then al the whol burnt offerings & sacrifices. * The whē Iesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any questiō. * And Iesus answered & said teaching in the temple, How say the Scribes, that Christ is the Sonne of Dauid?

S. M A R K E.

- 36** * For Dauid himselfe said by the holy Ghost,
 The Lord said to my lord, Sit at my right hand,
 till I make thine enemies thy footestool.
37 * Then Dauid himselfe calleth him Lord: by
 what meanes is he then his sonne? And much
38 people heard him gladly. * Moreover he sayde
 vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes
 which loue to goe in long robes, and loue sala-
39 tations in the markets, * And the chiefe seates
 in the Synagogues, & the first rourmes at feasts.
40 * Which deuoure widowes houses, euen vnder
 a colour of long prayers. These shall receiue the
41 greater damnation. * And as Iesus sate ouer a-
 gainst the treasure, he beheld how the people
 cast money into the treasure, and many rich
42 men cast in much. * And there came a certaine
 poore widowe, and shee threwe in two mites,
43 which make a quadrin. * Then hee called vnto
 him his disciples, and said vnto them, Verely
 I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast
 more in, then all they which haue cast into the
44 treasure. * For they al did cast in of their super-
 fluitie: but shee of her pouerty did cast in al that
 shee had, *euen* all her liuing.

C H A P. XIII.

- 1** **A**Nd as he went out of the Temple, one of
 his disciples said vnto him, Master, see what
 maner stones, & what maner building are here.
2 * Then Iesus answered, & saide vnto him, Seest
 thou these great buildings? there shall not be
 left one stone vpon a stone, that shall not be
3 throwen downe. * And as he sate on the mount

CHAP. XIII.

of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, and
 James, & Iohn, & Andrew asked him secretlie,
 * Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what
 shalbe the signe when al these things shalbe ful-
 filled? * And Iesus answered them & began to
 say, Take heed least any man deceiue you. * For
 many shal come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*,
 & shall deceiue many. * Furthermore when ye
 shall heare of wars, & rumors of wars, be ye not
 troubled: for *such things* must needs be: but the
 end shall not be yet. * For nation shall rife a-
 gainst nation, & kingdome against kingdome,
 & there shalbe earthquakes in diuers quarters,
 & there shalbe famine & troubles: these *are* the
 beginnings of sorowes. * But take ye heede to
 your selues: for they shall deliuer you vp to the
 councils, & to the Synagogues: ye shalbe beatē,
 & brought before rulers & Kings for my sake,
 for a testimoniall vnto them. * And the Gospel
 must first be published among all nations. * But
 when they lead you, & deliuer you vp, be not
 carefull beforehand, neither studie what ye shal
 say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that
 speake: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy
 Ghost. * Yea, & the brother shal deliuer the bro-
 ther to death, & the father the sonne, & the chil-
 dren shal rise against their parents, & shal cause
 them to die. * And ye shalbe hated of all men
 for my Names sake, but whosoever shal endure
 vnto the end, he shalbe saved. * Moreouer, when
 ye shall see the abomination of detolation (spo-
 ke of by Daniel the prophet) set where it ought

S. MARKE.

- not, (let him that readeth consider it) then let them *that be* in Iudea, flee into the mountaines;
- 15 *And let him that is vpon the house, not come downe into the house, neither enter therein, to
- 16 fetch any thing out of his house. *And let him that is in the field, not turne back again to take
- 17 his garmēt. * Then wo *shalbe* to them that are with child, & to them that giue sucke in those
- 18 daies. * Pray therfore that your flight be not in the winter. * For in those daies shalbe such tribu-
- 19 lation, as was not frō the beginning of the creatiō which God created vnto this time, neither
- 20 shalbe. * And except the Lord had shortened those daies, no flesh should be sauēd: but for the elects sake, which he hath chosen, he hath shortened those daies. * Then if any man say to you,
- 21 Loe, here is Christ, or, Loe, *he is* there, belecue it not. * For false Christs shal rise, & false prophets,
- 22 & shall shew signes & wonders, to deceiue if it were possible the very elect. * But take ye heed:
- 23 behold, I haue shewed you all things before.
- 24 * Moreouer in those daies, after that tribulatiō, the sunne shal wax dark, & the moone shal not
- 25 giue her light, * And the stars of heauen shal fall & the powers which are in heauen, shall shake.
- 26 * And then shal they see the Sonne of man cōming in the cloudes, with great power & glory.
- 27 * And he shall then send his Angels, & shall gather together his elect from the foure winds, or frō the vtmost part of the earth, to the vtmost
- 28 part of heauen. * Now learn a parable of the fig tree. When her bough is yet tender, & it bringeth

CHAP. XIII.

geth forth leaues, ye know that summer is nere.
 * So in like manner, when ye see these things 29
 come to passe, know that *the kingdom of God is*
nere, euen at the dores. * Verely I say vnto you, 30
 that this generation shall not passe, till all these
 things be done. * Heauen & earth shall passe a- 31
 way, but my words shall not passe away. * But 32
 of that day & houre knoweth no man, no, not
 the Angels which are in heauē, neither the Sōne
 himselfe, but the Father. * Take heede, watch, & 33
 pray: for ye know not when the time is. * For 34
the Sonne of man is as a man going into a strange
 countrey, & leaueth his house, & giueth authority
 to his seruants, & to euery man his worke, & cō-
 mādeth the porter to watch. * Watch ye ther- 35
 fore, (for ye know not when the master of the
 house will come, at euen, or at midnight, at the
 cocke crowing, or in the dawning,) * Lest if he 36
 come suddēly, he shuld find you sleeping. * And
 those things that I say vnto you, I say vnto all 37
 mē, Watch. CHAP. XIII.

And two daies after followed *the feast of the* 1
Passouer, & of vnleauened bread: & the hie
 Priests, & Scribes sought how they might take
 him by craft, and put him to death. * But they 2
 said, Not in the feast day, least there be any tu-
 mult among the people. * And when he was in 3
 Bethania in the house of Simon the leper, as he
 sate at table, there came a woman hauing a box
 of oyntment of spikenard, very costly, and shee
 brake the box, & powred it on his head. * Ther- 4
 fore some disdained among themselues, & said,

S. M A R K E.

- 5 To what end is this waite of oyntment. *For
might haue bene sold for more then three hun
dred pence, & beene giuen to the poore. And
- 6 they murmured against her. *But Iesus said, Let
her alone why trouble ye her: she hath wrought
- 7 a good worke on me. * For ye haue the poore
with you alwaies, & when ye wil ye may do the
- 8 good, but me ye shall not haue alwaies. * She
hath done that she could: shee came aforehand
- 9 to anoint my body to the burying. * Verely I say
vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gospel shalbe prea
ched throughout the whol world, this also that
- 10 she hath done, shalbe spoken of in remembrance
of her. * Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelve,
- 11 went away vnto the hie Priests, to betray him
vnto them. * And when they heard it, they were
glad, & promised that they wold giue him mo
ney: therefore he sought how he might conue
niently betray him. * Now the first day of un
leavened bread, when they sacrificed the Pasche
uer, his disciples saide vnto him, Where wilt
thou that we goe & prepare, that thou mayest
- 13 eat the Pascheuer? * Then he sent forth two of
his disciples, & said vnto them, Goe ye into the
citie, & there shal a man meet you bearing a pi
cher of water: follow him. * And whithersoever
- 14 he goeth in, say ye to the good man of the
house, The Master sayeth, Where is the lodging
where I shall eat the Pascheuer with my disci
ples? * And he wil shew you an vpper chamber
- 15 which is large, & rimmed & prepared: there make
it ready for vs. * So his disciples went forth, and

CHAP. IIII.

came to the citie, & found as he had said vnto
 them,& made ready the Passecouer.* And at euē 17
 he came with the twelue. *And as they sate at 18
 table & did eat, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you,
 that one of you shall betray mee, which eateth 19
 with me. * Then they began to be sorowfull &
 to say to him one by one, Is it I? And another, 20
 Is it I? * And he answered, & said vnto them, *It*
is one of the twelue that dippeth with me in 21
 the platter. * Truly the Sonne of man goeth his
 way, as it is written of him: but woe *be* to that 22
 man, by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it
 had bene good for that man, if he had neuer
 bene borne. * And as they did eat, Iesus tooke 23
 the bread, & when he had giuen thāks, he brake
 it, & gaue it to them., & said, Take eat, this is my
 body. * Also he tooke the cup, & when he had 24
 giuen thanks, gaue it to them: & they all dranke
 of it. * And he said vnto them, This is my blood 25
 of the new Testament, which is shed for many.
 * Verely I say vnto you, I will drinke no more 26
 of the fruite of the vine vntill that day. that I
 drinke it new in the kingdome of God. * And 27
 when they had sung a Psalme, they went out to
 the mount of Oliues. * Then Iesus saide vnto 28
 them, All ye shalbe offended by me this night:
 for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and 29
 the sheep shalbe scattered. * But after that I am
 risen, I wil go into Galile before you. * And Pe- 30
 ter said vnto him, Although all men should be
 offended at thee, yet would not I. * Then Iesus
 said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, this day,

S. MARKE.

- 31 ~~men~~ in this night, before the cocke crow twice,
 thou shalt deny me thrise. * But he saide more
 earnestly, If I should dye with thee, I will not
 32 denie thee: likewise also saide they all. * After
 they came into a place named Gethsemane: the
 he saide to his disciples. Sit ye here, till I haue
 33 praied. * And he took with him Peter, & Iames,
 & Iohn, & he began to be troubled, & in great
 34 heauines, * And saide vnto them, My soule is ve-
 ry heauy, ~~even~~ vnto the death: tary here & watch.
 35 * So he went forward a little, & fell downe on
 the ground, & praied, that if it were possible,
 36 that houre might passe from him. * And he saide,
 Abba, Father, all things are possible vnto thee:
 take away this cup from me: neuerthelesse not
 37 that I will, but that thou wilt, *be done*. * Then he
 came, & found them sleeping, & saide to Peter,
 Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch
 38 one houre? * Watch ye, & pray, that ye enter not
 into tentation: the spirit in deede is ready, but
 39 the flesh is weake. * And againe hee went away,
 40 & praied, & spake the same words. * And he re-
 turned, & found the a sleep again: for their eyes
 were heauy: neither knew they what they shold
 41 answer him. * And hee came the third time, and
 saide vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, & take your
 rest: it is ynough: the houre is come: behold, the
 Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of sin-
 42 ners. * Rise vp let vs goe: loe, he that betrayeth
 43 me, is at hand. * And immediately while he yet
 spake, came Iudas that was one of the twelve, &
 with him a great multitude with swordes and

CHAP. XIII.

stanes from the hie Priests, & Scribes, & Elders.
 * And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a
 token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall kisse, he it is:
 take him & lead him away safely. * And assoone
 as he was come, he went straightway to him,
 & said, Haile Master, & kissed him. * Then they
 laid their hands on him, & tooke him. * And one
 of them that stood by, drew out a sword, and
 smote a seruant of the hie Priest, & cut off his
 eare. * And Iesus answered & saide vnto them,
 Ye be come out as against a thiefe with swords
 & stanes, to take me. * I was daily with you
 teaching in the Temple, & ye took me not: but
this is done that the Scriptures should be fulfil-
 led. * Then they al forsooke him and fled. * And
 there followed him a certaine young man, clo-
 thed in linnen vpon his bare *body*, & the young
 men caught him. * But he left his linnen cloth,
 & fled from them naked. * So they led Iesus a-
 way to the hie Priest, & to him came together
 all the hie Priests, & the Elders, & the Scribes.
 * And Peter followed him a farre off, euen into
 the hall of the hie Priest, & sate with the ser-
 uants, & warmed *him selfe* at the fire. * And the
 hie Priests, & all the Council sought for witnes
 against Iesus, to put him to death, but founde
 none. * For many bare false witnessse against
 him, but their witnessse agreed not together.
 * Then there arose certaine, & bare false witnessse
 against him, saying, * We heard him say, I will
 destroy this temple made with hands, & with-
 in three dayes I will build another made with-

S. M A R K E.

59 out hands. * But their witnesse yet agreed not
 60 together. * Then the hie Priest stood vp amongst
 them, & asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou no-
 61 thing? what is the matter that these beare wit-
 nes against thee? * But he held his peace, & an-
 swered nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked
 62 him, & saide vnto him, Art thou that Christ the
 Sonne, of the blessed? * And Iesus said, I am he, &
 ye shal see the Sōne of man sit at the right hād
 of the power of God. & come in the cloudes of
 63 heauen. * Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, &
 said, What haue we any more neede of witnes-
 64 ses? * Ye haue heard the blasphemie what think
 ye? And they all condemned him to be worthy
 65 of death. * And some began to spit at him, & to
 couer his face, & to beat him with fillis, & to say
 vnto him. Prophecie. And the sergeants smott
 66 him with *their* rods. * And as Peter was beneath
 in the hal, there came one of the maydes of the
 67 hie Priest, * And when she saw Peter warning
himselfe, she looked on him, & said, Thou wast
 68 also with Iesus of Nazareth. * But he denied it,
 saying, I know him not, neither wot I what
 thou saiest. Then he went out into the porch, &
 69 the cocke crew. * Then a maid saw him again, &
 began to say to them that stood by, This is one
 70 of them. * But he denied it againe: & anon after
 they that stood by, said againe to Peter, Surely
 thou art one of them: for thou art of Galilee, and
 71 thy speach is like. * And he began to curse, and
 swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye
 72 speak. * Then the second time the cock crew, &
 Peter

CHAP. XV.

Peter remembred the word that Iesus said vnto him, Before the cock crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise, and weying that with himselfe, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

And anon in the dawning, the hie Priests held a Council with the Elders, and the Scribes, & the whole Council, & bound Iesus, & led him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

* Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Iewes? And he answered, & said vnto him,

Thou saiest it.* And the hie Priests, accused him of many things. * Wherefore Pilate asked him

again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? Behold how many thinges they witnesse against thee.

* But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marvelled.* Now at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whomsoever they

would desire. * Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bound with his fellowes,

that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murther. * And the people

cryed aloud, & began to desire ~~that he would~~ doe as he had euer done vnto the. * Then Pilate

answered them, & said, Will ye that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes? * For he knew

that the hie Priests had deliuered him of enuy. * But the hie Priests had moued the people to

desire that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto the. * And Pilate answered, & said again vnto

the, What wil ye then that I do ~~with him~~ who ye call the King of the Iewes? * And they cryed

again, Crucifie him. * Then Pilate said vnto the,

But

S. M A R K E.

But what euil hath he done? And they cryed the
 25 more feruently, Crucifie him. * So Pilate willing
 to cōtent the people, loosed them Barabbas, &
 26 deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that
 he might be crucified. * Then the souldiers led
 27 him away into the hal which is the cōmon hal
 & called together the whole band, * And clad
 28 him with purple, & platted a crown of thorns,
 29 & put it about *his head*, * And began to salute
 him, *saying*, Haile, King of the Iewes. * And they
 smote him on the head with a reed, & spet vpo
 him, & bowed the knees, & did him reuerence.
 30 * And when they had mocked him, they tooke
 the purple off him, & put his owne clothes on
 31 him, and led him out to crucifie him. * And they
 compelled one that passed by, *called* Simon of
 Cyrene (which came out of the cuntrey, & was
 father of Alexāder & Rufus) to beare his crosse.
 32 * And they brought him to a place named Gol-
 gotha, which is by interpretation, the place of
 33 *dead mens* skulls. * And they gaue him to drink
 wine mingled with myrre, but he receiued it
 34 not. * And whē they had crucified him, they par-
 ted his garments, casting lots for them, what e-
 35 uery man should haue. * And it was the third
 36 hour, when they crucified him. * And the title of
 his cause was writtē aboue, **T H A T K I N G**
 37 **O F T H E I E W E S.** * They crucified also
 with him two theeuers, the one on the right
 38 hand, & the other on his left. * Thus the Scrip-
 39 ture was fulfilled which saith, And he was
 counted among the wicked, * And they that

CHAP. XV.

went by, railed on him, wagging their heads, & saying, Hey, thou that destroyest the temple, & buildest it in three dayes, * Saue thy selfe and come down fro the crosse. * Likewise also euen the hie Priestes mocking, saide among themselves with the Scribes, He saued other men, himselfe he cannot saue. * Let Christ the King of Israell now come downe from the crosse, that we may see, and beleue. They also that were crucified with him, reuiled him. * Now when the sixt houre was come, darkenes arose ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre. * And at the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lamma-sabachthani? which is by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast thou forsake me? * And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Beholde, he calleth Elias. * And one ranne, & filled a spondge full of vinegar, & put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let him alone: Let vs see if Elias will come, & take him down. * And Iesus cried with a londe voice, & gaue vp the ghost. * And the vaile of the temple was rent in twaine fro the top to the bottome. * Now when the Centurion, which stood ouer against him, saw that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Sonne of God. * There were also women, which behelde a farre off, among whome was Marie Magdalene, and Marie (the mother of James the lesse, and of Ioses) & Salome, * Which also when he was in Galile, followed him, & ministred vnto him, & many o-

S. MARKE.

ther women which came vp with him vnto Ierusalem. * And now when night was come (because it was the day of the preparation that is before the Sabbath) * Ioseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellour which also looked for the kingdome of God, came. & went in boldly vnto Pilate, and asked the bodie of Iesus. * And Pilate marvelled: if he were alreadie dead, and called vnto him the Centurio, & asked of him whether he had beene any while dead. * And when he knew the truth of the Centurion, he gaue the bodie to Ioseph: * Who bought a linnen cloth, & took him down, & wraped him in the linnen cloth, and layd him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rock, & rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre: * And Marie Magdalē, & Mary Ioses *mother*, beheld where he should be laide.

C H A P. X I.

X And when the Sabbath day was past, Marie Magdalene, & Mary the *mother* of Iames, & Salome, brought sweete oyntments that they might come, & anoint him. * Therefore early in the morning, the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the sunne was now risen. * And they said one to another, Who shall roll vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre? * And whē they looked they saw that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one.) * So they went into the sepulchre, and sawe a yong man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: & they were sore troubled. * But he said vnto them, Be not

CHAP. XVI.

so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which
 hath bin crucified: he is risen, he is not here: be-
 hold the place where they put him. * But goe 7
 your way, & tell his disciples, & Peter, that he
 wil go before you into Galile: there shal ye see
 him, as he said vnto you. * And they went out 8
 quicklie, & fled frō the sepulchre: for they trem-
 bled, & were amased: neither said they any thing
 to any man: for they were afraid. * And whē Ie- 9
 sus was risen againe, early the first day of the
 week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out
 of whom he had cast 7. deuils. * And she wēt & 10
 told them that had bin with him, which moun-
 ned & wept. * And whē they heard that he was 11
 alive, and had appeared to her, they beleueed it
 not. * After that, he appeared vnto two of them 12
 in another forme, as they walked & went into
 the cuntry. * And they went, & told it to the re- 13
 nant, neither beleueed they them. * Finally, he 14
 appeared vnto the eleuen as they sate together,
 & reproched thē for their vnbeliefe & hardnes
 of heart, because they beleueed not them which
 had scene him, being risen vp againe. * And he 15
 said vnto them, Go ye into all the worlde, and
 preach the Gospell to euery creature. * He that 16
 shall beleue & be baptized, shall be saved: but
 he that will not beleue, shall be damned. * And 17
 these tokens shall follow them that beleue, In
 my Name they shal cast out deuils, & shal speak 18
 with new tongues. * And shall take away ser-
 pents; & if they shall drink any deadly thing, it
 shall not hurt them: they shall lay their hands
 on

S. LUKE.

19 on the sicke, & they shall recover. *So after the
 20 Lord had spoken vnto the, he was receiued into
 heaven, & sate at the right hand of God. *And
 they went forth, and preached euery where.
 And the Lord wrought with the, & confirmed
 the word with signes that followed, A M E N.

THE HOLY GOSPEL
 OF IESVS CHRIST,
 according to Luke.

C H A P. I.

1 **I**R as much as many haue taken
 2 in hand to set forth the story of
 those things, whereof we are fully
 3 perswaded, *As they haue deli-
 4 uered them vnto vs, which from the
 beginning saw them their selues, & were mini-
 5 sters of the word, *It seemed good also to me
 (most noble Theophilus) as soone as I had sear-
 6 ched out perfectly all thinges from the begin-
 7 ning, to write vnto thee thereof from point to
 point, *That thou mightest acknowledge the
 certaintie of those things, whereof thou hast
 bene instructed.

8 **I**N the time of Herod King of Iudea, there was
 a certaine Priest named Zacharias, of the
 9 course of Abia: & his wife was of the daughter
 10 of Aaron, & her name was Elisabet. *Both were
 iust before God, & walked in all the comman-
 11 dements & ordinances of the Lorde, without
 12 reproofe. *And they had no child; because the
 Elisabet was barren: & both were wel stricken

CHAP. I.

in age. * And it came to passe, as he executed the
 his Priests office before God, as his course came
 in order, * According to the custome of the
 Priests office, his lot was to burne incense, whe
 he went into the Tēple of the Lord. * And the
 whol multitude of the people were without in
 prayer, while the incense was burning. * The ap-
 peared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing
 at the right side of the altar of incense. * And
 when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and
 feare fell vpon him. * But the Angel said vnto
 him, feare not, Zacharias: for thy praier is heard,
 & thy wife Elisabet shall beare thee a sonne, &
 thou shalt call his name Iohn. * And thou shalt
 haue ioy & gladnesse, & many shall reioyce at
 his birth. * For he shall be great in the sight of
 the Lord, & shall neither drink wine, nor strong
 drinke: & he shall be filled with the holy ghost,
 even from his mothers wombe. * And many of
 the children of Israell shall hee turne to their
 Lorde God. * For he shall go before him in the
 spirit & power of Elias, to turne the hearts of
 the fathers to the children, & the disobedient
 to the wisdome of the iust men, to make ready
 a people prepared for the Lord. * Then Zacha-
 rias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shal I know
 that for I am an olde man & my wife is of a
 great age. * And the Angel answered, & said vn-
 to him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence
 of God, & am sent to speake vnto thee, & to
 shew thee these good tidings. * And beholde,
 thou shalt be dunne, & not be able to speake,
 K. I. vntill

S. L V K E.

vntill the day that these things be done, because
 thou beleeuedst not my words, which shall be
 fulfilled in their season.*Now the people waited
 for Zacharias, and marueiled that he tarried
 so long in the Temple.*And when he came
 out, he could not speake vnto them: then they
 perceiued that he had seene a vision in the Temple:
 for he made signes vnto them,& remained dumme.*
 And it came to passe, when the daies of his office
 were fulfilled, that he departed to his owne house.*
 And after those daies, his wife Elisabet conceived,
 & hid her selfe 5. monethes, saying, *Thus hath
 the Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wherein he
 looked on me, to take from me my rebuke among
 men. * And in the first moneth, the Angel Gabriel
 was sent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named
 Nazareth, *To a virgine affianced to a man whose
 name was Ioseph, of the house of Dauid, & the
 virgins name was Mary.*And the Angel went in
 vnto her, & said, Hail thou *that art* freely beloved:
 the Lord is with thee: blessed *art* thou among women.
 *And when she saw him she was troubled at his
 saying, & thought what manner of salutation
 that should be.*Then the Angel said vnto her,
 Feare not, Mary: for thou hast found fauor with
 God.*For lo, thou shalt conceive in thy womb
 & beare a sonne, & shalt call his Name IESVS.
 *He shall be great, & shall be called the Sonne
 of the most High, & the Lord God shall giue
 vnto him the throne of his father Dauid. * And he
 shall reigne over the house of Iacob for ever.

C H A P. I.

of his kingdome shalbe none ende.*Then saide 34
 Marie vnto the Angel, How shal this be, seing
 I know not man? *And the Angel answered, & 35
 said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon
 thee, & the power of the most High shall ouer-
 shadowe thee: therefore also that holy thing
 which shall be borne of thee, shalbe called the
 Sonne of God. *And behold, thy cousin Elisa- 36
 bet, she hath also conceived a sonne in her old
 age: & this is her sixt moneth which was called
 barren. *For with God shall nothing be vnpos- 37
 sible. *Then Mary said, Behold the seruāt of the 38
 Lord; be it vnto me according to thy word. So
 the Angel departed from her. *And Mary arose 39
 in those dayes, & went into the hil country with
 haste to a city of Iuda, * And entred into the 40
 house of Zacharias, & saluted Elisabet. *And it 41
 came to passe, as Elisabet heard the salutatiō of
 Marie, the babe sprang in her belly, & Elisabet
 was filled with the holy Ghost. *And she cryed 42
 with a loud voice, & said, Blessed art thou amōg
 women, because the fruit of thy womb is bles- 43
 sed. *And whence cometh this to me, that the 44
 mother of my Lord should come to me? *For
 lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutatiō sounded
 in mine eares, the babe sprang in my belly for
 ioy. *And blessed is she that beleueed: for those 45
 things shalbe performed, which were tolde her
 frō the Lord. *Then Marie said, My soule mag- 46
 nifieth the Lord, *And my spirit reioyceth in 47
 God my Sauour. *For he hath looked on the 48
 poore degree of his seruant; for beholde, from

S. L V K E.

49 henceforth shall all ages call me blessed, *Be-
 50 cause he that is mighty. hath done for me great
 things, & holy is his Name. *And his mercie is
 51 from generation to generation on them that
 feare him. *He hath shewed strength with his
 52 arme: he hath scattered the proude in the ima-
 gination of their hearts. * He hath put downe
 53 the mightie from *their* seats, & exalted them of
 54 lowe degree. *He hath filled the hungry with
 good things, & sent away the rich emptie. *He
 55 hath vpholden Israell his seruant to be mind-
 full of *his* mercie. *(As he hath spoken to our
 fathers, to ~~us~~, to Abraham and his seede) for
 56 euer. * And Marie abode with her about three
 monethes: after, shee returned to her owne
 57 house. *Now Elisabets time was fulfilled, that
 shee shoulde bee deliuered, and shee brought
 58 forth a sonne. *And her neighbours, and cou-
 sins heard tell how the Lorde had shewed his
 great mercie vpon her, and they reioyced with
 her. * And it was so, that on the eight day,
 59 they came to circumcise the babe, and cal-
 led him Zacharias after the name of his father.
 *But his mother answered, and saide, Not so,
 60 but he shall be called Iohn. * And they saide
 61 vnto her, There is none of thy kinned that is
 named with this name. *The they made signes
 62 to his father, how hee would haue him called.
 *So hee asked for writing tables and wrote,
 63 saying, His name is Iohn, and they marvel-
 led all. * And his mouth was opened immedi-
 64 atly, & his tongue, and he spake & praised God.

*Ihesus

CHAP. I.

* Then feare came on all them that dwelt nere
vnto them, and all these words were noysed a-
broad throughout all the hill country of Iudea.
* And all they that heard them, layd *them* vp in
their heartes, saying, What manner childe shall
this be! & the hand of the Lord was with him.
* Then his father Zacharias was filled with the
holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, * Blessed
be the Lord God of Israel, because he hath visi-
ted and redeemed his people, * And hath rai-
sed vp the horne of saluation vnto vs, in the
house of his seruant Dauid, * As he spake by
the mouth of his holy Prophets, which were
since the worlde began, *saying*, * That he would
send vs deliuerance from our enemies, and from
the handes of all that hate vs, * That he might
shewe mercie towards our fathers, and remem-
ber his holy covenant, * And the othe which
he swore to our father Abraham, * Which was,
that he would graunt vnto vs, that we being
deliuered out of the handes of our enemies,
should serue him without feare, * All the dayes
of our life, in holinesse and righteousness before
him. * And thou babe, shalt be called the Pro-
phet of the most High: for thou shalt goe be-
fore the face of the Lord, to prepare his waies,
* And to giue knowledge of saluation vnto
his people, by the remission of their sinnes,
* Through the tender mercie of our God where-
by the day spring from an high hath visited vs,
* To giue light to them that sit in darkenesse,
and in the shadowe of death, and to guide our

S. L V K E.

80 seete into the way of peace. * And the childe
grew, and waxed strong in spirite, and was in
the wilderness, till the day came that he should
shewe himselfe vnto Israel.

C H A P. I I.

1 **A**Nd it came to passe in those daies, that there
came a decree from Augustus Cesar, that all
2 the world should be taxed. * (This first taxing
was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of
3 Syria) * Therefore went all to be taxed, every
4 man to his owne citie. * And Ioseph also went
vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth,
into Iudea vnto the city of Dauid, which is cal-
5 led Beth-leem (because he was of the house and
linage of Dauid,) * To be taxed with Marie
that was giuen him to wife, which was with
6 childe. * And so it was, that while they were
there, the dayes were accomplished that she
7 should be deliuered. * And she brought forth
her first begotten sonne, and wrapped him in
swaddling clothes, and laid him in a cratch, be-
cause there was no roome for the in the ynn.
8 * And there were in the same countrey shep-
heards, abiding in the field, and keeping watch
9 by night ouer their flocke. * And loe, the An-
gel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory
of the Lorde shone about them, and they were
10 sore afraid. * Then the Angel said vnto them,
Be not afraid: for behold, I bring you glad ti-
dings of great ioy, that shall be to all the peo-
11 ple: * *That is,* that vnto you is borne this day
in the citie of Dauid, a Sauour, which is, Christ

CHAP. II.

the Lorde, * And this *shalbe* a signe to you, Ye 12
 shall finde the babe swadled, & laid in a cratch.
 * And straightway there was with the Angel a 13
 multitude of heavenly souldiers, praying God,
 and saying, * *Glorie be* to God in the high *hea-* 14
uens, and peace in earth, and towards men good
 will. * And it came to passe when the Angels 15
 were gone away from them into heauen, that
 the shepheards said one to another, Let vs goe
 then vnto Beth-leem, and see this thing that is
 come to passe, which the Lord hath shewed vn-
 to vs. * So they came with haste, and founde 16
 both Marie and Ioseph, and the babe laid in the
 cratch. * And when they had seene it, they pub- 17
 lished abroad the thing, which was tolde them
 of that child. * And all that heard it, wondred 18
 at the thinges which were tolde them of the
 shepheards. * But Marie kept all those sayings, 19
 & pondred *them* in her heart. * And the shep- 20
 herds returned glorifying & praising God, for
 all that they had heard and seene, as it was spo-
 ken vnto them. * And when the eight dayes 21
 were accomplished, that they should circuncise
 the childe, his name was then called I E S V S,
 which was named of the Angel, before he was
 conueined in the wombe. * And when the daies 22
 of her purification after the Law of Moses were
 accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalē,
 to present him to the Lord, * (As it is written 23
 in the Law of the Lord, Euery man childe that
 first openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy to 24
 the Lotde) * And to giue an oblation, as it is

S. L V K E.

commanded in the Law of the Lord, a paire of
25 turtle doves, or two yong pigeons. * And be-
hold, there was a man in Hierusalē, whose name
was Simeon : this man *was* iust, & feared God,
and waited for the consolation of Israel, & the
26 holy Ghost was vpon him. * And it was declar-
ed to him from God by the holy Ghost, that he
should not see death, before he had seene that
27 Anoynted of the Lord. * And he came by *the*
motion of the Spirit into the Temple, and when
the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to do for
28 him after the custome of the Lawe, * Then he
tooke him in his armes, & praised God, & said,
29 * Lorde, now lettest thou thy seruant depart in
30 peace, according to thy word. * For mine eyes
31 haue seene thy saluation. * Which thou hast
32 prepared before the face of all people, * A light
to be reueiled to the Gentiles, and the glorie of
33 thy people Israel. * And Ioseph and his mother
marueiled at those thinges, which were spoken
34 touching him. * And Simeon blessed them, and
said vnto Marie his mother, beholde, this *childe*
is appointed for the fall & rising againe of ma-
ny in Israel, & for a signe which shalbe spoken
35 against : * (Yea & a sword shall pearce through
thy soule) that the thoughtes of many heartes
36 may be opened. * And there was a Prophetisse,
one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe
of Aser, which was of a great age, after she had
liued with an husband seuen yeres from her vir-
37 ginity. * And she *was* a widow about fourescore
and foure yeres, and went not out of the Tem-
ple,

C H A P. II.

ple, but serued God with fastings and prayers,
night and day. * She then cōming at the same
instant vpon them, confessed likewise the Lord,
& spake of him to all that looked for redemp-
tion in Hierusalem. * And when they had per-
fourmed all things according to the Law of the
Lorde, they returned into Galile to their owne
citie Nazareth. * And the child grew, & waxed
strong in Spirit, and was filled with wisdom,
& the grace of God was with him. * Now his
parents went to Hierusalem euery yeere, at the
feast of the Paskeouer. * And when he was xij.
yete old, & they were come vp to Hierusalem,
after the custome of the feast, * And had fini-
shed the dayes thereof, as they returned, the
childe Iesus remained in Hierusalem, and Ioseph
knewe not, nor his mother, * But they suppo-
sing that he had bene in the company, went a
dayes iourney, & sought him among their kinf-
folke, and acquaintance. * And when they found
him not, they turned backe to Hierusalem, and
sought him. * And it came to passe three dayes
after, that they found him in the Temple, sitting
in the mids of the doctors, both hearing them,
& asking them questions: * And all that heard
him, were astonied at his vnderstanding, & an-
swers. * So when they saw him, they were ama-
zed, & his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast
thou thus dealt with vs? behold, thy father and
I haue sought thee with very heauie heartes.
* Then said he vnto them, Howe is it that ye
sought me? knew ye not that I must go about
my

50 my Fathers businesse? * But they vnderstood
 51 not the word that he spake to them. * Then he
 went downe with them, & came to Nazareth,
 and was subiect to them: and his mother kept
 52 all these sayings in her heart. * And Iesus in-
 creased in wisdome, & stature, and in fauour
 with God and men.

C H A P. III.

1 **N**Owe in the fifteenth yeere of the raigne of
 Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being go-
 vernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of
 Galile, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Itu-
 rea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, & Lysa-
 2 nias the Tetrarch of Abilene, * (When Annas
 and Calaphas were the hie Priestes) the worde
 of God came vnto Iohn the sonne of Zechari-
 3 as in the wildernesse. * And he came into all
 the coastes about Iordan, preaching the bap-
 tisme of repentance for the remission of sinnes.
 4 * As it is written in the booke of the sayings of
 Esaias the Propbet, which saith, The voyce of
 him that cryeth in the wildernesse is, Prepare ye
 the way of the Lord: make his paths straight.
 5 Every valley shall be filled, & euery mountaine
 and hill shall be brought lowe, and crooked
 things shalbe made straight, & the rough waies
 6 shall be made smoothe. * And all flesh shall see
 7 the saluation of God. * Then saide he to the
 people that were come out to be baptized of
 him, O generations of vipers, who hath fore-
 warned you to flee from the wrath to come?
 8 * Bring forth therefore frutes worthie amend-
 ment

CHAP. III.

ment of life, and beginne not to say with your
 selues, We haue Abraham to *our* father: for I
 say vnto you, that God is able of these stones
 to raise vp children vnto Abraham. * Now also
 is the axe laid vnto the root of the trees: there-
 fore euery tree which bringeth not forth good
 fruite, shall be hewen downe, and cast into the
 fire. * Then the people asked him, saying, What
 shall we do then? And he answered, & said vn-
 to them, He that hath two coates, let him part
 with him that hath none: and he that hath
 meate, let him doe likewise. * Then came there
 Publicanes also to be baptized, and saide vnto
 him, Master, What shall we doe? * And he said
 vnto them, Require no more then that which
 is appointed vnto you. * The souldiers like-
 wise demaunded of him, saying, And what shall
 we doe? And he said vnto them, Doe violence
 to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be
 content with your wages. * As the people wai-
 ted, and all men mused in their hearts of Iohn,
 if he were not that Christ, * Iohn answered, and
 said to them all, Indeede I baptize you with
 water, but one stronger then I, commeth, whose
 shoes latchet I am not worthie to vnloose: he
 wil baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with
 fire. * Whose fanne is in his hand, and he will
 make cleane his floore, & will gather the wheat
 into his garner, but the chaffe will he burne
 vp with fire that neuer shalbe quenched. * Thus
 then exhorting with many other thinges, he
 preached vnto the people. * But when Herode

the

S. L V K E.

the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herod his brother Philipps wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done, * He added yet this: **20** boue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison. * Now it came to passe, as all the people were baptized, & that Iesus was baptized, & did pray, **21** the heauen was opened: * And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape like a doue vpon him, and there was a voice from heauen, saying, I'hou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am **22** well pleased. * And Iesus him selfe began to be about thirtie yeere of age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph, *which was the sonne of* **23** Eli, * *The sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Leui, the sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Ianna, the sonne of* **24** Ioseph. * *The sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Amos, the sonne of Naum, the sonne of Esli, the* **25** *sonne of Nagge.* * *The sonne of Maath, the sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of Semei, the sonne of* **26** *Ioseph, the sonne of Iuda, the sonne of Ioanna, the sonne of Rhesa, the sonne of Zorobabel, the* **27** *sonne of Salathiel, the sonne of Neri, the sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Addi, the sonne of Cosam,* **28** *the sonne of Elmodam, the sonne of Er, the sonne of Iose, the sonne of Eliezer, the sonne of Iorim, the sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Leui,* **29** * *The sonne of Simcon, the sonne of Iuda, the sonne of Ioseph, the sonne of Ionan, the sonne of Elia-* **30** *cim, the sonne of Melea, the sonne of Mainan, the sonne of Mattatha, the sonne of Nathan, the* **31** *sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Iesse, the sonne of Obed, the sonne of Booz, the sonne of Salmon, the* **32**

C H A P. IIII.

sonne of Naasson, ⁊ The sonne of Aminadab, the 33
sonne of Aram, the sonne of Esrom, the sonne of
*Phares. the sonne of Iuda, * The sonne of Iacob, 34*
the sonne of Isaac, the sonne of Abraham. the sonne
*of Thara, the sonne of Nachor, * The sonne of Sa- 35*
ruch, the sonne of Regau, the sonne of Phalec, the
*sonne of Eber, the sonne of Sala, * The sonne of 36*
Cainan, the sonne of Arphaxad, the sonne of Sem,
*the sonne of Noe, the sonne of Lamech, * The 37*
sonne of Mathusala, the sonne of Enoch. the sonne
of Iared. the sonne of Maleleel, the sonne of Cai-
*nan, * The sonne of Enos, the sonne of Seth, the 38*
sonne of Adam, the sonne of God.

C H A P. IIII.

AND Iesus full of the holy Ghost returned **1**
 from Iordan and was led by that Spirit into
 the wilderness. * And was there fourtie dayes **2**
 tempted of the deuill, and in those dayes he did
 eat nothing: but when they were ended, he af-
 terward was hungrie. * Then the deuill said vnto **3**
 him, If thou be the sonne of God, commaunde
 this stone that it be made bread. * But Iesus an- **4**
 swered him, saying, It is written, That man shall
 not liue by bread onely but by euery worde of **5**
 God. * Then the deuill tooke him vp into an
 high mountaine, and shewed him all the king-
 doms of the world in the twinckling of an eye.
 * And the deuill said vnto him, All this power **6**
 will I giue thee, and the glorie of those king-
 domes: for that is deliuered to me: & to whom-
 soeuer I will. I giue it. * If thou therefore wilt **7**
 worship me, they shall be all thine. * But Iesus **8**
 answered

S. L V K E.

answered him, & said, Hence from me, Satan: for
it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy
God, and him alone thou shalt serue. * Then he
brought him to Hierusalem, & set him on a pla-
nacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou
be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from
10 hence. * For it is written, That he will giue his
11 Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee: * And
with *their* handes they shall lift thee vp, least at
any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against
12 a stone. * And Iesus answered, & said vnto him,
It is saide, Thou shalt not tempt the Lorde thy
13 God. * And when the deuill had ended all the
tentation, he departed from him for a little sea-
14 son. * And Iesus returned by the power of the
spirit into Galile: & there went a fame of him
15 throughout all the region round about. * For
he taught in their Synagogues, & was honoured
16 of all men. * And he came to Nazareth where he
had bene brought vp, and (as his custome was)
went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day,
17 and stood vp to reade. * And there was deliue-
red vnto him, the booke of the Prophet Esaias:
& when he had opened the booke, he found the
18 place, where it was written, * The Spirit of the
Lord is vpon me, because he hath anointed me,
that I should preach the Gospel to the poore: he
hath sent me, that I shoulde heale the broken
hearted, that I should preach deliuerance to the
captiues, and recovering of sight to the blinde,
that I should set at libertie them that are brui-
19 sed: * And that I should preach the acceptable
yeere

C H A P. IIII.

were of the Lord. * And he closed the booke, 29
 & gave it againe to the minister, & sate downe:
 & the eyes of all that were in the Synagogue,
 were fastened on him. * Then he began to say 31
 vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled
 in your eares. * And all bare him witnes, and 32
 wondered at the gracious wordes, which pro-
 ceeded out of his mouth, & said, Is not this Io-
 sephs sonne? * Then he said vnto them, Ye will 33
 surely say vnto me this prouerbe, Physicion,
 heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer we haue heard done
 in Capernaum, doe it here likewise in thine own
 countrey. * And he said, Verely I say vnto you, 34
 No Prophet is accepted in his owne countrey.
 * But I tell you of a trueth, many widowes 35
 were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when heauē
 was shut three yeres & sixe moneths, whē great
 famine was throughout all the land, * But vnto 36
 none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sarepta,
 a citie of Sidon, vnto a certaine widow. * Also 37
 many lepers were in Israel, in the time of Eli-
 seus the Prophet: yet none of them was made
 cleane, sauing Naaman the Syrian. * Then all 38
 that were in the Synagogue, when they heard it,
 were filled with wrath, * And rose vp, & thrust 39
 him out of the citie, & led him vnto the edge
 of the hill, whereon their citie was built, to cast
 him downe headlong. * But he passed through 30
 the middes of them, and went his way, * And 31
 came downe into Capernaum a citie of Galile,
 and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes.
 * And they were astonied at his doctrine: for 32
 his

S. L V K E.

- 33 his word was with authoritie. * And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, which cryed with a lowde voyce. * Saying, Oh, what haue we to do with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I know who thou art, *even the belly one of God.* * And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, & come out of him. Then the deuill throwing him in the middes of them, came out of him, and hurt him nothing at all.
- 36 * So feare came on them all, and they spake among them selues, saying, What thing is this? for with authoritie and power he commandeth the foule spirits, & they come out. * And the fame of him spred abroad throughout all the places of the countrey round about. * And he rose vp, and came out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house. And Simons wifes mother was taken with a great feuer, and they required him for her. * Then he stood over her, & rebuked the feuer, and it left her, and immediately she arose, and ministred vnto them.
- 40 * Now at the sunne setting, all they that had sick folkes of diuers diseases, brought them vnto him, & he laid his hands on euery one of them, & healed them. * And deuils also came out of many, crying, and saying, Thou art that Christ that Sonne of God: but he rebuked them, and suffered them not to say that they knewe him to be that Christ. * And when it was day, he departed, & went forth into a desert place, and the people sought him, & came to him, & kept him.

that he
said vnto
kinge
am I
of Gal

The
vp
flood
two
men
their
which
woul
down
* Now
Simon
your
were
taile
uerth
* And
great
* And
wer
& he
ships
Peter
Lord
* For
with

C H A P. V.

that he should not depart from them. * But he 43
said vnto them, Surely I must also preach the
kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore
am I sent. * And he preached in the Synagogues 44
of Galile.

C H A P. V.

THEN it came to passe, as the people pressed 1
vpon him to heare the word of God, that he
stoode by the lake of Gennesaret, * And sawe 2
two ships stand by the lake side, but the fisher-
men were gone out of them, and were washing
their nets. * And he entred into one of the ships, 3
which was Simons, and required him that hee
would thrust off a little from the land: & he sat
downe, & taught the people out of the shippe.
* Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto 4
Simon, Launch out into the deepe, & let downe
your nets to make a draught. * Then Simon an- 5
swered, & saide vnto him, Master, wee haue tra-
uailed sore all night, & haue taken nothing: ne-
uerthelesse at thy word I will let down the net.
* And when they had so done, they inclosed a 6
great multitud of fishes, so that their net brake.
* And they beckened to their partners, which 7
were in the other ship, that they should come
& help them, who came then, & filled both the
ships, that they did sinke. * Nowe when Simon 8
Peter saw it, he fell down at Iesus knees, saying,
Lorde, goe from me: for I am a sinnefull man.
* For he was vtterly astonied, and all that were 9
with him, for the draught of fishes which they
made. * And so was also James and Iohn the 10

S. I V R E.

- sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions
with Simon. Then Iesus said vnto Simon, **Fear**
not : From hencefoorth thou shalt catch men.
- 11** * And when they had brought the ships to land,
12 they forsook all, & folowed him. * Now it came
to passe, as he was in a certain citie, behold *there*
was a man full of leprosie, & when he saw Iesus,
he fel on his face, & besought him, saying, Lord,
13 if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. * So he
stretched forth his hand, saying, I will, be thou
cleane. And immediately the leprosie departed
14 from him. * And he commaunded him that he
should tell it no man: but goe, *sath he*, & shew
thy selfe to the Priest, & offer for thy cleansing,
as Moses hath commanded for a witnesse vnto
15 them. * But so much more went there a faine
abroad of him, & great multitudes came toge-
ther to heare, & to be healed of him of their in-
16 firmities. * But he kept himself apart in the wil-
17 dernes, & praied. * And it came to passe, on a cer-
taine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharises
& doctors of the Law sat by, which were come
out of euery town of Galile, & Iudea, & Hieru-
salem, & the power of the Lord was *in him* to
18 heale them. * Then behold, men brought a man
lying in a bed, which was taken with a palsie, &
they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay
19 him before him. * And when they could not
finde by what way they might bring him in,
because of the prease, they went vp on the
house, and let him downe through the tyling,
20 bed and all, in the middes before Iesus. * And

when

C H A P. V.

when he saw their faith, he said vnto him, **Man,**
thy finnes are forgiven thee. * Then the Scribes 27
and the Pharises began to reason, saying, **Who**
is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can for-
give finnes, but God only? * But when Iesus per- 28
ceived their reasoning, he answered, & said vnto
them, What reason ye in your hearts? * Whe- 29
ther is easier to say, Thy finnes are forgiven
thee, or to say, Rise and walke? * But that ye 24
may knowe that that Sonne of man hath au-
thoritie to forgive finnes on earth, (he saide
vnto the sicke of the palsie) I say to thee, Arise:
take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house. * And 25
immediately he rose vp before them, and tooke
vp his bed whereon he lay, and departed to his
owne house, praising God. * And they were all 26
amased, and praised God, and were filled with
feare, saying, Doubtlesse, wee haue scene strange
things to day. * And after that, he went soorth 27
and saw a Publicane named **Leui**, sitting at the
receit of custome, and saide vnto him, Follow
me. * And he left all, rose vp, and folowed him. 28
* Then **Leui** made him a great feast in his own 29
house, where there was a great companie of
Publicanes, and of other that sate at table with
them. * But they that were Scribes & Pharises 30
mōg thē, murmured against his disciples, saying,
Why eat ye & drink ye with Publicanes & sin-
ners? * Then Iesus answered, & said vnto them, 31
They that are whole, need not the Physitiō, but
they that are sicke. * I came not to call the 32
righteous, but sinners to repentāce. * Then they 33

S. L V K E.

said vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn
 fast often, & pray, & the *disciples* of the Pharisees
 34 also, but thine eate, & drinke? * And he said vnto
 them, Can ye make the children of the wedding
 chamber to fast, as long as the bridegrome is
 35 with them? * But the daies will come, euen whe
 the bridegrome shalbe taken away from them:
 36 then shall they fast in those daies. * Againe he
 spake also vnto them a parable, No man put-
 teth a piece of a new garment into an old vo-
 sture: for then the newe renteth it, & the piece
 taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.
 37 * Also no man powreth new wine into old ves-
 sels: for then the new wine wil break the vessels
 & it will runne out, and the vessels will perish.
 38 * But new wine must be powred into new ves-
 39 sels: so both are preserued. * Also no man that
 drinketh olde wine, straightway desireth new:
 for he saith, The old is more profitable.

C H A P. VI.

1 **A**ND it came to passe on a second solemne
 Sabbath, that he went through the corne
 fields, & his disciples plucked the eares of corne,
 2 & did eate, & rubbe them in *their* hands. * And
 certaine of the Pharises saide vnto them, Why
 do ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the
 3 Sabbath daies? * Then Iesus answered them, and
 said, Haue ye not read this, that Dauid did when
 he himselfe was an hungred, & they which were
 4 with him, * Howe he went into the house of
 God, and tooke, and ate the shew bread, and
 gaue also to them which were with him, which

CHAP. VI.

was not lawfull to eate, but for the Priests onely? * And he said vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath day. * It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, & taught, and there was a man, whose right hand was dried vp. * And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath day, that they might finde an accusation *against* him. * But he knew their thoughts, & said to the mā which had the withered hand, Arise, & stand vp in the middes. And he arose, & stood vp. * Then said Iesus vnto them, I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath daies to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy? * And he behelde them all in compasse, & saide vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand, And he did so, & his hand was restored againe as whole as the other. * Then they were filled full of madnes, & communed one with another, what they might do to Iesus. * And it came to passe in those daies, that he went into a mountaine to pray, & spent the night in prayer to God. * And when it was day, he called his disciples, & of them he chose twelue, which also he called Apostles. * (Simon whom he named also Peter, & Andrew his brother, James & Iohn, Philip & Bartlemew: * Matthew, & Thomas: James *the sonne of Alphaeus*, & Simon called Zelous, * Iudas James *brother*, and Iudas Icariot, which also was the traitor.) * The he came downe with them, & stood in a plaine place, with the companie of his disciples, and a

great multitude of people out of all Iudea, and
 Hierusalem, & from the sea coast of Tyrus and
 Sidon, which came to heare him, & to be healed
 of their diseases: * And they that were vexed
 with foule spirits, & they were healed. * And the
 whole multitude sought to touch him: for there
 went vertue out of him, & healed them all. * And
 he lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, & saide,
 Blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdom of
 God. * Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye
 shalbe satisfied. Blessed are ye that weepe now:
 for ye shall laugh. * Blessed are ye when men
 hate you, and when they separate you, & reuile
 you, & put out your name as euil, for the Sonne
 of mans sake. * Reioyce ye in that day, and be
 glad: for behold, your reward is great in heauen:
 for after this manner their fathers did to the
 Prophets. * But woe be to you that are rich:
 for ye haue receiued your consolation. * Woe
 be to you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe
 be to you that now laugh: for ye shall waile &
 weepe. * Woe be to you when all men speake
 well of you: for so did their fathers to the false
 Prophets. * But I say vnto you which heare,
 Love your enemies: doe well to them which
 hate you. * Bless them that curse you, and pray
 for them which hurt you. * And vnto him that
 smiteth thee on the one cheeke, offer also the o-
 ther: & him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid
 not to take thy coat also. * Giue to euery mā that
 asketh of thee: & of him that taketh away the
 things that be thine, aske them not again. * And

CHAP. VI.

If ye would that men should doe to you, so doe
 ye to them likewise. * For if ye loue thē which
 loue you, what thanke shal ye haue? for euen the
 sinners loue those that loue thē. * And if ye doe
 good for them which doe good for you, what
 thank shall ye haue? for euen the sinners do the
 same. * And if ye lend to *them* of whom ye hope
 to receiue, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen
 sinners lende to sinners, to receiue the like.
 * Wherefore loue ye your enemies, & do good,
 & lend, looking for nothing againe, & your re-
 warde shall be great, & ye shall be the children
 of the most High: for he is kinde vnto the vn-
 kinde, and to the euill. * Be ye therefore merci-
 full, as your Father also is merciful. * Iudge not,
 & ye shal not be iudged: condemne not, and ye
 shall not be condemned: forgieue, & ye shall be
 forgiven. * Giue, & it shalbe giuen vnto you: a
 good measure, pressed downe, shaken together
 and running ouer shall men giue into your bo-
 some: for with what measure ye mete, with the
 same shall men mete to you againe. * And hee
 spake a parable vnto them, Can the blinde lead
 the blind? shal they not both fal into the ditch?
 * The disciple is not aboue his master: but who-
 soeuer *will* be a perfect disciple, shalbe as his
 master. * And why seeest thou a mote in thy bro-
 thers eye, & considerest not the beam, that is in
 thine owne eye? * Either how canst thou say to
 thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote
 that is in thine eye, when thou seeest not the
 beame that is in thine owne eye? Hipocrite, cast

S. L V K E.

out the beame that is in thine owne eye first: then shalt thou see perfectly to pul out the mote that is in thy brothers eie.* For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euill fruit: neither a euill tree, that bringeth forth good fruit.* For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruit: for neither of thornes gather men figs, nor of bushes gather they grapes. * A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good, and an euill man out of the euill treasure of his heart bringeth forth euill: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.* But why call ye me Lord, Lord, & doe not the things that I speake? * Whoso euer commeth to me, and heareth my words, and doeth the same, I will shew you to whō he is like: * He is like a man which built an house, & digged deep, & laid the foundation on a rocke: & when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, & could not shake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke. * But hee that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth without foundation, against which the flood did beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that house was great.

C H A P. VII.

WHen he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. * And a certaine Centurions seruant was sick & readie to die, which was deare vnto him.* And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching him that

CHAP. VII.

that he wold come, & heale his seruāt. * So they 4
 came to Iesus, & besought him instantly, saying
 that he was worthy that he should doe this for
 him. * For he loueth, *said they*, our nation, and he 5
 hath built vs a Synagogue. * Thē Iesus wēt with 6
 thē: but whē he was now not far frō the house,
 the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto
 him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not
 worthy thou shouldest enter vnder my roose:
 * Wherefore I thought not my selfe worthie to 7
 come vnto thee: but say the word, & my seruāt
 shalbe whole. * For I likewise am a man set vn- 8
 der authoritie, & haue vnder me souldiers: and I
 say vnto one, Goe, & he goeth, and to another,
 Come, & he cometh, and to my seruant, Doe,
 this, and he doeth it. * When Iesus heard these 9
 things, he marueiled at him, & turned him, and
 said to the people that folowed him, I say vnto
 you, I haue not found so great faith, no not in
 Israhel. * And when they that were sent, turned 10
 backe to the house, they found the seruant that
 was sicke, whole. * And it came to passe the day 11
 after, that he went into a citie called Nain, and
 many of his disciples went with him, & a great
 multitude. * Now when he came neere to the 12
 gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man
 cried out, *who was* the only begotten sonne of
 his mother, which was a widow, & much peo-
 ple of the citie was with her. * And when the 13
 Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, & said
 vnto her, Weepe not. * And he went & touched 14
 the coffin (& they that bare him, stood stil) & he
 said,

- 15 said, Young man, I say vnto thee, Arise. * And he
that was dead, sat vp, & began to speak, & he
16 liuered him to his mother. * Then there came
feare on them al, & they glorified God, saying,
A great Prophet is risen amōg vs, & God hath
17 fitted his people. * And this rumor of him went
forth throughtout all Iudea, & throughtout all the
18 region round about. * And the disciples of Iohn
19 shewed him of all these things. * So Iohn called
vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and
sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he that should
20 come, or shal we wait for another? * And when
the men were come vnto him, they saide, Iohn
Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou
hee that should come, or shal we wait for ano-
21 ther? * And at that time he cured many of their
sickneses, & plagues, & of euill spirits, and vnto
22 many blinde men hee gaue sight freely. * And
Iesus answered, & said vnto the, Go your waies
& shew Iohn, what things ye haue seen & heard:
that the blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are
cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raised, and
23 the pore receiue the Gospel. * And blessed is he,
24 that shal not be offended in me. * And when the
messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to
speak vnto the people, of Iohn, What went ye
out into the wilderness to see? A reede shaken
25 with the winde? * But what wēt ye out to see? A
man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they which
are gorgeously apparelled, & liue delicatly, are in
26 Kings courts. * But what went ye forth to see?
Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and greater than

C H A P. VII.

Prophet. *This is he of whome it is writtē, Be- 27
 hold, I send my messenger before thy face, which
 shal prepare thy way before thee. *For I say vn- 28
 to you, there is no greater Prophet thē Iohn, a-
 mong them that are begottē of women: neuer-
 thelesse, he that is the least in the kingdome of
 God, is greater then he. *Then all the people 29
 that heard, & the Publicans iustified God, being
 baptized with the baptisme of Iohn. *But the 30
 Pharises & the expounders of the Law despised
 the counsell of God against themselves, & were
 not baptized of him. *And the Lord said, wher- 31
 unto shal I liken the men of this generatiō? &
 what thing are they like vnto? *They are like 32
 vnto litle children sitting in the market place, &
 saying one to another, & saying, We haue pi-
 ped vnto you, & ye haue not daunced: we haue
 mourned to you, and ye haue not wept. *For 33
 Iohn Baptill came, neither eating bread, nor
 drinking wine: & ye say, He hath the deuill. *The 34
 same of man is come, & eateth & drinketh: &
 ye say, Behold a man which is a glutton, and a
 drinker of wine, a friend of Publicans & sinners: 35
 But wisdom is iustified of al her childre. *And 36
 one of the Pharises desired him that he would
 eat with him: & he wēt into the Pharises house
 & sat downe at table. *And behold, a womā in 37
 the citie which was a sinner, whē she knew that
 Iesus sare at table in the Pharises house, shee
 brought a box of ointment. *And shee stood at 38
 his feet behind him weeping, & began to wash
 his feet with teares, & did wipe them with the
 haire

S. L V K E.

- haire of her head, & kissed his feet, & anointed
 39 them with the ointment. * Now when the Pharisee
 which had him, saw it, he spake within himselfe
 saying, If this man were a Prophet, he would surely
 haue knowen who, & what manner of woman this
 40 is which toucheth him: for she is a sinner. * And
 Iesus answered, & said vnto him, Simon, I haue
 somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master,
 41 say on. * There was a certain lender which had
 2. detters: the one ought five hundred pence, &
 42 the other fiftie. * When they had nothing to pay,
 he forgave them both: Which of them therefore
 43 fore, tell me, wil loue him most? * Simon answered,
 & said, I suppose that he, to whome he for-
 gaue most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast
 44 truly iudged. * Then he turned to the woman, &
 said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I en-
 tred into thine house, & thou gauest me no wa-
 ter to my feet: but shee hath washed my feet
 with teares, & wiped them with the haire of
 45 her head. * Thou gauest me no kisse: but shee,
 since the time I came in, hath not ceased to
 46 kisse my feet. * Mine head with oyle thou didst
 not anoint: but shee hath anointed my feet
 47 with ointment. * Wherefore I say vnto thee, ma-
 ny sinnes are forgiven her: for shee loued much.
 To whom a litle is forgiven, he doth loue a litle.
 48 * And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiven
 49 thee. * And they that sate at table with him, be-
 gan to say within themselves, Who is this that
 50 euen forgiveth sinnes? * And he said to the wo-
 man, Thy faith hath saued thee: go in peace.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

And it came to passe afterward, that he him-
 selfe went through euery citie and towne,
 preaching, & publishing the kingdome of God,
 & the twelue were with him, * And certain wo-
 men which were healed of euill spirits & infir-
 mities, as Mary which was called Magdalen, out
 of whome went seuen deuils, * And Ioanna the
 wife of Chuza Herods steward, & Susanna, and
 many other which ministred vnto him of their
 substance. * Now whē much people were gather-
 ed together, & were come vnto him out of all
 cities, he spake by a parable. * A sower went out
 to sow his seed, & as he sowed, some fel by the
 wayes side, and it was troden vnder feete, & the
 foules of heauen deuoured it vp. * And some fel
 on the stones, & when it was sprong vp, it wi-
 thered away, because it lacked moiltnes. * And
 some fell among thornes, & the thornes sprang
 vp with it, & choked it. * And some fel on good
 ground, & sprang vp & bare fruite, an hundreth
 fold. And as he said these things, he cried, He
 that hath eares to heare, let him heare. * Then
 his disciples asked him, demanding what para-
 ble that was. * And he said, Vnto you it is giuen
 to know the secrets of the kingdome of God,
 but to other in parables, that when they see,
 they should not see, and when they heare, they
 should not vnderstand. * The parable is this, The
 seed is the word of God. * And they that are be-
 side the way, are they that heare: afterward co-
 uereth the deuill, & taketh away the worde out
 of their hearts, least they should beleue, & be
 saved.

S. I V K E.

- 23 saved. *But they that are on the stones, are they
 which when they haue heard, receiue the word
 with ioy: but they haue no rootes: which for
 while beleeue, but in the time of temptation
 24 away. *And that which fell among thornes, are
 they which haue heard, & after their departing
 are choked with cares & with riches, & volu-
 25 tuous liuing, & bring forth no fruite. *But that
 which fell in good ground, are they which with
 an honest and good heart heare the word, and
 26 keep it, & bring forth fruit with patience. *No
 man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it
 vnder a vessell, neither putteth it vnder the bed,
 but setteth it on a candlestick, that they that en-
 27 ter in, may see the light. *For nothing is secret,
 that shall not be euident: neither any thing hid,
 28 that shal not be knowen & come to light. *Take
 heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath
 to him shall be giuen: & whosoever hath not,
 from him shalbe taken euen that which it seemeth
 29 that he hath. *Then came to him his mother &
 his brethren, & could not come neare to him
 30 for the press. *And it was told him by certain
 which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand
 31 without, and would see thee. *But he answered
 and said vnto them, My mother, & my brethren
 are these which heare the word of God, & do
 32 *And it came to passe on a certain day, that he
 went into a ship with his disciples, and he said
 vnto them, Let vs go ouer to the other side
 33 of the lake. And they lancht forth. *And as they
 sailed, he fell a sleepe, and there came downe
 storme
 with wa-
 went to
 Master,
 winde,
 & it wa-
 is your
 them self
 derth be-
 him! *
 daret
 he wen
 man o
 time, &
 house,
 Iesus,
 & wit
 with t
 High
 he cor
 the m
 there
 in let
 ed o
 aske
 said,
 into
 wou
 deep
 ay f
 sou
 into

CHAP. VIII.

storme of winde on the lake, & they were filled
 with water, & were in ieopardie. *Then they 24
 went to him, and awoke him, saying, Master,
 Master, we perish. And he arose, & rebuked the
 winde, and the waues of water: & they ceased,
 & it was calme. *Then he said vnto the, Where 25
 is your faith? & they feared, & wondred among
 themselves, saying, Who is this that comman-
 deth both the windes & water, and they obey
 him! * So they sailed vnto the regio of the Ga- 26
 dalenes, which is ouer against Galile. *And as 27
 he went out to land, there met him a certaine
 man out of the citie, which had deuils long
 time, & he ware no garment, neither abode in
 house, but in the graues. *And when he sawe 28
 Iesus, he cryed out and fell downe before him,
 & with a loud voyce said, What haue I to do
 with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the moste
 High? I beseech thee torment me not: * For 29
 he commanded the foule spirit to come out of
 the man (for oft times hee had caught him:
 therefore he was bound with chaines, & kept
 in letters, but he brake the bands, and was cari-
 ed of the deuill into wilderneses) *Then Iesus 30
 asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he
 said, Legion, because many deuils were entred
 into him. * And they besought him, that hee 31
 would not command them to goe out into the
 deepe. *And there was thereby an heard of ma- 32
 ny swine, feeding on a hill: and the deuills be-
 sought him, that he would suffer them to enter
 into them. So he suffered them. *Then went 33
 the

S. LUKE.

- the deuils out of the man, and entred into
 swine: & the heard was caried with violence
 a sleepe downe place into the lake, & was
 34 ked. *When the heardmē saw what was done,
 they fled: & when they were departed, they
 35 it in the citie & in the cuntry. *Then they came
 out to see what was done, & came to Iesus,
 found the man, out of whome the deuils were
 departed, sitting at the feet of Iesus, clothed
 36 in his right minde: and they were afraid. *They
 also which saw it, tolde them by what means
 he that was possessed with the deuill was healed.
 37 *Then the whole multitude of the countrey
 about the Gadarens, besought him, that he would
 depart from them: for they were taken with
 great feare: and he went into the ship, & re-
 38 ned. *Then the man, out of whome the deuils
 were departed, besought him that he might be
 39 with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying, *Re-
 turne into thine owne house, and shewe what
 great things God hath done to thee. So he
 went his way, & preached throughout all the
 city, what great thinges Iesus had done vnto
 40 him. *And it came to passe, whē Iesus was come
 againe, that the people receiued him: for they
 41 all waited for him. *And behold, there came a
 man named Iairus, & he was the ruler of the Sy-
 nagogue, who fell downe at Iesus feet, and be-
 sought him that he would come into his house.
 42 *For he had but a daughter only, about twelue
 yeares of age. & shee lay a dying. As he went,
 43 the people thronged him. *And a woman ha-

CHAP. VIII.

an issue of blood, twelve yeres long, which
 spent all her substance vpon Phisitions, &
 could not be healed of any: *When she came 44
 behind him, she touched the hemme of his gar-
 ment, and immediatly her issue of blood stan-
 ded. *The Iesus said, Who is it that hath tou- 45
 ched me? When euery man denied, Peter said
 and they that were with him, Master, the mul-
 titude thrust thee, & tread on thee, and sayest
 thou who hath touched me? *And Iesus said, 46
 Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that
 vertue is gone out of me. *When the woman 47
 saw that she was not hid, she came trembling,
 & fell down before him and told him before al-
 the people, for what cause she had touched him
 & how she was healed immediatly. *And he said 48
 unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy
 faith hath saued thee: go in peace. *While he 49
 spake, there came one from the ruler of the
 Synagogs house, which said to him, Thy daugh-
 ter is dead: discease not the Master. *When Iesus 50
 heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not: be-
 lieve onely, & she shalbe saued. *And when he 51
 went into the house, he suffered no man to goe
 in with him, saue Peter, & Iames, & Iohn, & the
 father & mother of the maide. *And al wept, & 52
 sorrowed for her: but he said, Weepe not: for she
 is not dead, but sleepeth. *And they laught him 53
 to scorne, knowing that she was dead. *So he 54
 thrust them all out, & took her by the hand, &
 cried, saying, Maid, arise. *And her spirit came a- 55
 gaine, & she rose straightway: & he commāded

S. LUKE.

56 to giue her meat. *Then her parents were
nied: but he commāded them that they should
tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 **T**Hen called he his twelue disciples together,
& gaue them power & authoritie ouer all
2 deuils, & to heale diseases. *And he sent them
forth to preach the kingdom of God, & to cure
3 the sick. *And he said to them, Take nothing to
your iourney, neither stauces, nor scrip, neither
bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coats a piece.
4 *And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there
5 abide, & thence depart. *And how many soeuer
will not receiue you, when ye go out of that ci-
ty, shake off the very dust from your feete for a
6 testimony against them. *And they went out
and went through euery towne, preaching the
7 Gospell, and healing euery where. *Now He-
rod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by
him: and hee doubted, because that it was saide
of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the
8 dead: *And of some, that Elias had appeared
& of some, that one of the olde Prophets was
9 risen againe. *Then Herod saide, Iohn haue I
beheaded: who thē is this, of whom I heare such
10 things? & he desired to see him. *And when the
Apostles returned, they tolde him what great
things they had done. Then he tooke them to
him, & went aside into a solitary place, nere to
11 the citie called Bethsaida. *But whē the people
knew it, they followed him & he receiued them
-& spake vnto them of the kingdome of God

heal

CHAP. IX.

healed them that had need to be healed. *And 12
 when the day began to weare away, the twelue
 came & said vnto him, Send the people away,
 that they may goe into the townes & villages
 round about & lodge, & get meate: for we are
 heare in a desert place. *But he said vnto them, 13
 Giue ye them to eat. And they said, we haue no
 mo but 5. loanes & 2. fishes, except we shold go
 & bye meat for all this people. *For they were 14
 about five thousand me. Then he said to his dis-
 ciples. Cause them to sit down by fifties in a co-
 mpany. *And they did so, & caused al to sit down. 15
 Then he took the 5. loanes, & the 2. fishes, & 16
 looked vp to heauē, & blessed them, & brake, &
 gaue to the disciples, to set before the people.
 So they did all eate, & were satisfied: & there 17
 was take vp of that remained to them, 12. bas-
 kets full of broken meat. *And it came to passe 18
 as he was alone praying, his disciples were with
 him: & he asked them saying, Whome say the
 people that I am? *They answered, & said, Iohn 19
 Baptist: & other say, Elias: & some say, that one
 of the old Prophets is risen again. *And he said 20
 vnto them, But whome say ye that I am? Pe-
 ter answered, & said, That Christ of God, *And 21
 he warned & commiaded them, that they shold
 tell that to no man, *Saying, The Sonne of mā 22
 must suffer many things, & be reprooued of the
 Elders, & of the hie Priests, & Scribes, and be
 shaine, & the third day rise againe. *And he said 23
 to them all, If any man will come after me, let
 him deny himselfe, & take vp his crosse daily &
 follow

S. IULI.

- 24 folow me. * For whofoeuer wil faue his life, ſhal
 loſe it: & whofoeuer ſhall loſe his life for my
 25 ſake, the ſame ſhal ſaue it. * For what auantage
 it a man, if he win the whole world, & deſtroy
 26 himſelfe, or loſe himſelfe? * For whofoeuer ſhall
 be aſhamed of me, & of my words, of him ſhall
 the Sonne of man bee aſhamed, when he ſhall
 come in his glory, & *in the glory* of the Father,
 27 & of the holy Angels. * And I tel you of a ſure
 ty, there be ſome ſtanding here, which ſhall taſte
 of death, till they haue ſeene the kingdom
 28 of God. * And it came to paſſe about an eight
 dayes after thoſe wordes, that he tooke Peter
 and Iohn, and Iames, & went vp into a moun-
 29 taine to pray. * And as he praied, the faſhion
 of his countenance was changed, and his rai-
 30 ment was white and glistered. * And behold,
 31 two men talked with him, which were Moſes &
 Elias. * Which appeared in glory, & told of his
 departing, which he ſhould accompliſh at Hieru-
 32 ſalem. * But Peter and they that were with
 him, were heauie with ſleepe, and when they a-
 woke, they ſaw his glory, & the two men ſtan-
 33 ding with him. * And it came to paſſe, as they
 departed from him, Peter laid vnto Ieſus, Ma-
 ſter, it is good for vs to be here: let vs therefore
 make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one
 for Moſes, & one for Elias, and wiſt not what he
 34 ſaide. * While hee thus ſpake, there came a
 cloude and ouerſhadowed them, & they feared
 35 when they were entring into the cloude. * And
 there came a voice out of the cloude, ſaying,

CHAP. IX.

This is that my beloued Sone, heate him. * And 36
 when the voyce was past, Iesus was found alone:
 and they kept it close, & tolde no man in those
 dayes any of those things which they had seen.
 * And it came to passe on the next day, as they 37
 came downe from the mountain, much people
 met him. * And behold, a man of the company 38
 cryed out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, beholde
 my sonne: for he is all that I haue. * And loe, a 39
 spirit taketh him, & suddenly he cryeth, and he
 teareth him, that he someth & hardly departeth
 from him, when he hath bruised him. * Nowe I 40
 haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but
 they could not. * Then Iesus answered, & said, 41
 O generation faithlesse, & crooked, howe long
 will I be with you, and suffer you? bring
 thy sonne hither. * And whiles he was yet co- 42
 ming, the deuill rent him, & tare him: and Iesus
 rebuked the vncleane spirit, & healed the child,
 & deliuered him to his father. * And they were 43
 amazed at the mightie power of God: and
 while they wondered at all things, which Iesus
 did, he said vnto his disciples, * Marke these 44
 wordes diligently: for it shall come to passe,
 that the Sonne of man shall be deliuered into
 the hands of men. * But they vnderstood not 45
 that worde: for it was hid from them, so that
 they could not perceiue it: and they feared to
 aske him of that worde. * Then there arose a 46
 contention among them, which of them should
 be the greatest. * When Iesus saw the thoughts 47
 of their heartes, he tooke a little childe, and set

- 48 him by him, * And said vnto them, Whoso receiveth this little child in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among
 49 you all, he shall be great. * And Iohn answered & said, Master, we sawe one casting out devils in thy Name, & we forbade him, because he followeth ~~the~~ not with vs. * Then Iesus saide vnto
 50 him, Forbid ye him not: for he that is not against vs, is with vs. * And it came to passe in the dayes, were accomplished, that he should be
 51 receiued vp, he settled him selfe fully to goe to Hierusalem. * And sent messengers before him & they went & entred into a towne of the Samaritanes,
 52 to prepare him lodging. * But they would not receive him, because his behaviour was, as though he would goe to Hierusalem. * And
 53 when his disciples, James and Iohn sawe it, they said, Lorde, wilt thou that we commaund, that fire come downe from heauen, & consume them, even as Elias did? * But Iesus turned about and
 54 rebuked them, & said, Ye knowe not of what spirit ye are. * For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. Then
 55 they went to another towne. * And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certaine man said vnto him, I will followe thee, Lorde,
 56 whithersoever thou goest. * And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes have holes, and the birdes of the heauen nestes, but the Sonne of man hath
 57 not whereon to lay his head. * But he said vnto another, Follow me. And the same said, Lorde,

CHAP. X

60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100
 101
 102
 103
 104
 105
 106
 107
 108
 109
 110
 111
 112
 113
 114
 115
 116
 117
 118
 119
 120
 121
 122
 123
 124
 125
 126
 127
 128
 129
 130
 131
 132
 133
 134
 135
 136
 137
 138
 139
 140
 141
 142
 143
 144
 145
 146
 147
 148
 149
 150
 151
 152
 153
 154
 155
 156
 157
 158
 159
 160
 161
 162
 163
 164
 165
 166
 167
 168
 169
 170
 171
 172
 173
 174
 175
 176
 177
 178
 179
 180
 181
 182
 183
 184
 185
 186
 187
 188
 189
 190
 191
 192
 193
 194
 195
 196
 197
 198
 199
 200
 201
 202
 203
 204
 205
 206
 207
 208
 209
 210
 211
 212
 213
 214
 215
 216
 217
 218
 219
 220
 221
 222
 223
 224
 225
 226
 227
 228
 229
 230
 231
 232
 233
 234
 235
 236
 237
 238
 239
 240
 241
 242
 243
 244
 245
 246
 247
 248
 249
 250
 251
 252
 253
 254
 255
 256
 257
 258
 259
 260
 261
 262
 263
 264
 265
 266
 267
 268
 269
 270
 271
 272
 273
 274
 275
 276
 277
 278
 279
 280
 281
 282
 283
 284
 285
 286
 287
 288
 289
 290
 291
 292
 293
 294
 295
 296
 297
 298
 299
 300
 301
 302
 303
 304
 305
 306
 307
 308
 309
 310
 311
 312
 313
 314
 315
 316
 317
 318
 319
 320
 321
 322
 323
 324
 325
 326
 327
 328
 329
 330
 331
 332
 333
 334
 335
 336
 337
 338
 339
 340
 341
 342
 343
 344
 345
 346
 347
 348
 349
 350
 351
 352
 353
 354
 355
 356
 357
 358
 359
 360
 361
 362
 363
 364
 365
 366
 367
 368
 369
 370
 371
 372
 373
 374
 375
 376
 377
 378
 379
 380
 381
 382
 383
 384
 385
 386
 387
 388
 389
 390
 391
 392
 393
 394
 395
 396
 397
 398
 399
 400
 401
 402
 403
 404
 405
 406
 407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525
 526
 527
 528
 529
 530
 531
 532
 533
 534
 535
 536
 537
 538
 539
 540
 541
 542
 543
 544
 545
 546
 547
 548
 549
 550
 551
 552
 553
 554
 555
 556
 557
 558
 559
 560
 561
 562
 563
 564
 565
 566
 567
 568
 569
 570
 571
 572
 573
 574
 575
 576
 577
 578
 579
 580
 581
 582
 583
 584
 585
 586
 587
 588
 589
 590
 591
 592
 593
 594
 595
 596
 597
 598
 599
 600
 601
 602
 603
 604
 605
 606
 607
 608
 609
 610
 611
 612
 613
 614
 615
 616
 617
 618
 619
 620
 621
 622
 623
 624
 625
 626
 627
 628
 629
 630
 631
 632
 633
 634
 635
 636
 637
 638
 639
 640
 641
 642
 643
 644
 645
 646
 647
 648
 649
 650
 651
 652
 653
 654
 655
 656
 657
 658
 659
 660
 661
 662
 663
 664
 665
 666
 667
 668
 669
 670
 671
 672
 673
 674
 675
 676
 677
 678
 679
 680
 681
 682
 683
 684
 685
 686
 687
 688
 689
 690
 691
 692
 693
 694
 695
 696
 697
 698
 699
 700
 701
 702
 703
 704
 705
 706
 707
 708
 709
 710
 711
 712
 713
 714
 715
 716
 717
 718
 719
 720
 721
 722
 723
 724
 725
 726
 727
 728
 729
 730
 731
 732
 733
 734
 735
 736
 737
 738
 739
 740
 741
 742
 743
 744
 745
 746
 747
 748
 749
 750
 751
 752
 753
 754
 755
 756
 757
 758
 759
 760
 761
 762
 763
 764
 765
 766
 767
 768
 769
 770
 771
 772
 773
 774
 775
 776
 777
 778
 779
 780
 781
 782
 783
 784
 785
 786
 787
 788
 789
 790
 791
 792
 793
 794
 795
 796
 797
 798
 799
 800
 801
 802
 803
 804
 805
 806
 807
 808
 809
 810
 811
 812
 813
 814
 815
 816
 817
 818
 819
 820
 821
 822
 823
 824
 825
 826
 827
 828
 829
 830
 831
 832
 833
 834
 835
 836
 837
 838
 839
 840
 841
 842
 843
 844
 845
 846
 847
 848
 849
 850
 851
 852
 853
 854
 855
 856
 857
 858
 859
 860
 861
 862
 863
 864
 865
 866
 867
 868
 869
 870
 871
 872
 873
 874
 875
 876
 877
 878
 879
 880
 881
 882
 883
 884
 885
 886
 887
 888
 889
 890
 891
 892
 893
 894
 895
 896
 897
 898
 899
 900
 901
 902
 903
 904
 905
 906
 907
 908
 909
 910
 911
 912
 913
 914
 915
 916
 917
 918
 919
 920
 921
 922
 923
 924
 925
 926
 927
 928
 929
 930
 931
 932
 933
 934
 935
 936
 937
 938
 939
 940
 941
 942
 943
 944
 945
 946
 947
 948
 949
 950
 951
 952
 953
 954
 955
 956
 957
 958
 959
 960
 961
 962
 963
 964
 965
 966
 967
 968
 969
 970
 971
 972
 973
 974
 975
 976
 977
 978
 979
 980
 981
 982
 983
 984
 985
 986
 987
 988
 989
 990
 991
 992
 993
 994
 995
 996
 997
 998
 999
 1000
 1001
 1002
 1003
 1004
 1005
 1006
 1007
 1008
 1009
 1010
 1011
 1012
 1013
 1014
 1015
 1016
 1017
 1018
 1019
 1020
 1021
 1022
 1023
 1024
 1025
 1026
 1027
 1028
 1029
 1030
 1031
 1032
 1033
 1034
 1035
 1036
 1037
 1038
 1039
 1040
 1041
 1042
 1043
 1044
 1045
 1046
 1047
 1048
 1049
 1050
 1051
 1052
 1053
 1054
 1055
 1056
 1057
 1058
 1059
 1060
 1061
 1062
 1063
 1064
 1065
 1066
 1067
 1068
 1069
 1070
 1071
 1072
 1073
 1074
 1075
 1076
 1077
 1078
 1079
 1080
 1081
 1082
 1083
 1084
 1085
 1086
 1087
 1088
 1089
 1090
 1091
 1092
 1093
 1094
 1095
 1096
 1097
 1098
 1099
 1100
 1101
 1102
 1103
 1104
 1105
 1106
 1107
 1108
 1109
 1110
 1111
 1112
 1113
 1114
 1115
 1116
 1117
 1118
 1119
 1120
 1121
 1122
 1123
 1124
 1125
 1126
 1127
 1128
 1129
 1130
 1131
 1132
 1133
 1134
 1135
 1136
 1137
 1138
 1139
 1140
 1141
 1142
 1143
 1144
 1145
 1146
 1147
 1148
 1149
 1150
 1151
 1152
 1153
 1154
 1155
 1156
 1157
 1158
 1159
 1160
 1161
 1162
 1163
 1164
 1165
 1166
 1167
 1168
 1169
 1170
 1171
 1172
 1173
 1174
 1175
 1176
 1177
 1178
 1179
 1180
 1181
 1182
 1183
 1184
 1185
 1186
 1187
 1188
 1189
 1190
 1191
 1192
 1193
 1194
 1195
 1196
 1197
 1198
 1199
 1200
 1201
 1202
 1203
 1204
 1205
 1206
 1207
 1208
 1209
 1210
 1211
 1212
 1213
 1214
 1215
 1216
 1217
 1218
 1219
 1220
 1221
 1222
 1223
 1224
 1225
 1226
 1227
 1228
 1229
 1230
 1231
 1232
 1233
 1234
 1235
 1236
 1237
 1238
 1239
 1240
 1241
 1242
 1243
 1244
 1245
 1246
 1247
 1248
 1249
 1250
 1251
 1252
 1253
 1254
 1255
 1256
 1257
 1258
 1259
 1260
 1261
 1262
 1263
 1264
 1265
 1266
 1267
 1268
 1269
 1270
 1271
 1272
 1273
 1274
 1275
 1276
 1277
 1278
 1279
 1280
 1281
 1282
 1283
 1284
 1285
 1286
 1287
 1288
 1289
 1290
 1291
 1292
 1293
 1294
 1295
 1296
 1297
 1298
 1299
 1300
 1301
 1302
 1303
 1304
 1305
 1306
 1307
 1308
 1309
 1310
 1311
 1312
 1313
 1314
 1315
 1316
 1317
 1318
 1319
 1320
 1321
 1322
 1323
 1324
 1325
 1326
 1327
 1328
 1329
 1330
 1331
 1332
 1333
 1334
 1335
 1336
 1337
 1338
 1339
 1340
 1341
 1342
 1343
 1344
 1345
 1346
 1347
 1348
 1349
 1350
 1351
 1352
 1353
 1354
 1355
 1356
 1357
 1358
 1359
 1360
 1361
 1362
 1363
 1364
 1365
 1366
 1367
 1368
 1369
 1370
 1371
 1372
 1373
 1374
 1375
 1376
 1377
 1378
 1379
 1380
 1381
 1382
 1383
 1384
 1385
 1386
 1387
 1388
 1389
 1390
 1391
 1392
 1393
 1394
 1395
 1396
 1397
 1398
 1399
 1400
 1401
 1402
 1403
 1404
 1405
 1406
 1407
 1408
 1409
 1410
 1411
 1412
 1413
 1414
 1415
 1416
 1417
 1418
 1419
 1420
 1421
 1422
 1423
 1424
 1425
 1426
 1427
 1428
 1429
 1430
 1431
 1432
 1433
 1434
 1435
 1436
 1437
 1438
 1439
 1440
 1441
 1442
 1443
 1444
 1445
 1446
 1447
 1448
 1449
 1450
 1451
 1452
 1453
 1454
 1455
 1456
 1457
 1458
 1459
 1460
 1461
 1462
 1463
 1464
 1465
 1466
 1467
 1468
 1469
 1470
 1471
 1472
 1473
 1474
 1475
 1476
 1477
 1478
 1479
 1480
 1481
 1482
 1483
 1484
 1485
 1486
 1487
 1488
 1489
 1490
 1491
 1492
 1493
 1494
 1495
 1496
 1497
 1498
 1499
 1500
 1501
 1502
 1503
 1504
 1505
 1506
 1507
 1508
 1509
 1510
 1511
 1512
 1513
 1514
 1515
 1516
 1517
 1518
 1519
 1520
 1521
 1522
 1523
 1524
 1525
 1526
 1527
 1528
 1529
 1530
 1531
 1532
 1533
 1534
 1535
 1536

S. LUKE

- 11 the streetes of the same, & say, * Euen the very
 12 dust, which cleaueth on vs of your city, we will
 13 off against you: notwithstanding knoweth
 14 that the kingdom of God was come neere
 15 to you. * For I say vnto you, that it shal be
 16 easier in that day for them of Sodom, then for
 17 that citie. * Wo be to thee, Chorazin: wo be to
 18 thee, Bethsaida: for if the miracles had bin done
 19 in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue bene done in
 20 you, they had a great while agoone repented, sit-
 21 ting in sackcloth and ashes. * Therefore it shal
 22 be easier for Tyrus & Sidon, at the iudgement,
 23 then for you. * And thou, Capernaum, which art
 24 exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hel-
 25 le. * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that
 26 despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that des-
 27 piset me, despiseth him that sent me. * And the
 28 sentence turned againe with ioy, saying, Lorde,
 29 euen the deuils are subdued to vs through thy
 30 Name. * And he said vnto them, I saw Satan, like
 31 lightning fall downe from heauen. * Behold, I
 32 giue vnto you power to tread on serpents, and
 33 scorpions, & ouer all the power of the enemy,
 34 & nothing shall hurt you. * Neuertheles, in this
 35 reioyce not, that the spirites are subdued vnto
 36 you: but rather reioyce, because your names are
 37 written in heauen. * That same houre reioyced
 38 Iesus in the Spirit, and said, I confesse vnto thee,
 39 Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast
 40 hid these things from the wise & vnderstanding,
 41 & hast reuelled them to babes: euen so, Father,
 42 because it so pleased thee. * All things are giuen

CHAP. XL

of my Father & no man knoweth who the
 Sonne is, but the Father: neither who the Fa-
 ther is, save the Sonne, & he to whom the Sonne
 will reveile him. * And he turned to his disci- 23
 ples, & said secretly, Blessed are the eyes, which
 see that ye see. * For I tell you, that many Pro- 24
 phets & Kings have desired to see those things,
 which ye see, & have not seene them: & to heare
 those things which ye heare, & have not heard
 them. * Then behold, a certaine Lawyer stood 25
 up, & tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I
 do to inherite eternall life? * And he said vnto 26
 him, What is written in the Law? how reade-
 st thou? And he answered, & said, Thou shalt love 27
 thy Lorde God with all thine heart, & with all
 thy soule, and with all thy strength and with al-
 thy thought, & thy neighbour as thy selfe, * The 28
 Lawe said vnto him, Thou hast answered right:
 thus do, and thou shalt liue. * But he willing to 29
 justify himselfe, said vnto Iesus, Who is then
 my neighbour? * And Iesus answered, and said, 30
 A certaine man went downe from Hierusalem
 to Iericho, & fell among thornes, and they rob-
 bed him of his rayment, and wounded him, and
 departed, leaving him halfe dead. * Nowe so it 31
 fell out, that there came down a certaine Priest
 that same way, & when he saw him, he passed by
 on the other side. * And likewise also a Levite, 32
 when he was come neere to the place, went and
 looked on him, and passed by on the other side.
 * Then a certaine Samaritane, as he journeyed, 33
 came neere vnto him, and when he saw him, he
 had

S. L V K E.

34 had compassion on him, * And went to him,
 bound vp his wounds, and powred in oyle
 wine, & put him on his owne beast, & brought
 35 him to an Inne, & made prouisiō for him. * And
 on the morow when he departed, he tooke out
 two pence, & gaue them to the hoste, and saide
 vnto him, Take care of him, & whatsoeuer thou
 spendest more, when I come againe, I will
 36 compensate thee. * Which nowe of these three
 thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell
 37 among the thieues? * And he saide, He that
 shewed mercie on him. Thē said Iesus vnto him,
 38 Go, & do thou likewise. * Now it came to passe
 as they went, that he entred into a certaine
 towne, & a certaine woman, named Martha, re-
 39 ceiued him into her house. * And she had a sis-
 ter called Marie, which also sate at Iesus feet,
 40 & heard his preaching. * But Martha was com-
 bred about much seruing, and came to him, and
 said, Master, dost thou not care that my sister
 hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore
 41 that she helpe me. * And Iesus answered, & said
 vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou carest, & art trou-
 42 bled about many things: * But one thing is
 needful, Marie hath chosen the good part, which
 shall not be taken away from her.

C H A P. XI.

1 **A**ND so it was, that as he was praying in a
 certaine place. when he ceased, one of his dis-
 ciples said vnto him, Lorde, teach vs to pray, as
 2 Iohn also taught his disciples. * And he said vnto
 them, When ye pray, say, Our Father, which

CHAPTER XI.

art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy king-
 dome come: Let thy will be done, euen in
 earth, as it is in heauen. * Our daily bread giue 3
 vs for the day: * And forgie vs our finnes: for
 euen we forgie euery man that is indetted to
 vs: And lead vs not into temptation: but de-
 liuer vs from euill. * Moreover he saide vnto 5
 them: Which of you shall haue a friend, & shal
 go to him at midnight, & say vnto him, Friend,
 lend me three loaves? * For a friend of mine is 6
 come out of the way to me, and I haue nothing
 to set before him: * And he within should an- 7
 swere & say, Trouble me not: the doore is now
 shut, & my children are with me in bed: I can
 not rise & giue them to thee. * I say vnto you, 8
 though he would not arise & giue him, because
 he is his friend, yet doubtles because of his im-
 portunitie, he would arise, & giue him as many
 as he needed. * And I say vnto you, Aske, & it 9
 shalbe giuen you: seeke, & ye shal find: knock, &
 it shalbe opened vnto you. * For euery one that 10
 asketh, receiueth: & he that seeketh, findeth: & to
 him that knocketh, it shalbe opened. * If a sonne 11
 shal ask bread of any of you that is a father, wil
 he giue him a stone? or if he aske a fish, will he
 be a fish giue him a serpent? * Or if he aske an 12
 ege, will he giue him a scorpion? * If ye then 13
 which are euill, can giue good gifts vnto your
 children, howe much more shall your heauenly
 Father giue the holy Ghost to them that desire
 it? * Then he cast out a deuill which was 14
 dumb: & when the deuill was gone out, the
 dumme

S. I V K E

- 15 dumine spake, and the people wondered. * But
 some of the said, He casteth out devils through
 16 Beelzebub the chiefe of the devils. * And other
 tempted him, seeking of him a signe from hea-
 17 ven. * But he knew their thoughts & said vnto
 them, Every kingdome deuided against it selfe,
 shalbe desolate, and an house deuided against an
 18 house, falleth. * So if Satan also be deuided a-
 gainst him selfe, howe shall his kingdom stand,
 because ye say that I cast out devils through
 19 Beelzebub? * If I through Beelzebub cast out
 devils, by whome doe your children cast them
 20 out? Therefore shall they be your iudges. * But
 if I by the finger of God cast out devils, doubt-
 lesse the kingdome of God is come vnto you.
 21 * When a strong mā armed, keepeth his palace,
 22 the things that he possesseth, are in peace. * But
 when a stronger then he, commeth vpon him, &
 ouercommeth him: he taketh from him all his
 armour wherein he trusted, and deuiddeth his
 23 spoyles. * He that is not with me, is against me,
 and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.
 24 * When the vnclean spirit is gone out of a mā,
 he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: &
 when he findeth none, he saith, I will returne
 25 vnto mine house whence I came out. * And
 when he commeth, he findeth it swept & gar-
 26 shed. * Then goeth he, & taketh to him seven o-
 ther spirits worse then him selfe: and they enter
 in, & dwell there, so the last state of that mā is
 27 worse then the first. * And it came to passe
 hee saide these things, a certaine woman of the
 company

C H A P. XI.

company lifted up her voyce, & said vnto him,
 blessed is the wombe that bare thee, & the paps
 which thou hast sucked. * But he said, Yea, rather 28
 blessed are they that heare the word of God, &
 keepe it. * And when the people were gathe- 29
 red thicke together, he began to say, This is a
 wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there
 shall no signe be giuen them, but the signe of
 Ionas the Prophet. * For as Ionas was a signe 30
 to the Nininites: so shall also the Sonne of
 man be to this generation. * The Queene of the 31
 South shall rise in iudgement, with the men of
 this generation, & shall cōdemne them: for she
 came from the vtmost partes of the earth to
 heare the wisdome of Solomon, and behold, a
 greater then Solomon is here. * The men of Ni- 32
 nitue shall rise in iudgement with this generati-
 on, & shall condemne it: for they repented at
 the preaching of Ionas: & behold, a greater then
 Ionas is here. * No man when he hath lighted a 33
 candle, putteth it in a priuy place, neither vnder
 a bushel: but on a candlesticke, that they which
 come in, may see the light. * The light of the 34
 body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is
 single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine
 eye be euil, then thy body is darke. * Take heed 35
 therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not
 takenesse. * If therefore thy whole body shall 36
 be light, hauing no part darke, then shall all be
 light, euen as when a candle doth light thee
 with the brightnes. * And as he spake, a certaine 37
 man besought him to dine with him: and he
 went

S. L V K E.

- 38 went in, & sate downe at table. * And when
Pharise saw it, he marueiled that he had not
39 walhed before dinner. * And the Lord said
him, Indeede ye Pharises make cleane the
side of the cup, & of the platter: but the inward
40 part is full of rauening and wickednesse. *
fooles, did not he that made that which is
41 out, make that which is within also? * There-
fore, giue almes of those things which ye
haue, and beholde, all things shalbe cleane
42 you. * But woe be to you, Pharises: for yette
the mynt, & the rewe, & all manner herbes, ye
passe ouer iudgement & the loue of God: this
ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left
43 other vndone. * Woe be to you, Pharises: for ye
loue the vppermost seates in the Synagogues,
44 gretings in the markets. * Woe be to you, Scri-
& Pharises, hypocrites: for ye are as graues which
appeare not, & the men that walke ouer them,
45 perceiue not. * Then answered one of the Law-
yers, & said vnto him, Master, thus saying thou
46 puttest vs to rebuke also. * And he said, Woe
to you also, ye Lawyers: for ye lade men with
burdens grienous to be borne & ye your selues
touch not the burdenes with one of your fingers.
47 * Woe be to you: for ye build the sepulchres of
48 the Prophets; & your fathers killed them. * True-
ly ye beare wienes, & allow the deedes of your
fathers: for they killed them, & ye build their
49 sepulchres. * Therefore saide the wisdome of
God, I wil send them Prophets & Apostles
50 of them they shal slay, & persecute away. * The

C H A P. XII.

the blood of all the Prophets, shedde from the
 foundation of the worlde, may be required of
 this generation, * From the blood of Abel vn- 51
 to the blood of Zacharias, which was slaine be-
 twene the altar and the Temple: verely I say
 vnto you; it shalbe required of this generation.
 * Wo be to you, Lawyers: for ye haue taken a- 52
 way the key of knowledge: ye entred not in
 your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade.
 * And as he saide these thinges vnto them, the 53
 Scribes & Pharises began to vrge him sore, and
 to prouoke him to speake of many thinges,
 * Laying waite for him, and seeking to catch 54
 some thing of his mouth, whereby they might
 accuse him.

C H A P. XII.

IN the meane time, there gathered together
 an innumerable multitude of people, so that
 they trode one another: & he began to say vn-
 to his disciples first, Take heede to your selues
 of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocri-
 sy. * For there is nothing couered, that shal not 3
 be reuelled: neither hid, that shal not be know-
 en. * Wherefore whatsoener ye haue spoken in 3
 darkness, it shalbe heard in the light: and that
 which ye haue spoken in the eare, in secret pla-
 ces, shalbe preached on the houses. * And I say 4
 vnto you, my friends, be not afraid of them that
 kill the body, and after that are not able to doe
 any more. * But I will forewarne you, whom ye 5
 shall feare: feare him, which after he hath kil-
 led the body, hath power to cast into hel: yea, I say vnto
 you,

S. L V R E.

- 6 you, him feare. * Are not five sparowes bought
for two farthings, *and* yet not one of them
- 7 forgotten before God? * Yea, and all the haire
of your head are numbred: feare not therefore
- 8 ye are more of value then many sparowes. * Al-
so I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me
before men, him shall the Sonne of man con-
- 9 fesse also before the Angels of God. * But he
that shall denie me before men, shall be denied
- 10 before the Angels of God. * And whosoever
shall speake a word against the Sonne of man,
it shall be forgiven him: but vnto him, that shall
blaspheme the holy Ghost, it shall not be for-
- 11 giuen. * And when they shall bring you vnto the
Synagogues, & vnto the rulers & princes, take
no thought how, or what thing ye shall answer,
- 12 or what ye shall speake. * For the holy Ghost
shall teach you in the same houre, what ye
- 13 ought to say. * And one of the company saide
vnto him, Master, bid my brother denide the in-
- 14 heritance with me. * And he saide vnto him,
Man, who made me a iudge, or a deuider of
- 15 you? * Wherefore he saide vnto them, Take
heede, & beware of couetousnesse: for though
a man haue aboundance, yet his life standeth
- 16 not in his riches. * And he put forth a parable
vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich
- 17 man brought forth fruites plenteously. * There-
fore he thought with him selfe, saying, What
shall I doe, because I haue not *room*, where I
- 18 may lay vp my fruites? * And he said, This will
I do, I will pull downe my barnes, and build
greater.

CHAP. XII

greater, & therem will I gather all my frutes, &
my goods. *And I will say to my soule, Soule, 19
thou hast much goods laid vp for many yeres:
lidle at ease, eate, drink, & take thy pastime. *But 20
god said vnto him, O soule, this night wil they
fetch away thy soule fro thee: then whose shall
those things be which thou hast provided? *So 21
is hee that gathereth riches to himselfe. and is
not rich in God. *And he spake vnto his disci- 22
ples, Therefore I say vnto you, Take no thought
for your life, what ye shal eate: neither for your
body, what ye shall put on. *The life is more 23
then meat: & the body *more* then the raiment.
*Consider the rauens: for they neither sow nor 24
reape: which neither haue storehouse nor baine,
& yet God feedeth them: how much more are
ye better then soules? *And which of you with 25
taking thought, can adde to his stature one cu-
bit? *If yee then be not able to doe the least 26
thing. why take ye thought for the remnant?
*Consider the lilies how they grow: they labour 27
not, neither spin they: yet I say vnto you, that
Solomon himselfe in all his royaltie was not
clothed like one of these. *If then God so cloth 28
the grasse which is to day in the field, & to mo-
row is cast into the oven, how much more will
he cloth you, O ye of little faith? *I therefore ask 29
not what ye shall eate or what ye shall drinke,
neither hang you in suspēcie. *For al such things 30
the people of the world seek for: & your Father
knoweth that ye haue neede of these thinges.
*But rather seeke ye after the kingdom of God, 31

S. L V K E.

- 31 & all these things shalbe cast vpon you. * Feare
not, little flocke: for it is your Fathers pleasure,
32 to giue you the kingdome. * Sel that ye haue, &
giue almes: make you bags which wax not old,
a treasure that can neuer faile in heauen, where
no these commeth, neither moth corrupteth.
33 * For where your treasure is, there will your
34 harts be also. * Let your loines be girded about,
35 & your lights be burning, * And yee your selues
36 like vnto men that wait for their master, when
he wil returne from the wedding, that when he
commeth & knocketh, they may open vnto him
37 immediately. * Blessed are those seruants, whom
the Lord when he commeth shal finde waking.
Verely I say vnto you, hee will gird him selfe a-
bout, & make them to sit down at table & wil
38 come forth, & serue the. * And if he come in the
secōd watch, or come in the third watch, & shal
39 finde them so, blessed are those seruants. * Now
vnderstand this, that if the good mā of the house
had known at what houre the thiefe wold haue
come, hee wold haue watched, and wold not
haue suffered his house to be digged through.
40 * Be ye also prepared therfore: for the Sonne of
man will come at an houre when ye think not.
41 * Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou
42 this parable vnto vs, or enē to all? * And the Lord
said, Who is a faithfull stewarde, & wise, whome
the master shal make ruler ouer his household, to
43 giue them their portiō of meat in season? * Blef-
sed is that seruant, whom his master when he com-
44 meth, shal finde so doing. * Of a truth I say vnto
you,

CHAP. XII.

you, that he wil make him ruler ouer al he hath.
 *But if that seruant say in his heart, My master
 doth defer his coming, & shall begin to smite
 the seruants, & maidens, & to eat, & drink, & be
 drunken: *The master of that seruant will come
 in a day when he thinketh not, and at an houre
 when he is not ware of, & will cut him off, and
 gine him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.
 *And that seruant that knew his masters wil, &
 prepared not him selfe, neither did according to
 his will, shalbe beaten with many stripes. * But
 he that knew it not, & yet did commit things
 worthy of stripes, shalbe beatē with few stripes:
 for vnto whomsoener much is giuē, of him shal
 be much required, & to whom men much com-
 mit, the more of him wil they aske. *I am come
 to put fire on the earth, & what is my desire, if
 it be alreadie kindled? *Notwithstāding I must
 be baptized with a baptisme, & how am I grie-
 ued, til it be ended? *I thinke ye that I am come
 to giue peace on earth? I tel you nay, but rather
 debate. *For from henceforth there shalbe fire
 in one house devided, three against two, & two
 against three. * The father shalbe devided a-
 gainst the sonne, & the sonne against the father:
 the mother against the daughter, & the daughter
 against the mother: the mother in lawe against
 her daughter in law, and the daughter in lawe
 against her mother in lawe. * Then saide he to
 the people. When ye see a cloude rise out of
 the West, straightway ye say, A showre com-
 eth, and so it is. * And when ye see the South-
 winds

S. L V K E.

winde blow, ye say, that it will be hoate, and
 56 commeth to passe. * Hipocrites, ye can discern
 the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why
 57 discern ye not this time? * Yea and why iudge
 58 ye not of your selues what is right? * While
 thou goest with thine aduersarie to the ruler,
 as thou art in the way, giue diligence in the
 way, that thou maiest be deliuered from him,
 least he draw thee to the iudge, and the iudge
 deliuer thee to the iayler, & the iayler cast thee
 59 into prison. * I tell thee, thou shalt not de-
 part thence, till thou hast paid the vtmost
 mite.

C H A P. XIII.

1 **T**Here were certaine men present at the same
 season, that shewed him of the Galileans,
 whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sa-
 2 crifices. * And Iesus answered, and saide vnto
 them, Suppose ye, that these Galileans were
 greater sinners then all the *other* Galileans, be-
 3 cause they suffered such things? * I tell you, nay
 but except ye amende your liues, yee shall all
 4 likewise perish. * Or thinke you that those eigh-
 teene, vpon whom the tower in Siloam fel, and
 5 slew the, were sinners aboue all men that dwel
 in Hierusalem? * I tel you nay: but except ye a-
 6 mend your liues, ye shal al likewise perish. * Hee
 spak also this parable, A certaine man had a fig-
 tree plâted in his vineyard: & he came & sought
 7 fruit thereon, & found none. * Then saide he to
 the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, this thre
 yeres haue I come & sought fruit of this figtree.

CHAP. XIII.

and hee saide none cut it downe: why keepeth it al-
 so the ground barren? * And he answered, and
 said vnto him, Lord, let it alone this yere also, til
 I dig round about it, & doing it. * And if it beare
 fruite, well: if not, then after thou shalt cut it
 downe. * And hee taught in one of the Syna-
 gogues on the Sabbath day. * And behold, there
 was a woman, which had a spirit of infirmitie
 eightene yeres, & was bowed together, & could
 not lift vp *her selfe* in any wise. * When Iesus
 saw her, he called her to him, and saide to her,
 Woman, thou art loosed fro thy disease. * And
 he laide his hands on her. & immediatelie shee
 was made straight again & glorified God. * And
 the ruler of the Synagogue answered with in-
 dignation, because that Iesus had healed on the
 Sabbath day, & said vnto the people, There are
 six daies in which men ought to work: in them
 therefore come & be healed, & not on the Sab-
 bath day. * Then answered him the Lord, & said,
 Hypocrite, doth not ech one of you on the Sab-
 bath day loose his ox or his asse from the stall,
 & lead him away to the water? * And ought not
 this daughter of Abraham, whome Satan had
 bound, loe, eightene yeres, be loosed from this
 bond on the Sabbath day? * And when he said
 these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed:
 but all the people reioyced at all the excellent
 things, that were done by him. * Then saide he,
 What is the kingdome of God like? or where-
 unto shall I compare it? * It is like a graine of
 mustard seed, which a man tooke and sowed in

S. I V K E.

his garden,& it grew,& waxed a great tree, and
the fowles of the heauen made nests in the brai-
ches thereof. * And againe he said, Wherelinto
25 shall I liken the kingdome of God? * It is like
26 leauen, which a woman tooke, & hid in three
27 pecks of flowre, till all was leauened. * And hee
went through all cities & townes, teaching, and
28 iourning towards Hierusalem. * Then said one
vnto him, Lord *are there* few that shalbe saved
29 And he saide vnto them, * Striue to enter in at
the strait gate: for many, I say vnto you, wil seek
30 to enter in, & shal not be able. * Whē the good
man of the house is risen vp, & hath shut to the
doore, & ye begin to stand without, & to knock
at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs, &
he shall answer and say vnto you, I knowe not
whence ye are. * Then shall ye begin to say, We
haue eaten & drunke in thy presence, and thou
hast taught in our streetes. * But hee shall say,
tell you, I knowe ye not whence ye are: depart
from me, all ye workers of iniquitie. * There
shalbe weeping & gnashing of teeth when ye
shall see Abraham, & Isaac, & Iacob, and all the
Prophets in the kingdome of God, and yoe
selues thrust out of doores. * Then shall come
31 *many* from the East, and from the West, and
from the North, and from the South, and shall
fit at table in the kingdome of God. * And be-
hold, there are last, which shalbe first, and there
are first, which shalbe last. * The same day there
came certaine Pharises, and saide vnto him, De-
part, and goe hence: for Herod will kill thee.

* Then

C H A P. XIII.

* Then saide he vnto them, Goe ye and tel that
 soxe, Behold, I cast out deuils, and will heale still
 to day, and to morow, and the third day I shall
 be perfected. * Neuerthelesse I must walke to
 day, and to morow, and the day following: for
 it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out
 of Hierusalem. * O Hierusalem, Hierusalem,
 which killest the Prophets, and stonest them
 that are sent to thee, how often would I haue
 gathered thy children together, as the henne ga-
 thereth her brood vnder her wings, & ye would
 not. * Behold, your house is left vnto you de-
 solate: and verely I tell you, ye shall not see me
 vntill *the time* come that ye shall saie, Blessed is
 he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

C H A P. XIII.

ANd it came to passe that when he was en-
 tred into the house of one of the chief Pha-
 rises on the Sabbath day, to eat bread, they wat-
 ched him. * And beholde, there was a certaine
 man before him: which had the dropfie. * Then
 Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and
 Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the
 Sabbath day? * And they held their peac. Then
 he tooke him, and bealed him, and let him goe,
 * And answered them, saying, Which of you
 shall haue an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pit, and
 will not straightwaie pull him out on the Sab-
 bath day? * And they could not answer him a-
 gain to those things. * He spake also a para-
 ble to the ghestes, when he marked howe they
 thre out the chiefe roomes, & said vnto them,

S. L V K E.

- 8 * When thou shalt be bidden of any man to wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the chiefe place, least a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him, * And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, & thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roomie. * But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roomie, that when he that bade thee, cometh, he may say vnto thee, Friende, sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee. * For whosoever exalteth himselfe, shal be brought low, and he that humbleth himselfe, shal be exalted. * Then said he also to him that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or supper, call not thy friendes, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor the rich neighbours, least they also bid thee againe, and a recompense be made thee. * But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, and the blinde; * And thou shalt be blessed, because they cannot recompence thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the iust. * Now when one of them that sat at table, heard these things, he saide vnto him, Blessed is he that eateth bread in the kingdom of God. * Then said he to him, A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many, * And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are now ready. * But they all with one minde began to make excuse: The first saide vnto him, I have bought

CHAP. XIII.

bought a farme, & I must needes goe out & see
 I pray thee haue me excused. * And another 19
 saide, I haue bought five yoke of oxen, & I goe
 to prooue them: I pray thee haue me excused.
 * And another saide, I haue married a wife, and 20
 therefore I cannot come. * So the seruant retur- 21
 ned, and shewed his maister these things. Then
 was the good man of the house angrie, & saide
 to his seruāt, Go out quickly into the streetes &
 lanes of the citie, & bring in hither the poore,
 & the mainied, & the halt, and the blind. * And 22
 the seruant saide, Lorde, it is done as thou hast
 commaunded, & yet there is roome. * Then the 23
 Master said to the seruant, Goe out into the hie
 waies, & hedges, & cōpel them to come in, that
 mine house may be filled. * For I say vnto you, 24
 that none of those men which were bidden, shal
 taste of my supper. * Nowe there went great 25
 multitudes with him, & he turned & said vnto
 them, * If any man come to mee, & hate not his 26
 father, & mother, & wife, & children, & brethrē,
 & sisters: yea & his owne life also, he cannot be
 my discipule. * And whosoever beareth not his 27
 crosse, and commeth after mee, cannot be my
 discipule. * For which of you building a towre, 28
 sitteth not downe before, and counteth the
 cost, whether he haue sufficient to performe
 it? * Least that after he hath laide the founda- 29
 on, & is not able to performe it, all that behold
 it, begin to mocke him, * Saying, This man begā 30
 to build, & was not able to make an end? * Or 31
 what king going to make war against another
 king,

S. LVKE.

king, sitteth not downe first, & taketh counsell
whether he be able with ten thousand, to meet
him that commeth against him with 20. thou-
32 sand: * Or els while he is yet a great way off, he
33 sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace. * So
likewile whosoeniet he be of you that forsake
not all that he hath, he can not be my disci-
34 ple. * Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his savor,
35 wherewith shal it be salted: * It is neither meete
for the land, nor yet for the dounghil, but men
cast it out. He that hath eares to heare let him
heare.

C H A P. XV.

1 **T**Hen resorted vnto him al the Publicanes &
2 sinners, to heare him. * Therefore the Phari-
3 ses and Scribes murmured, saying, He receiue-
4 th sinners and eateth with them. * Then spake he
this parable to the, saying. * What man of you
having an hundred sheepe, if he lose one of the,
doth not leaue nintie & nine in the wilderness,
and go after that which is lost, vntill he find it
5 * And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his
6 shoulders with ioy. * And when he cometh
home, he calleth together his friendes & neigh-
bours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me: for
7 I haue found my sheepe which was lost. * I say
vnto you, that likewise ioy shall be in heauen
for one sinner that conuerteth, more then for
ninetie and nine iust men, which need none
8 mendment of life. * Either what woman hauing
ten groates, if shee lose one groate, doeth she
light a candle, and sweepe the house, and seek
diligent

CHAP. XV.

diligently till shee find it? *And when she hath 9
 found it, she calleth her friends, & neighbours,
 saying, Reioyce with me: for I haue found the
 groate which I had lost. * Likewise I say vnto 10
 you, there is ioy in the presence of the Angels
 of God, for one sinner that conuerteth. * He said 11
 moreouer, A certaine man had two sonnes.
 * And the younger of them saide to his father, 12
 Father, giue me the portion of the goods that
 falleth to me. So he deuided vnto them *his* sub-
 stance. * So not many daies after, when the yon- 13
 ger sonne had gathered all together, he tooke
 his iourney into a far country, and there he wa-
 sted his goods with riotous liuing. * Now whē 14
 he had spent all, there arose a great dearth tho-
 roughout that land: & he began to be in neces-
 sitie. * Then he went and claued to a citizen of 15
 that countrey, and he sent him to his farme, to
 feed swine. * And he would faine haue filled his 16
 bellie with the huskes, that the swine ate: but
 no man gaue *them* him. * Then he came to him 17
 selfe, and saide, Howe many hyred seruants at
 my fathers haue bread inough, & I die for hun-
 ger? * I wil rise and go to my father, & say vnto 18
 him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and
 before thee, * And am no more worthy to be 19
 called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired
 seruants. * So he arose and came to his father, & 20
 when he was yet a great way off, his father saw
 him, and had compassion, and ranne and fell on
 his neck, and kissed him. * And the sonne said vn- 21
 to him, Father I haue sinned against heauen, and
 before

S. L V K E.

before thee, and am no more worthy to be called
 thy sonne. *Then the father saide to his ser-
 uants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on
 him, and put a ring on his hand, & shoes on his
 feet, *And bring the fat calfe, & kill him, & let
 vs eat & be mery: * For this my son was dead,
 and is aliue againe: and he was lost, but he is
 found. And they began to be mery. *Now the
 elder brother was in the field, & when he came
 and drewe neere to the house, he heard melody
 and dauncing. *And called one of his seruants,
 and asked what those things meant, * And he
 said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy fa-
 ther hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath
 receiued him safe and sound. *Then he was an-
 gry, and would not goe in: therefore came his
 father out and intreated him. *But he answered
 & said to his father, Loe, these many yeres haue
 I done thee service, neither brake I at any time
 thy comandement, and yet thou neuer gauest
 me a kid, that I might make mery with my
 friends. *But whē this thy son was come, which
 hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou hast
 for his sake killed the fat calfe. *And he said vn-
 to him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, & al that
 I haue is thine. It was meete that we shoulde
 make mery, and be glad: for this thy brother
 was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was lost,
 but he is found.

C H A P. X V I.

A N D he said also vnto his disciples, There was
 a certaine rich man, which had a steward, &

CHAP. XVI.

he was accused vnto him, that he wasted his
 goods.*And he called him, and said vnto him, 2
 How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an ac-
 count of thy stewardship: for thou mayest bee
 no longer stewarde. * Then the stewarde saide 3
 within himselfe, What shall I doe? for my
 master taketh away from me the stewardship:
 I can not digge, & to begge I am ashamed.
 *I know what I will doe, that when I am put 4
 out of the stewardship, they may receiue me in-
 to their houses,*I then called he vnto him eue- 5
 ry one of his masters detters, and said vnto the
 first, How much owest thou vnto my master?
 *And he saide, An hundreth measures of oyle. 6
 And he saide to him, Take thy writing, and sit
 downe quickly and write fifty. * Then said he 7
 to another, How much owest thou? And he said,
 An hundreth measures of wheate. Then he said
 to him, Take thy writing, & write foure score.
 *And the Lord commended the vniust steward 8
 because hee had done wisely. Wherefore the
 children of this world are in their generation
 wiser then the children of light.*And I say vn- 9
 to you, Make you friends with the riches of ini-
 quitie, that when ye shall want, they may re-
 ceiue you into euerlasting habitations. * Hee 10
 that is faithfull in the least, he is also faithfull in
 much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vn-
 iust also in much. *If then ye haue not beene 11
 faithfull in the wicked riches, who will trust
 you in the true treasure? *And if ye haue not 12
 bene faithfull in another mans goods, who shall
 giue

S. L V X E.

- 23** give you that which is yours? *No servant can
 serue two masters: for either he shall hate the
 one, & loue the other: or els he shal lean to the
 one, & despise the other. Ye can not serue God
24 and riches. *All these things heard the Pharise
 also which were couetous, and they scoffed at
25 him. *Then he said vnto the, Ye are they, which
 iustifie your selues before men: but God know
 eth your hearts: for that which is highly este
 med among men, is an abominatiō in the sight
26 of God. *The Law & the Prophets *endured* vnt
 til Iohn: & since that time the kingdom of God
27 is preached, & euery mā preasseth into it. *Now
 it is more easie that heauē & earth should passe
 away, then that one title of the Law should fal
28. *Whosoever putteth away his wife, & marieth
 another, committeth adultery: and whosoever
 marieth her that is put away frō her husband,
29 committeth adultery. * There was a certaine
 rich man, which was clothed in purple, and fine
 linnen, & fared well and delicately euery day.
30 *Also there was a certaine begger named La
 zarus, which was laide at his gate full of sores,
31 *And desired to be refreshed with the crummes
 that fell from the rich mans table: yea, and the
 dogges came & licked his sores. *And it was
 so that the begger died, and was caried by the
32 Angels into Abrahams bosome. *The rich man
33 also dyed, and was buried. *And being in hell
 in torments he lift vp his eyes, and saw Abra
34 ham a far off, & Lazarus in his bosom. *Then he
 cryed, & saide, Father Abraham, haue merke

C H A P. XVII.

on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the
 tip of his finger in water, & coole my tongue:
 for I am tormented in this flame. *But Abrahā 25
 said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time
 receivdest thy pleasures, and likewise Lazarus
 paines: now therefore is he comforted, & thou
 art tormented. *Besides all this, betweene you 26
 and vs there is a great gulf set, so that they
 which would go frō hence to you, cannot: nei-
 ther can they come from thence to vs. *Then 27
 he saide, I pray the therefore father, that thou
 wouldest send him to my fathers house. * (For I 28
 haue five brethren) that hee may testifie vnto
 the, least they also come into this place of tor-
 ment. *Abraham said vnto him, They haue Mo- 29
 ses & the Prophets: let them heare them. *And 30
 he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came
 vnto them frō the dead, they will amend their
 lines. *Then he said vnto him, If they heare not 31
 Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be
 perswaded, though one arise from the dead a-
 gaine.

C H A P. XVII.

THEN said he to the disciples, It cannot be 1
 auoided, but that offences will come, but
 wo be to him by whom they come. *It is bet- 2
 ter for him that a great milstone were hanged
 about his neck, and that he were cast into the
 sea, then that he should offend one of these litle
 ones. *Take heede to your selues: if thy bro- 3
 ther trespass against thee, rebuke him, and if he
 repent, forgie him. *And though he sinne a- 4
 gainst

S. L V K E.

- gainst thee seven times in a day, & seven times
in a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repe-
5 teth me, thou shalt forgive him. * And the A-
politles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.
6 * And the Lord said, If ye had faith as *much* as
is a graine of mustard seede, and should say vnto
this mulberie tree, Plucke thy selfe vp by
the rootes, & plant thy selfe in the sea, it should
7 euen obey you. * Who is it also of you, that ha-
ving a seruant plowing, or seeding, cartel would
say vnto him by and by, when he were come
8 from the field, Goe, and sit downe at table?
* And would not rather say to him, Dresse
wherewith I may suppe, and gird thy selfe, and
serue mee, till I haue eaten and drunken, and
9 afterwarde thou shalt eate and drinke? * Do-
eth he thanke that seruant, because he did that
which was commaunded vnto him? I trowe
10 not. * So likewise ye, when ye haue done all
those thinges which are commaunded you,
say, We are vnprofitable seruants: wee haue
11 done that which was our dutie to doe. * And
so it was when he went to Hierusalem, that
he passed through the middes of Samaria,
12 and Galile. * And as hee entred into a cer-
taine towne, there met him ten men that were
13 lepers, which stood a farre off. * And they lift
vp their voices, and saide, Iesus, Master, haue
14 mercie on vs. * And when he saw *them* he saide
vnto them, Goe shewe your selues vnto the
Priestes. And it came to passe, that as they

went

CHAP. XVII.

went, they were clenfed. * Then one of them, 15
 when he ſaw that he was healed, turned back, &
 with a loud voice praifed God, * And fell down 16
 on his face at his feet, & gaue him thanks: & he
 was a Samaritan. * And Ieſus answered, and ſaid, 17
 Are there not ten clenfed, but where are the nine?
 * There are none found that returned to giue 18
 God praife, ſaue this ſtranger. * And he ſaid vn- 19
 to him, Arife, go thy way; thy faith hath ſaued
 thee. * And when he was demanded of the Pha- 20
 riſes, when the kingdom of God ſhould come,
 he answered them and ſaid, The kingdome of
 God commeth not with obſeruation. * Neither 21
 ſhall men ſay, Loe here, or loe there for behold,
 the kingdome of God is within you. * And hee 22
 ſaid vnto the diſciples, The dayes will come,
 when ye ſhall deſire to ſee one of the dayes of
 the Sonne of man, and ye ſhal not ſee it. * Then 23
 they ſhall ſay to you, Beholde here, or beholde
 there: but go not thither, neither follow them.
 * For as the lightning that lightneth out of the 24
 one part vnder heauen, ſhineth vnto the other
 part vnder heauen, ſo ſhall the Sonne of man
 be in his day. * But firſt muſt hee ſuffer many 25
 things, and be reprooued of this generation.
 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe, ſo ſhall it 26
 be in the dayes of the Sonne of man. * They 27
 ate, they dranke, they married wiues, and gaue
 in marriage vnto the day that Noe went into
 the Arke: & the flood came & deſtroyed them
 all. * Likewise alſo, as it was in the daies of Lot,
 they ate, they drinke, they bought, they ſolde,
 O. r. they

- 29 they planted, they built. * But in the day that
 Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire & brim-
 30 stone from heauen, and destroyed them all. * Af-
 ter these *ensamples* shall it be in the day when
 31 the Sonne of man is reueiled. * At that day he
 that is vpon the house, & his stufte in the house,
 let him not come downe to take it out: and he
 that is in the field likewise, let him not turne
 32 back to that he left behinde. * Remember Lot's
 33 wife. * Whosoever will seeke to saue his soule,
 shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose it, shall
 34 get it life. * I tell you, in that night there shal be
 two in one bed: the one shall be receiued, and
 35 the other shall be left. * Two women shall bee
 grinding together: the one shal be taken, & the
 36 other shall be left. * Two shall be in the field:
 one shall be receiued, and an other shall be left.
 37 * And they answered, and said to him, Where,
 Lord? And he said vnto them, Whersoeuer the
 body is, thither shall also the egles be gathered
 together.

C H A P. XVIII.

- * A ND he spake also a parable vnto them, *to*
 this end, that they ought alwaies to pray, &
 2 not to wax faint, * Saying, There was a iudge in
 a certaine citie, which feared not God, neither
 3 reuerenced man. * And there was a widowe in
 that city, which came vnto him, saying, Do me
 4 iustice against mine aduersary. * And he would
 not of a long time. but afterward he said with
 himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor reuerence
 5 man, * Yet because this widow troubleth me, I

C H A P. XVIII.

will doe her right, least at the last she come and
 make me weary. * And the Lorde saide, Heare
 what the vnrighteous iudge saith, * Now shall
 not God auenge his elect, which crie day and
 night vnto him, yea, though he suffer long for
 them? * I tel you he will auenge them quickly:
 but when the Sonne of man cometh, shall he
 finde faith on the earth? * He spake also this pa-
 rable vnto certaine, which trusted in themselves
 that they were iust, and despised other: * Two
 men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one
 a Pharise, and the other a Publicane. * The Pha-
 rise stood & prayed thus with himselfe, O God,
 I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extor-
 tioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Pub-
 licane. * I fast twise in the weeke, I giue tithe of
 all that euer I possess. * But the Publicane stan-
 ding a farre off, would not lift vp so much as
 his eyes to heauen, but smote his brest, saying,
 O God, be mercifull to me a sinner. * I tell you,
 this man departed to his house iustified, rather
 then the other: for euery man that exalteth him-
 selfe, shall be brought lowe, and he that hum-
 bleth himselfe, shall be exalted. * They brought
 vnto him also babes that he should touch the.
 And when his disciples sawe it, they rebuked
 them. * But Iesus called them vnto him & saide,
 Suffer the babes to come vnto me, and forbid
 them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.
 * Verely I say vnto you, whosoener receiueth
 not the kingdome of God, as a child, he shal not
 enter therein, * Then a certaine ruler asked him,

S. LVKE.

- 19 saying, Good master, what ought I to doe, to
inherit eternall life? * And Iesus said vnto him,
Why callest thou me good? none is good but
20 one, *euē* God: * Thou knowest the comman-
dements, Thou shalt not commit adultery:
Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not steale: Thou
shalt not beare false witnes: Honour thy father
21 and thy mother. * And he said, All these haue I
22 kept from my youth. * Now when Iesus heard
that; hee saide vnto him, Yet lackest thou one
thing. Sell all that euer thou hast, & distribute
vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in
23 heauen, and come, follow me. * But when hee
heard those things, he was very heauy: for hee
was marueilous rich. * And when Iesus saw him
24 very sorrowfull, he saide, With what difficultie
shall they that haue riches, enter into the king-
25 dome of God! * Surely it is easier for a camel
to go through a needles eye, then for a rich
26 man to enter into the kingdom of God. * Then
said they that heard it, And who then can be
27 saued? * And he said, The things which are im-
28 possible with mē, are possible with God. * Then
Peter said, Loe, we haue left all, and followed
29 thee. * And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto
you, there is no man that hath left house, or
parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the
30 kingdome of Gods sake, * Which shall not re-
ceiue much more in this world, & in the world
31 to come life euerlasting. * Then Iesus tooke
vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Be-
hold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, and all things

C H A P. XIX.

shall be fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are written by the Prophets. * For he shall be delivered vnto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, & shall be spitefully entreated, and shall be spitted on. * And when they haue scourged him, they wil put him to death: but the third day he shall rise again. * But they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither perceiued they the things which were spoken. * And it came to passe, that as he was come neere vnto Iericho, a certaine blind man sat by the way side, begging. * And when he heard the people passe by, he asked what it meant. * And they said vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by. * Then he cryed, saying, Iesus the sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me. * And they which went before, rebuked him that he should holde his peace, but he cryed much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me. * And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought vnto him. And when hee was come neere, he asked him, * Saying, What wilt thou that I do vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight. * And Iesus saide vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee. * Then immediately he received his sight, and followed him, praising God: & all the people, when they saw, gaue praise to God.

C H A P. XIX.

NOWE when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho, * Beholde, there was a man named Archens, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute,

S. L V K E.

- 3 tribute, and he was rich. * And he sought for
Iesus, who he should be, and could not for the
4 praise because he was of a low stature. * Where-
fore he ranne before, and climed vp into a wilde
figge tree, that he might see him: for he thought
5 come that way. * And when Iesus came to the
place, he looked vp, and saw him, and said vnto
him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to
6 day I must abide in thine house. * Then he came
7 downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully. * And
when all they sawe it, they murmured, saying,
that he was gone in to lodge with a sinnefull
8 man. * And Zaccheus stood forth, & said vnto
the Lord, Behold, Lord, the halfe of my goods I
giue to the poore: & if I haue taken from any
man by forged cauillation, I restore him some
9 folde. * Then Iesus saide vnto him, This day is
saluation come vnto this house, forasmuch as he
10 is also become the sonne of Abraham. * For the
Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that
11 which was lost. * And whiles they heard these
things, he continued & spake a parable, because
he was neere to Hierusalem, and because also
they thought that the kingdom of God should
12 shortly appeare. * He said therefore, A certaine
noble man went into a farre countrey, to re-
ceiue for him selfe a kingdome, and so to come
13 againe. * And he called his ten seruants, & de-
liuered them ten pieces of money, and said vnto
14 them, Occupie till I come. * Nowe his citizens
hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, say-
ing, We will not haue this man to reigne ouer
vs.

CHAP. XIX.

15 * And it came to passe, when he was come
 againe, & had receiued his kingdom, that he co-
 manded the seruants to be called to him, to
 whom he gaue his money, that he might know
 what euery man had gained. * Then came the
 first, saying, Lorde, thy piece hath encreased ten
 16 pieces. * And he said vnto him, Well good ser-
 17 uant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very
 little thing, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities.
 * And the second came, saying, Lorde, thy piece
 18 hath encreased five pieces. * And to the same he
 19 said, Be thou also ruler ouer five cities. * So the
 20 other came, & said, Lord, behold thy piece, which
 I haue laid vp in a napkin: * For I feared thee,
 21 because thou art a strait man: thou takest vp
 that thou laydest not downe, and reapest that
 thou diddest not sow. * Then he said vnto him,
 22 Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, O evil
 servant, Thou knewest that I am a strait man,
 taking vp that I layd not downe, and reaping
 that I did not sow. * Wherefore then gauest
 23 thou not my money into the banke, that at my
 coming I might haue required it with van-
 tage? * And he said to them that stood by, Take
 24 from him that piece, and giue it him that hath
 ten pieces. * (And they said vnto him, Lord, he
 25 hath ten pieces.) * For I say vnto you, that vnto
 26 all them that haue, it shalbe giuen: & from him
 that hath not, even that he hath, shall be taken
 from him. * Moreover, those mine enemies,
 27 which would not that I shoulde reigne ouer
 them, bring hither, & slay them before me. * And
 28

- when he had thus spokē, he went forth be-
 29 ascending vp to Hierusalem. * And it came to
 passe, when he was come neere to Bethphage &
 Bethania, besides the mount which is called the
 mount of Oliues, he sent two of his disciples
 30 * Saying, Goe ye to the towne which is before
 you, wherein, as soone as ye are come, ye shall find
 a colte tyed, whereon neuer man sate: loose
 31 him, & bring him *hither*. * And if any man aske
 you, why ye loose him, thus shall ye say vnto
 32 him, Because the Lord hath neede of him. * So
 they that were sent, went their way, and found
 33 it as he had said vnto them. * And as they were
 loosing the colte, the owners thereof said vnto
 34 them, Why loose ye the colte? * And they said,
 35 The Lord hath need of him. * So they brought
 him to Iesus, & they cast their garments on the
 36 colte, and set Iesus thereon. * And as he went,
 37 they spred their clothes in the way. * And when
 he was now come neere to the going dowie
 of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude
 of the disciples began to reioyce, and to praise
 38 God with a loud voyce, for all the great works
 that they had seene, * Saying, Blessed be the
 King that cometh in the Name of the Lord:
 peace in heauen, & glorie in the highest places.
 39 * Then some of the Pharisees of the companie
 40 said vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. * But
 he answered, & said vnto them, I tel you that if
 these should hold their peace, the stones would
 41 crie. * And when he was come neere, he beheld
 42 the Citie, and wept for it, * Saying, O if thou
 haddest

C H A P. XX.

haddest euen knowen at the least in this thy
 day those things, which *belong* vnto thy peace:
 but now are they hid from thine eyes. * For the 43
 dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies
 shall cast a trench about thee, & compass thee
 round, & keepe thee in on euery side, * And shall 44
 make thee euen with the ground, & thy children
 which are in thee, & they shall not leaue in thee
 a stone vpon a stone, because thou knewest not
 that season of thy visitation. * He went also 45
 into the Temple, and began to cast out them
 that solde doves therein, & them that bought,
 * Saying vnto them, It is written, Mine house is 46
 the house of prayer, but ye haue made it a den
 of thieues. * And he taught daily in the Temple. 47
 And the high Priests & the Scribes, & the chiefe
 of the people sought to destroy him. * But they 48
 could not find what they might do to him: for
 all the people hanged vpon him, when they
 heard him.

C H A P. XX.

ANd it came to passe, that on one of those 1
 dayes, as he taught the people in the Tem-
 ple, & preached the Gospell, the hie Priests and
 the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders,
 * And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what 2
 authoritie thou doest these things, or who is he
 that hath given thee this authoritie? * And he 3
 answered, & said vnto them, I also wil aske you
 ouerthing: tell me therefore. * The baptisme 4
 of Iohn, was it from heauen or of men? * And 5
 they reasoned within them selues, saying, If we
 shall

S. L V K E.

- shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why
6 beleened ye him not? * But if we shall say
men, all the people will stone vs: for they
7 perfwaded that Iohn was a Prophet. * There
fore they answered, that they could not
8 whence it was. * Then Iesus saide vnto them,
Neither toll I you, by what authoritie I
9 these things. * Then began he to speake to the
people this parable, A certaine man planted
10 vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen,
and went into a strange countrey, for a great time.
11 * And at the time conuenient, he sent a seruant
to the husbandmen, that they should giue him
of the fruite of the vineyard, but the husband
12 men did beat him, & sent him away empty. * A
gaine he sent yet another seruant: and they
beat him, & soule entreated him, and sent him
13 way empty. * Moreover he sent the thirde,
and him they wounded, & cast out. * Then said the
Lord of the vineyard, What shall I doe? I will
send my beloued Sonne: it may be that they
14 will doe reuerence: when they see him. * But
when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned
with themselves, saying, This is the heires come,
let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be
15 ours. * So they cast him out of the vineyard, &
killed him. What shall the Lorde of the vine
16 yard therefore do vnto them? * He wil come &
destroy these husbandmen, & will giue out his
vineyard to others. But whē they heard it, they
17 said, God forbid. * And he beheld them, & said,
What meaneth this then that is written,

stone

C H A P. XX.

stone that the builders refused, that is made the
head of the corner? * Whosoever shall fall vpon
that stone, shalbe broken: & on whomsoever it
shal fall, it wil grind him to powder. * Then the
hie Priests, and the Scribes the same houre went
about to lay hands on him: (but they feared the
people) for they perceined that he had spoken
this parable against them. * And they watched
him, & sent forth spies, which shoulde faine them
selues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to
deliuer him vnto the power & authoritie of the
gouernor. * And they asked him, saying, Master,
we know that thou sayest & teachest right, nei-
ther doest thou accept mans person, but tea-
chest the way of God truly. * Is it lawfull for
vs to giue Cesar tribute or no? * But he percei-
ued their craftinesse, and said vnto them, Why
tempt ye me? * Shew me a pennay: Whose i-
mage & superscription hath it? They answered,
& said, Cesars. * Then he said vnto them, Giue
then vnto Cesar the things which are Cesars, &
to God, those which are Gods. * And they could
not reprove his saying before the people: but
they marueiled at his answer, & held their peace.
* Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces
(which denie that there is any resurrection) and
they asked him, * Saying, Master, Moses wrote
vnto vs, If any mans brother die hauing a wife,
and he die without children, that his brother
should take his wife, & raise vp seed to his bro-
ther. * Now there were seuen brethren, and the
last tooke a wife, & he dyed without children.
* And

S. L V K E.

30 * And the second tooke the wife, and he
 31 childlesse. * Then the third tooke her: and
 32 likewise the seuen dyed, & left no childre. * And
 33 last of all the woman dyed also. * Therefore at
 34 the resurrection, whose wife of them shall she
 35 be? for seuen had her to wife. * Then Iesus an-
 36 swered, & said vnto them, The children of this
 37 world marrie wines, & are married. * But they
 38 which shall be counted worthy to enioy this
 39 world, & the resurrection from the dead, neither
 40 marry wines, neither are married. * For they can
 41 die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto
 42 the Angels, & are the sornes of God: since they
 43 are the children of the resurrection. * And that
 44 the dead shall rise againe, euen Moses shewed it
 45 besides the bush, when he said, The Lord is the
 46 God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the
 47 God of Iacob. * For he is not the God of the
 48 dead, but of them which liue: for all liue vnto
 49 him. * Then certaine of the Scribes answered &
 50 saide, Master, thou hast well saide. * And after
 51 that, durst they not aske him any thing at all.
 52 * Then said he vnto them, Howe say they that
 53 Christ is Dauids sonne? * And David himselfe
 54 saith in the booke of the Psalmes, The Lord
 55 said vnto my Lord, Sit at my right hand * Till I
 56 shall make thine enemies thy lootstooke. * See-
 57 ing David calleth him Lord, how is he then his
 58 sonne? * Then in the audience of all the peo-
 59 ple, he said vnto his disciples, * Beware of the
 60 Scribes, which willingly goe in long robes, and
 61 loue salutations in the markets, and the highest
 62 seats

seates
 feastes
 in the
 ceine

A No
 ca
 saw al
 thithe
 say vn
 in mo
 their
 but n
 that
 Temp
 stone
 * Are
 dayes
 left
 dow
 but v
 there
 * An
 ned:
 am
 low
 hear
 for
 follo
 ther
 don
 qua

C H A P. XXI.

feates in the assemblies, & the chiefe roomes at feastes: * Which deuoure widowes houses, and in shewe make long prayers: These shall receiue greater damnation.

C H A P. XXI.

ANd as he beheld he saw the rich men, which cast their gistes into the treasurie, * And he saw also a certaine poore widow which cast in thither two mites: * And he said, Of a trueth I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all. * For they all haue of their superfluitie cast into the offrings of God: but she of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had. * Nowe as some spake of the Temple, howe it was garnished with goodlie stones, and with consecrate thinges, he saide, * Are these the things that ye looke vpon? the dayes will come, wherein a stone shall not be left vpon a stone, that shall not be throwen downe. * Then they asked him, saying, Master, but whē shal these things be: & what signe shall there be when these things shal come to passe? * And he said, Take heede, that ye be not deceiued: for many will come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth neere: followe ye not them therefore. * And when ye heare of warres and seditions, be not afraide: for these thinges must first come, but the ende followeth not by and by. * Then said he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, * And great earthquakes shalbe in diuers places, and hunger, and pestilence,

S. L V K E

- pestilence, and fearesfull things, and great signs
 12 shall there be from heaven. * But before
 these, they shall lay their handes on you, and
 persecute you, deliuering you vp to the assen-
 13 blies, and into prisons, and bring you before
 Kings and rulers for my Names sake. * And they
 14 shall turne to you, for a testimoniall. * Lay
 vp therefore in your hearts, that ye cast not be-
 15 fore hande, what ye shall answer. * For I will
 giue you a mouth & wisdom, whereagainst all
 your aduersaries shal not be able to speak, nor
 16 resist. * Yea, ye shalbe betrayed also of your pa-
 rents, & of your brethren, & kinsmen, & friends,
 17 & some of you shall they put to death. * And ye
 shall be hated of all men for my Names sake,
 18 * Yet there shall not one haire of your heades
 19 perish. * By your patience possesse your soules,
 20 * And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with
 souldiers, then vnderstande that the desolation
 21 thereof is neere. * Then let them which are in
 Iudea flee to the mountains: & let them which
 are in the middes thereof, depart out: and let
 not them that are in the countrey, enter there-
 22 in. * For these be the dayes of vengeance, to
 23 fulfill all things that are written. * But woe be
 to them that be with childe, and to them that
 gine sucke in those daies: for there shalbe great
 distresse in this land, & wrath ouer this people.
 24 * And they shall fall on the edge of the sword,
 and shall be led captiues into all nations, and
 Hierusalem shalbe troden vnder foot of the Gen-
 tiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

* Th

CHAP. XXXI.

*Then there shalbe signes in the Sunne, and in the moone, & in the starres, and vpon the earth, trouble among the nations with perplexity: the sea and the waters shall roare. *And mens harts shall faile them for feare, and for looking after those things which shall come on the worlde: for the powers of heauen shall be shaken. * And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a cloude, with power & great glorie. *And when these things begin to come to passe, then look vp, and lift vp your heads for your redemption draweth neere. *And he spake to them a parable, Behold, the figge tree and all trees, *When they now shoote forth, ye seeing them, know of your owne selues, that sommer is then nere. *So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere. * Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all these things be done: *Heauen & earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away. *Take heed to your selues, least at any time your hearts be oppressed with surfering and drunkennesse, & cares of this life, & lest that day come on you at vnwares. *For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwel on the face of the whole earth. *Watch therefore, and pray continuallie, that ye may be counted worthie to escape all these thinges that shall come to passe, & that ye may stand before the Sonne of mā. *Now in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night hee went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount of Oliues.*

38 Olives. And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

C H A P. XXII.

- 1 **N**Owe the least of vnleauened breads due
 2 neere, which is called the Passecouer. * And
 3 the hie Priests and Scribes sought howe they
 4 might kill him: for they feared the people. * The
 5 entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Isca-
 6 riot, & was of the number of the twelue. * And he
 7 went his way, & comuned with the hie Priests
 8 & captaines, how he might betray him to them.
 9 * So they were glad, & agreed to giue him m-
 10 ney. * And he consented, & sought opportunitie
 11 to betray him vnto them, whē the people was
 12 away. * This came the day of vnleauened bread,
 13 when the Passecouer must be sacrificed. * And he
 14 sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe & prepare the
 15 Passecouer, that we may eate it. * And they
 16 said to him, Where wilt thou, that wee prepare
 17 it? * Then he said vnto them, Behold, when ye
 18 be entred into the citie, there shal a man meete
 19 you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into
 20 the house that he entreth in, * And say vnto the
 21 good man of the house, The Master saith vnto
 22 thee, Where is the lodging where I shall eate
 23 my Passecouer with my disciples? * Then he shal
 24 shew you a great hie chamber trimmed: there
 25 make it readie. * So they went and found as he
 26 had saide vnto them, and made ready the Pas-
 27 seouer. * And when the houre was come he sat
 28 down, & the twelue Apostles with him. * Then
 29 he saide vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to
 30 eate

CHAP. XXII.

16 *For* I say vnto you, Henceforth I will not eate of it
 any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome
 of God. * And he tooke the cup, & gaue thanks, 17
 & said, Take this, & deuide it among you. * For 18
 I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of
 the vine, vntill the kingdome of God be come.
 * And he took bread, & whē he had giue thanks, 19
 he brake it, and gaue to them, saying, This is my
 bodie, which is given for you: do this in the re-
 membrance of me. * Likewise also after supper 20
 he took the cup, saying, This cup is that new Te-
 nament in my blood, which is shed for you.
 * Yet beholde, the hande of him that betrayeth 21
 me is with me, at the table. * And truly the Son 22
 of man goeth as it is appointed: but wo be to
 that man, by whom he is betrayed. * Then they 23
 began to enquire among themselues, which of
 them it should be, that should doe that. * And 24
 there arose also a strife among them, which of
 them should seeme to be the greatest. * But he 25
 said vnto them, The kings of the Gentile reigne
 over them, and they that beare rule over them,
 are called bountifull. * But ye shall not be so: but 26
 the greatest among you be as the least, and
 the chiefest as he that serueth. * For who is grea 27
 test that sitteth at table, or he that serueth? Is
 not he that sitteth at table? And I am among
 you as hee that serueth. * And ye are they 28
 which haue continued with me in my tentati-
 on. * Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdom, 29
 as my father hath appointed to me. * That ye 30

P. I.

may

- may eate, and drinke at my table in my king-
dome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue
31 tribes of Israell. *And the Lord said, Simon, Si-
mon, Behold, Satan hath desired you, to win-
32 now you as wheat. *But I haue prayed for thee,
that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou
33 art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren. *And
he said vnto him, Lord, I am readie to go with
34 thee into prison, and to death. *But he said, I tel
thee Peter, the cocke shall not crowe this day,
before thou hast thrise denied that thou knew-
35 est me. *And he said vnto them, When I sent
you without bagge, and scrip, and shoes, lacked
36 ye any thing? And they saide, Nothing. *Then
he said to them, but now he that hath a bagge,
let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that
hath none, let him sell his coate & bye a sword.
37 *For I say vnto you, that yet the same which
is written, must be performed in me, Euen with
the wicked was hee numbred: for doubtlesse
those things which *are written* of me, haue an
38 end. *And they said, Lord, behold, here are two
swordes. And he said vnto them, It is ynough.
39 *And he came out, and went (as he was wont)
to the mount of Oliues: and his disciples also
40 followed him, *And when he came to the place,
he said to them, Pray, least ye enter into tempta-
41 tion. *And he was drawen aside fro them about
a stoncs cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed
42 *Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this
from me: neuerthelesse, not my will, but thine
43 be done. *And there appeared an Angell vnto

C H A P: XXII.

him from heauen, comforting him. *But being 44
in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly: and his
sweat was like drops of blood, trickling down
to the ground. *And he arose vp from prayer, & 45
came to *his* disciples, and found them sleeping
for heauines. *And he said vnto the, Why sleep 46
ye? rise and pray, least ye enter into tentation.
*And while he yet spake, beholde, a company, 47
& he that was called Iudas one of the twelue,
went before them, and came nere vnto Iesus to
kisse him. *And Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, be- 48
trayest thou the Sōne of mā with a kisse? *Now
when they which were about him, saw what 49
would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shal we
smite with sword? *And one of them smote a 50
seruant of the hie Priest, and stroke off his right
eare. *Then Iesus answered, and saide, Suffer 51
this thus farre: and he touched his eare, & hea-
led him. *Then Iesus saide vnto the hie Priests, 52
and captaines of the Temple, and the Elders
which were come to him, Be ye come out as
into a thiefe with swordes and stauces: *When 53
I was daily with you in the Temple, ye stret-
ched not forth the handes against me: but this
is your very houre, and the power of darkenes.
*Then tooke they him, and led him, & brought 54
him to the hie Priests house. And Peter follow-
ed a far off. *And when they had kindled a fire 55
in the middes of the hall, and were set downe
together, Peter also sate downe among them.
*And a certaine maide behelde him as he sate 56
by the fire, & hauing well looked on him, said,

S. L V K E.

57 This man was also with him. * But he denied
 58 him, saying, Woman, I know him not. * And af-
 59 ter a little while, another man saw him, & said,
 Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I know
 60 not. * And about the space of an houre after, a
 certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this
 man was with him: for he is also a Galilean.
 61 * And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou
 sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the
 cocke crowe. * Then the Lord turned backe, &
 looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembered the
 word of the Lord, how he had said vnto him,
 Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt deny me
 thrise. * And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
 62 * And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, &
 63 stroke him. * And when they had blindfolded
 him, they smote him on the face, & asked him,
 64 saying, Prophecy who it is that smote thee. * And
 many other things blasphemouslie spake they
 65 against him. * And as soone as it was day, the Elders
 of the people, and the chief Priests and
 Scribes came together, and led him into their
 66 councill, * Saying, Art thou that Christ? telles.
 And he said vnto them, If I tell you, ye will not
 67 beleene it. * And if also I aske you, ye will not
 68 answer me, nor let me go. * Hereafter shall the
 Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the po-
 69 wer of God. * Then said they al, Art thou then the
 Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye saye
 70 I am. * Then said they, What neede we any
 71 other witnes? for we our selues haue heard of
 his owne mouth.

CHAR. XXIII.

Then the whole multitude of them arose, and
 led him vnto Pilate. * And they began to
 accuse him, saying, We haue found this man
 perverting the nation, & forbidding to pay tri-
 bute to Cesar, saying, That he is Christ a King.
 * And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King
 of the Iewes? And he answered him, & said, Thou
 sayest it. * Then said Pilate to the hie Priests, &
 to the people, I finde no fault in this man. * But
 they were the more fierce, saying, He moueth
 the people, teaching throughout all Iudea, be-
 ginning at Galile. enen to this place. * Nowe
 when Pilate heard of Galile, he asked whether
 the man were a Galilean. * And when he knewe
 that he was of Herodes iurisdiction, he sent him
 to Herod, which was also at Ierusalem in those
 daies. * And when Herod saw Iesus, he was ex-
 ceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him
 of a long season, because he had heard many
 things of him, and trusted to haue seene some
 signe done by him. * Then questioned he with
 him of many things: but he answered him no-
 thing. * The hie priestes also and Scribes stood
 forth, & accused him vehemently. * And He-
 rod with his men of war, despised him, & moc-
 ked him, & arayed him in white, & sent him a-
 gain to Pilate. * And the same day Pilate & He-
 rod were made friends together: for before they
 were enemies one to another. * The Pilate cal-
 led together the hie Priestes & the rulers, & the
 people. * And said vnto them, Ye haue brought
 this man vnto me, as one that perverted the peo-

S. L V K E.

ple: & behold, I haue examined him before you,
 & haue found no fault in this mā, of those things
 15 whereof ye accuse him. * No, nor yet Herod:
 I sent you to him: and loe, nothing worthy of
 16 death is done of him. * I will therefore chastise
 17 him, & let him loose. * (For of necessity he must
 18 haue let one loose vnto the at the feast.) * Then
 all the multitude cried at once, saying, Away
 19 with him, & deliuer to vs Barabbas: * Which
 for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, &
 20 murder, was cast in prison. * Then Pilate spake
 21 againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose. * But
 22 they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. * And
 he said vnto them the third time, But what can
 I doe? I finde no cause of death in him:
 23 will therefore chastise him, & let him loose. * But
 they were instant with loud voices, & required
 that he might be crucified: & the voices of them
 24 & of the hie Priests preuailed. * So Pilate gaue
 25 sentēce, that it should be as they required. * And
 he let loose vnto them him that for insurrection
 & murder was cast into prison, whom they de-
 sired, & deliuered Iesus to doe with him what
 26 they would. * And as they led him away, they
 caught one Simon of Cyren, coming out of the
 field, & on him they laid the crosse, to beare
 27 after Iesus. * And there followed him a great
 multitude of people, & of women, which women
 28 bewailed & lamented him. * But Iesus turned
 back vnto them, & said, Daughters of Hierusalem,
 29 weepe not for me, but weep for your selues, &
 for your children. * For behold, the daies will
 come,

CHAP. XXIII.

come, when men shall say, *Blessed are the bar-
 res, & the wombes, that neuer bare, & the paps
 which neuer gaue suck. *Then shall they begin
 to say to the mountaines, Fall on vs: & to the
 hills, Cover vs. *For if they do these things to
 a green tree, what shalbe done to the dry? *And
 there were two others, which were euill doers,
 led with him to be slain. *And when they were
 come to the place, which is called Caluary, there
 they crucified him, & the euill doers, one at the
 right hand, & the other at the left. *Then saide
 Iesus, Father, forgive them for they know not
 what they doe. And they parted his raiment, &
 cast lots: *And the people stood, & beheld: &
 the rulers mocked him with them, saying, He
 saued others: let him saue himselfe, if he be that
 Christ, the Chosen of God. *The souldiers also
 mocked him, & came and offered him vineger.
 *And said, If thou be the King of the Iewes,
 saue thy selfe. *And a superscription was also
 written ouer him, in Greeke letters, & in Latin,
 & in Hebrew, THIS IS THAT KING
 OF THE IEWES. *And one of the euill
 doers, which were hanged, railed on him, say-
 ing, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe & vs.
 *But the other answered, & rebuked him saying,
 fearest thou not God, seing thou art in the same
 condemnation? *We are indeed righteously here:
 for we receiue things worthy of that we haue
 done: but this man hath done nothing amisse.
 *And he saide vnto Iesus, Lord, remember me,
 when thou comest into thy kingdom. *Then

S. LVKE.

Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, in
 44 day shalt thou be with me in Paradise. * And it
 was about the sixth houre: & there was a dark-
 45 nes ouer all the land, vntill the ninth houre. * And
 the Sonne was darkened, & the vail of the Tem-
 46 ple was rent through the middles. * And Iesus
 cried with a loue voice, & said, Father into thine
 handes I commend my spirit. And whē he thus
 47 had said, he gaue vp the ghost. * Now when the
 Centurion sawe what was done, he glorified
 48 God, saying, Of a surety this man was iust. * And
 al the people that came together to that sight,
 beholding the things which were done, smote
 49 their breastes, & returned. * And all his acquaint-
 ance stood a fur off, & the women that follow-
 50 ed him from Galile, beholding these things. * And
 behold, there was a man named Ioseph, which
 51 was a counsellor, a good man & iust. * He did
 not consent to the counsell, and deed of them
 which was of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes,
 52 who also himselfe waited for the kingdome of
 God. * He went vnto Pilate & asked the body
 53 of Iesus. * And tooke it downe, & wrapped
 it in a linnen cloth, & laide it in a tombe hewn
 out of a rock, wherein was neuer man yet laid.
 54 * And that day was the preparation, & the Sab-
 55 bath drew on. * And the women also that fol-
 lowed after, which came with him from Galilee,
 behelde the sepulchre, & how his bodie was
 56 laid. * And they returned & prepared odours
 & spices, and rested the Sabbath day ac-
 cording to the commandement.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

NOWE the first day of the weeke early in the morning they came vnto the sepulchre, and brought the odours, which they had prepared, & certaine women with them. * And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre, * And went in, but found not the bodie of the Lorde Jesus. * And it came to passe, that as they were amazed therat, behold, two men suddenly stood by them in shining vestures. * And as they were afraid, & bowed down their faces to the earth, they said to them, Why seek he him that liueth, among the dead? * He is not here but is risen: remember how he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile. * Saying, that the Sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinful men, & be crucified, & the third day rise again. * And they remembered his words, * And returned from the sepulchre, & told all these things vnto the eleven, & to al the remnant. * Now it was Marie Magdalene and Ioanna, & Marie the mother of James, and other women with them, which told these things vnto the Apostles. * But their wordes seemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neither beleened they them. * Then arose Peter, and came vnto the sepulchre, and looked in, & saw the linnen clothes laid by themselves, & departed wondring in himselfe at that which was come to passe. * And behold, two of them went that same day to a town which was fro Hierusalem about threescore furlongs, called Emmaus. And they talked together of all these things that were done. * And it came to passe, as they

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15

commu-

S. LVKE.

communed together, & reasoned, that Iesus
 16 Iesus drew nere, & wet with the. *But they
 17 were holde, that they cold not know him. *
 he said vnto the, What maner of communions
 are these that ye haue one to another as ye
 18 & are sad? *And the one (named Cleopas)
 red, & said vnto him, Art thou only a stranger
 Hierusalem, & hast not knowne the things which
 19 are come to passe therein in these daies? *And
 said vnto the, What things? And they said vnto
 him, of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet
 mighty in deed & in word before God, & a
 20 people, *And how the hie Priests, & our rulers
 deliuered him to be condēned to death, & he
 21 crucified him. *But we trusted that it had bin
 that should haue deliuered Israel, & as touching
 al these things, to day is the third day, that
 22 were done. *Yea, & certaine women among
 made vs astonied, which came early vnto the
 23 sepulchre. *And whē they found not his body,
 they came, saying that they had also seen a
 24 of Angels, which said that he was aliue. *There
 fore certain of the which were with vs, went
 to the sepulchre, & found it euen so as the women
 25 had said, but him they saw not. *Then he said
 to them, O fooles, & slow of heart to believe
 26 that the prophets haue spoke. *Ought not Christ
 to haue suffered these things, & to enter into
 27 glory? *And he begā at Moses, & at al the
 prophets, & interpreted vnto them in all the
 scriptures the thinges which were written of him.
 28 *And they drew nere vnto the town, which is

CHAP. XXIIII.

went to, but he made as though he would have
gone further. * But they constrained him, saying, 29
Abide with vs: for it is towards night, & the day
is far spent. So he went in to tary with the. * And 30
it came to passe as he sat at table with them, he
tooke the bread, & blessed, & brake it, & gaue it
to them. * Then their eyes were opened, & they 31
knew him: and he was no more scene of them.
* And they said between theselues, Did not our 32
hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs
by the way, & when he opened to vs the Scrip-
tures? * And they rose vp the same houre, & re- 33
turned to Hierusalem, & found the Eleuen ga-
thered together, & them that were with them,
* Which laid, The Lord is risen in deed, & hath 34
appeared to Simō. * The they told what things 35
were done in the way, & how he was knowne
of the in breaking of bread. * And as they spake 36
these things, Iesus himselfe stood in the middes
of them, & saide vnto them, Peace be to you.
* But they were abashed and afraide, supposing 37
they had seene a spirit. * Then said he vnto the, 38
Why are yee troubled? & wherfore doe doubt
in your hearts? * Behold mine hands & my 39
feete: for it is I my selfe: handle me, & see: for
a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me
now. * And when he had thus spoken, he shew- 40
ed them his hands & feete. * And while they yet 41
belieued not for ioy, & wondered, he said vnto
them, Haue ye here any meat? * And they gaue 42
him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honie
combe, * And he tooke it, and did eat be-
fore

- 44 fore them. * And he said vnto them, These are
the words, which I spake vnto you while I was
yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which
are written of me in the Law of Moses, and in
45 the Prophets, & in the Psalmes. * Then opened
he their vnderstanding, that they might vnder-
46 stand the Scriptures, * And said vnto them, Thus
it is writtē, & thus it behooved Christ to suffer,
and to rise againe from the dead the third day,
47 * And that repentance and remission of sinnes
should be preached in his Name among all na-
48 tions, beginning at Hierusalem. * Nowe ye are
49 witnesses of these things. * And beholde, I doe
send the promise of my Father, vpon you: but
tarie ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be
50 endued with power from on hie. * Afterward
he led them out into Bethania, and list vp his
51 hands & blessed them. * And it came to passe,
that as he blessed them, he departed from thē,
52 & was caried vp into heauen. * And they wor-
shipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with
53 great ioy, * And were continually in the Tem-
ple, praising, and lauding God, Amen.

The holy Gospell of Iesus

Christ, according to John.

C H A P. I.

IN the beginning was that Word,
& that Word was with God, and
that Word was God. * This same
was in the beginning with God.
* All things were made by it, and
without

CHAP. I.

without it was made nothing that was made.
 * In it was life, and that life was that light of 4
 men. * And that light shineth in the darknesse, 5
 and the darknesse comprehended it not. * There 6
 was a man sent from God, whose name was
 Iohn. * This came for a witnesse, to beare 7
 witnesse of that light, that all men through
 him might beleeue. * He was not that light, but 8
 was sent to beare witnesse of that light. * This 9
 was that true light, which lighteth every man
 that cometh into the world. * He was in the 10
 world, & the world was made by him: and the
 world knew him not. * He came vnto his owne 11
 & his owne receiued him not. * But as many as 12
 receiued him, to them he gaue prerogative to
 be the sonnes of God, ~~even~~ to the that beleeue
 in his Name. * Which are borne not of blood, 13
 nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of
 man, but of God. * And that Word was made 14
 flesh, and dwelt among vs, (and we saw the glo-
 rie thereof, as the glorie of the onely begotten
 sonne of the Father) ful of grace & truth. * Iohn 15
 bare witnesse of him, and cryed, saying, This
 was he of whom I said, He that cometh after
 me, was before me: for he was better then I.
 * And of his fulnesse haue all we receiued, and 16
 grace for grace. * For the Law was given by 17
 Moles: but grace, and trueth came by Iesus
 Christ. * No man hath seene God at any time: 18
 that onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bo-
 some of the Father, he hath declared him. * Then 19
 this is the recorde of Iohn, when the Iewes
 sent

S. I O H N.

- sent Priests and Levites from Hierusalem, to
 20 aske him, Who art thou? * And he confessed and
 denied not, and saide plainly. I am not that
 21 Christ. * And they asked him, What then? Art
 thou Elias? And he said, I am not. Art thou that
 22 Prophet? And he answered, No. * Then said they
 vnto him, Who art thou, that we may give an
 answer to them that sent vs? what saiest thou
 23 of thy selfe? * He saide, I am the voyce of him
 that crieth in the wilderness, Make straight the
 way of the Lord, as saide the Prophet Esai.
 24 * Now they which were sent, were of the Pha-
 25 rises. * And they asked him, and said to him,
 Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that
 26 Christ, neither Elias, nor that Prophet? * Iohn
 answered them, saying, I baptize with water:
 but there is one among you, whome ye know
 27 not: * He it is that cometh after me, which
 was before me, whose shoe latchet I am not
 28 worthie to vnloose. * These things were done
 in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where Iohn
 29 baptize. * The next day Iohn seeth Iesus com-
 ming vnto him, and saith, Behold that lamb
 of god, which taketh away the sinne of the world.
 30 * This is he of whome I saide, After me
 cometh a man, which was before me: for he
 31 better thē I. * And I knew him not: but hope
 he should be declared to Israel, therefore
 32 come, baptizing with water. * So Iohn bare
 record, saying, I beheld that Spirit come down
 from heauen, like a dove, and it abode
 33 vpon him. * And I knew him not: but hee that

me to baptize with water, he said vnto me, Vp-
on whome thou shalt see that Spirite come
downe, and tarie still on him, that is hee which
baptizeth with the holy Ghost. * And I saw, and 34
bare recorde that this is that Sonne of God.
* The next day, Iohn stood againe, & two of 35
his disciples: * And he beheld Iesus walking by, 36
and said, Behold the Lambe of God: * And the 37
two disciples heard him speake, & followed Ie-
sus. * Then Iesus turned about, and sawe them 38
followe, and saide vnto them, What seeke yee?
And they said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say
by interpretation, Master,) where dwellest thou?
* He said vnto them, Come and see. They came 39
and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him
that day: for it was about the tenth houre. * An- 40
drew, Simon Peters brother, was one of the
two which heard it of Iohn, and that followed
him. * The same sound his brother Simon first, 41
& said vnto him, We haue found that Messias,
which is by interpretation, that Christ. * And 42
he brought him to Iesus. And Iesus beheld him,
& said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Iona: thou
shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpreta-
tion a stone. * The day following, Iesus would 43
goe into Galilee, & sounde Philip, & saide vnto
him, Follow me. * Now Philip was of Bethsai- 44
de the cite of Andrew & Peter. * Philip found 45
Nathanael, & saide vnto him, We haue founde
him, of whome Moses did write in the Lawe,
and the Prophets, Iesus that sonne of Ioseph,
that was of Nazareth. * Then Nathanael saide 46
vnto

S. I O H N.

- vnto him, Can there any good thing come out
of Nazareth? Philip said to him, Come, and see.
- 47 *Iesus saw Nathanael comming to him, & said
of him, Behold, in deed an Israelite, in whome is
- 48 no guile. *Nathanael saide vnto him, Whence
knewest thou me? Iesus answered, and said vnto
him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou
wast vnder the figge tree, I saw thee. *Natha-
- 49 nael answered, & said vnto him, Rabbi, thou art
that Sonne of God: thou art that King of Israel.
- 50 *Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Because I
said vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the figge tree,
beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things
- 51 then these. *And hee said vnto him, Verely, ve-
rely I say vnto you, hereafter shall ye see heauen
open, and the Angels of God ascending, & de-
scending vpon the Sonne of man.

C H A P. II.

- 1 **A**ND the third day, was there a mariage in
Cana: a towne of Galile, & the mother of Ie-
sus was there. *And Iesus was called also, & his
- 2 disciples vnto the marriage. *Nowe when the
wine failed, the mother of Iesus said vnto him,
- 3 They haue no wine. *Iesus said vnto her, Wo-
man, what haue I to doe with thee? mine hour
- 4 is not yet come. *His mother said vnto the ser-
uants Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it.
- 5 *And there were set there, sixe waterpots of
stone, after the manner of the purifying of the
Iewes, concerning two or three firkins a peece.
- 6 *And Iesus said vnto them, Fill the waterpots
with water. Then they filled them vp to the
brimming.

CHAP. II.

1
 2
 3
 4
 5
 6
 7
 8
 9
 10
 11
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17
 18
 19

1. *brimne.* * Then he said vnto them, Draw out
 now & beare vnto the gouernour of the feast.
 So they bare it. * Now when the gouernour of
 the feast had tasted the water that was made
 wine, (for he knew not whence it was: but the
 seruants, which drew the water, knew) the go-
 uernour of the feast called the bridegrome;
 * And said vnto him, All men at the beginning
 set forth good wine, and when men haue well
 drunke, then that which is worse: but thou hast
 kept backe the good wine vntill now. * This
 beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana a town
 of Galile, and shewed forth his glory: and his
 disciples belieued on him. * After that, he went
 downe into Capernaum, he & his mother, and
 his brethren, & his disciples: but they continued
 not many daies there. * For the Iewes Passco-
 ner was at hande, Therefore Iesus went vp to
 Hierusalem. * And hee found in the Temple
 those that sold oxen & sheepe, and dones, and
 chagers of money, sitting there. * Then he made
 a scourge of small cordes, & drave them out of
 the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, & pow-
 red out the changers money, and ouerthrew
 the tables, * And said vnto the that sold doves,
 Take these things hence: make not my fathers
 house, an house of merchandise. * And his disci-
 ples remembered, that it was written, The zeale
 of thine house hath eaten me vp. * Then an-
 swered the Iewes, and said vnto him, What
 signe shewest thou vnto vs, that thou doest
 these things? Iesus answered and said vnto
 them,

S. I O H N.

them, Destroy this Temple, and in three daies
 20 will raise it vp againe. * Then saide the Iewes,
 Fourtie & sixe yeeres was this Temple a buil-
 ding, and wilt thou reare it vp in three daies?
 21 * But hee spake of the Temple of his bodie.
 22 * A lloone therefore as hee was risen from the
 dead, his disciples remembered that he thus saide
 vnto them: & they beleueed the Scripture, and
 23 the word which Iesus had said. * Now when he
 was at Hierusalem at the Passouer in the feast,
 many beleueed in his Name, when they sawe
 24 his miracles which he did. * But Iesus did not
 commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew
 25 them all, * And had no neede that any should
 testifie of man: for he knewe what was in
 man.

CHAP. III.

1 **T**HERE was nowe a man of the Pharises, na-
 med Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes. * This
 man came to Iesus, by night, and saide vnto
 him, Rabbi, wee know that thou art a teacher
 come from God: for no man could doe these
 miracles that thou dost except God were with
 him. * Iesus answered and said vnto him, Verily
 2 verely I say vnto thee, except a man be borne
 againe, hee cannot see the Kingdome of God.
 3 * Nicodemus said vnto him, How can a man be
 borne which is olde? can he enter into his ma-
 4 thers wombe againe and be borne? * Iesus an-
 swered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, except
 that a man be borne of water and of the Spi-
 5 rit, he cannot enter into the Kingdome of God.

CHAP. III.

* That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and
 that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit. * Mar-
 weile not that I said to thee, Ye must be born a-
 gain. * The wind bloweth where it listeth, and
 thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not
 tell whence it cometh, & whither it goeth: so
 is every man that is born of the Spirit. * Nico-
 demus answered, & saide vnto him, Howe can
 these things be? * Iesus answered, and saide vnto
 him, Art thou a teacher of Israel; and know-
 est not these things? * Verely, verely I say vnto
 thee, we speak that we know, & testifie that we
 haue seene: but ye receiue not our witnes. * If
 when I tell you earthly things, ye beleue not,
 how shold ye beleue, if I shal tel you of heauē-
 ly things? * For no man ascendeth vp to heauē,
 but he that hath descended frō heauē, that Sōne
 of man which is in heauen. * And as Moses lift
 vp the serpent in the wilderness, so must that
 Sōne of mā be lifted vp. * That whosoever be-
 leueth in him, should not perish, but haue eter-
 nal life. * For God so loued the world, that hee
 hath giuen his onely begotten Sōne, that who-
 soever beleueth in him, should not perish, but
 haue perlasting life. * For God sent not his
 Sōne into the world, that he should cōdemne
 the worlde, but that the worlde through him
 might be saued. * He that beleueth in him, is
 not condemned: but he that beleueth not, is
 condemned already, because he hath not bele-
 ued in the Name of that onely begottē Sōne of
 God. * And this is the condemnation, that that

S. I O H N.

light came into the world, & men loued darkness
 rather then that light, because their deedes were
 20 euill. * For euery man that euill doeth, hateth
 the light, neither cometh to light, lest his deedes
 21 should be reprobued. * But he that doeth truth,
 commeth to the light, that his deedes might be
 made manifest, that they are wrought accord-
 22 ding to God. * After these things came Iesus &
 his disciples into the land of Iudea, & there re-
 23 ried with them, and baptized. * And Iohn also
 baptized in Enon besides Salim, because there
 was much water there: and they came, and were
 24 baptized. * For Iohn was not yet cast into pri-
 25 son. * Then there arose a questiō between Iohns
 26 disciples, and the Iewes, about purifying. * And
 they came vnto Iohn, & saide vnto him, Rabbi,
 he that was with thee beyond Iordan, to whose
 thou barest witness, behold, he baptizeth, & all
 27 men come to him. * Iohn answered, & saide, A
 man can receiue nothing, except it be giue him
 28 from heauen. * Ye your selues are my witnesses,
 that I said, I am not that Christ, but that I am
 29 sent before him. * He that hath the bride is the
 bridegrome: but the friend of the bridegrome,
 which standeth & heareth him, reioyceth great-
 ly, because of the bridegromes voice. This my
 30 ioy therefore is fulfilled. * He must increase, but
 31 I must decrease. * He that is come from on high
 above all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth,
 & speaketh of the earth: he that is come from hea-
 32 uen, is above all. * And what he hath seene &
 heard, that he testifieth: but no mā receiveth his

CHAP. IIII.

testimonie. * He that hath receiued his testimo- 33
 nie, hath sealed that God is true. * For he, whom 34
 God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for
 god giveth him not the spirit by measure. * The 35
 Father loueth the Sonne, & hath giue all things
 into his hand. * He that beleueth in the Sonne, 36
 hath euerlasting life, and he that obeyeth not
 the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of
 God abideth on him.

CHAP. IIII.

NOwe when the Lord knew, how the Phari- 1
 ses had heard, that Iesus made and baptized 2
 no disciples then Iohn, * (Though Iesus him 3
 selfe baptized not: but his disciples) * He left 4
 Iudea, & departed againe into Galile. * And he 5
 must needs go through Samaria. * Then came 6
 he to a city of Samaria called Sychar, nere vnto
 the possession, that Iacob gaue to his sonne Io- 7
 seph. * And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then 8
 wearied in the iourney, sate thus on the well: it
 was about the sixt houre. * There came a wo- 9
 man of Samaria to draw water. Iesus said vnto
 her, Giue me drinke. * For his disciples were 10
 gone away into the citie, to buy meate. * Then 11
 said the woman of Samaria vnto him, Howe is
 it that thou being a Iewe, askest drinke of me,
 which am a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes
 meddle not with the Samaritanes. * Iesus an-
 swerd and said vnto her, If thou knewest that
 gift of God, & who it is that saith to thee, Giue
 me drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, &
 he would haue giuen thee water of life. * The 12
 woman

SECTION.

- woman said vnto him, Syr, thou hast nothing
to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from
12 whence then hast thou that water of life? * For
thou greater then our father Iacob, which gae
vs the well, and he him selfe dranke thereof,
13 and his sonnes, and his cattell? * Iesus answe-
red, and said vnto her, Whosoever drinketh of
14 this water shall thirst againe: * But whosoever
drinketh of the water that I shall giue him, shall
neuer be more a thirst: but the water that I
shall giue him, shall be in him a well of water,
15 springing vp vnto euerlasting life. * The woman
said vnto him, Sir, giue me of that water, that I
may not thirst, neither come hither to drawe.
16 * Iesus said vnto her, Go, call thine husband.
17 She answered, and said, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her, Thou
18 woldest say, I haue no husband. * For thou hast had
foure husbands, and he whome thou now hast
is not thine husband: that saidest thou truly.
19 * The woman said vnto him, Sir, I see that thou
20 art a Prophet. * Our fathers worshipped in this
mountaine, and ye say, that in Hierusalem is the
21 place where men ought to worship. * Iesus
said vnto her, Woman, beleene me, the houre cometh,
when ye shall neither in this mountaine,
22 nor at Hierusalem worshippinge the Father,
worship that which ye know not: we worship
that which we knowe: for saluation is of
23 Iewes. * But the houre cometh, and now
when the true worshippers shall worship the
Father in spirit, & truth: for the Father

CHAP. IIII.

then men shall worship him. * God is spirit, 24
 & they that worship him, must worship him in
 spirit and truth. * The woman said vnto him, I 25
 knowe well that Messias shall come which is
 called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs
 all things. * Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that 26
 speake vnto thee. * And vpon that came his di- 27
 ciples, and marueiled that he talked with a wo-
 man: yet no man haide vnto him, What askest
 thou? or why talkest thou with her? * The 28
 woman then lost her waterpot, and went her
 way into the citie, & said to the men, * Come, 29
 see a man which hath told me all thinges that
 euer I did: is not he that Christ? * Then they 30
 went out of the citie, and came vnto him. * In
 the meane while, the disciples prayed him, say-
 ing, Master, eate. * But he said vnto them, I haue 32
 meate to eate that ye know not of. * Then said 33
 the disciples betweene them selues, Hath any
 man brought him meate? * Iesus saide vnto 34
 them, My meate is that I may do the will of him
 that sent me, & finish his worke. * Say not ye, 35
 These are yet foure moneths, & then commeth
 harvest? Beholde, I say vnto you, Lift vp your
 eyes, & looke vpon the regions: for they are white
 already vnto harvest. * And he that reapeth, re- 36
 ceiveth rewarde, and gathereth fruite vnto life
 eternall: that both he that soweth, and he that
 reapeth, might reioyce together. * For herein is 37
 the saying true, that one soweth, and another
 reapeth. * I sent you to reape that, whereon ye 38
 followed no labour: other men laboured, and

39 ye are sent into their labors. ¶ Now were
 the Samaritanes of that cite beleeued in
 for the saying of the woman which testified
 40 hath told me all things that euent did. ¶ Then
 when the Samaritanes were come vnto him, they
 besought him, that he would tarry with them
 he shoud there two dayes. ¶ And many more
 41 leueed because of his owne worde. ¶ And he
 42 said vnto the woman, Now we beleeue not
 8 cause of thy saying: for we haue heard him
 selues, & know that this is indeede that Christ
 the Saniour of the world. ¶ So two dayes
 43 he departed thence, & went into Galile. ¶ For
 44 Iesus him selfe had testified, that a Prophet
 45 none honour in his owne countrey. ¶ Then
 he was come into Galile the Galileans receiued
 him, which had seene all the things that he
 at Hierusalem at the feast: for they went
 46 vnto the feast. ¶ And Iesus came againe
 Cana a towne of Galile, where he had made
 water, wine. And there was a certaine ruler
 47 whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum. ¶ When
 he heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea
 Galile, he went vnto him, & besought him
 he would go downe & heale his sonne: for
 48 was euen readie to die. ¶ Then said Iesus
 him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will
 49 not beleeue. ¶ The ruler said vnto him, Sir, go
 50 downe before my sonne die. ¶ Iesus said, Get
 thy way thy sonne lieth: and the man beleeued
 the worde that Iesus had spoken vnto him
 51 and went his way. ¶ And as he was now going
 downe

C H A P. IV.

double his seruants met him, saying, Thy sonne
 liueth. * Then enquired he of them the houre 53
 when he began to amend. And they said vnto
 him, Yesterday the seventh houre the fever left
 him. Then the father knew, that it was the same 53
 houre in the which Iesus had said vnto him,
 Thy sonne liueth. And he belerued, and all his
 household. * This second miracle did Iesus again, 54
 when he was come out of Iudea into Galilee.

C H A P. V.

After that, there was a feast of the Iewes, and
 Iesus went vp to Hierusalem. * And there 2
 is at Hierusalem by the place of the sheepe, a
 pool called in Ebrew Bethesda, hauing five
 pannes: * In the which lay a great multitude 3
 of sicke folke, of blinde, halte, & withered, way-
 ting for the moouing of the water. * For an 4
 Angell went down at a certaine season into the
 pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then
 was, after the stirring of the water, stepped in,
 was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.
 * And a certaine man was there, which had bin 5
 diseased eight & thirtie yeeres. * When Iesus 6
 saw him lie, & knew that he now long time had
 bene diseased, he saide vnto him, Wilt thou be
 made whole? * The sicke man answered him, 7
 Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled,
 to put me into the pool: but while I am
 coming, another steppeth downe before me.
 * Iesus said vnto him, Rise: take vp thy bed, & 8
 walke. * And immediatly the man was made 9
 whole, & tooke vp his bed, & walked: and the
same

S. I O H N.

- 10 same day was the Sabbath. * The Jewes there-
fore said to him that was made whole, It is the
Sabbath day: It is not lawfull for thee to take
11 thy bed. * He answered them, He that made me
whole, he said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and
12 walke. * Then asked they him, What man is
that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and
13 walke? * And he that was healed, knew not
who it was: for Iesus had conveyed him
away frō the multitude that was in that place.
14 * And after that, Iesus found him in the temple,
& said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole,
sinne no more, least a worse thing come vnto
15 thee. * The man departed, & told the Jewes
16 it was Iesus, which had made him whole. * And
therefore the Jewes did persecute Iesus, & sought
to slay him, because he had done these things
17 on the Sabbath day. * But Iesus answered
18 My Father worketh hitherto, & I work. * There-
fore the Jewes sought the more to kill him,
not onely because he had broken the Sabbath,
but said also that God was his Father, & made
19 him selfe equall with God. * Then answered
Iesus & said vnto them, Verely, verely I say
to you, The Sonne can do nothing of himselfe,
sine that he seeth the Father do: for whatso-
uer things he doeth, the same things doeth the
20 Sonne in like manner. * For the Father loveth
the Sonne, & sheweth him all things, whatso-
uer he him selfe doth, & he will shew him grea-
ter workes then these, that ye should mar-
21 * For likewise as the Father raiseth vp the dead,

C H A P. V.

and quickeneth them, so the Sonne quickeneth
 whome he will. * For the Father iudgeth no
 man, but hath committed all iudgement vnto the
 Sonne, * Because that all men should honour
 the Sonne, as they honour the Father: he that
 honoureth not the Sonne, the same honoureth
 not the Father, which hath sent him. * Verely, 24
 verely I say vnto you, he that heareth my word
 & beleueth him that sent me, hath euerlasting
 life and shall not come into condemnation, but
 hath passed from death vnto life. * Verely, vere- 25
 ly I say vnto you, the houre shall come, & now
 is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the
 Sonne of God: and they that heare it, shall liue.
 * For as the Father hath life in him selfe, so like- 26
 wise hath he given to the Sonne to haue life in
 him selfe, * And hath given him power also to
 execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of
 man. * Marueile not at this: for the houre shall 27
 come, in the which all that are in the graues shall
 heare his voyce. * And they shall come loorth,
 that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of
 life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the re- 28
 surrection of condemnation. * I can do nothing
 of mine owne selfe: as I heare, I iudge: and
 my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine
 owne will, but the will of the Father, who hath 29
 sent me. * If I should beare witnesse of my selfe, 30
 my witnesse were not true. * There is another
 that beareth witnesse of me, & I know that the
 witnesse which he beareth of me, is true. * Ye 31
 sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto the
 trueth.

S. I O H N

- 34 truth. * But I receiue not the record of manne-
 35 uertheles these things I say, that ye might be sa-
 36 ued. * He was a burning, & a shining candle, &
 ye would for a season haue reioiced in his light.
 37 * But I haue greater witnes then the witnes of
 Iohn: for the workes, which the Father hath
 giuen me to finish, the same workes that I doe,
 beare witness of me, that the Father sent me.
 38 * And the Father himselfe which hath sent me,
 beareth witness of me. Ye haue not heard his
 voyce at any time, neither haue ye seene his
 39 shape. * And his worde haue ye not abiding in
 you: for whome he hath sent, him ye beleeue
 40 not. * Search the Scriptures: for in them ye
 thinke to haue eternall life, and they are they
 41 which testifie of me. * But you will not come
 42 to me, that ye might haue life. * I receiue not
 43 praise of men. * But I know you, that ye haue
 not the loue of God in you. * I am come in my
 Fathers name & ye receiue me not: if another
 shall come in his owne name, him will ye re-
 44 ceine. * How can ye beleeue, which receiue ho-
 nour one of another, and seeke not the honour
 45 that cometh of God alone? * Do not thinke
 that I will accuse you to my Father: there is
 one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye
 46 trust. * For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would
 haue beleeued mee: for he wrote of me.
 47 * But if ye beleeue not his writings, howe shall
 ye beleeue my wordes.

C H A P. V I.

After these things, Iesus went his way ouer
the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias. * And a
great multitude folowed him, because they saw
his miracles, which he did on them that were
diseased. * Then Iesus went vp into a moun-
taine, & there he sate with his disciples. * Now
the Passeouer, a feast of the Iewes was nere.
* Then Iesus list vp his eyes, and seeing that a
great multitude came vnto him, he saide vnto
Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these
might eate? *(And this he said to proue him:
for he himselfe knew what he would do.) * Phi-
lip answered him, Two hundreth perryworth of
bread is not sufficient for them, that enery one
of them may take a litle. * Then said vnto him
one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters bro-
ther, * There is a litle boy here, which hath five
barley loaves, & two fishes: but what are they
among so many? * And Iesus saide, Make the
people sit downe. (Now there was much grasse
in that place.) Thew the men sitte downe, in
number aboue five thousand. * And Iesus tooke
the bread, & gaue thanks and gaue to the disci-
ples, & the disciples to the that were set downe:
& likewise of the fishes as much as they would.
* And when they were satisfied, he said vnto his
disciples, Gather vp the broken meat which re-
maineth that nothing be lost. * Then they ga-
thered it together, & filled twelue baskets with
the broken meat of the five barly loaves, which
remained vnto them that had eaten. * The the
men, when they had seene the miracle that Ie-
sus

S. I O H N.

- fus did, laide, This is of a truth that Prophet
15 that should come into the world. * When Je-
sus therefore perceived that they would come,
& take him to make him a King, he departed a-
16 gaine into a mountain him selfe alone. * When
euen was now come, his disciples went downe
17 vnto the sea, * And entred into a ship, & went ou-
uer the sea towards Capernaum: & now it was
18 darke, & Iesus was not come to them. * And the
19 sea arose with a great winde that blew. * And
when they had rowed about fise & twentie or
thirtie furlongs, they saw Iesus walking on the
sea, and drawing neere vnto the shippe: so they
20 were afraid, * But he said vnto them, It is I: be
21 not afraid, * Then willingly they received him
into the ship, and the ship was by & by at the
22 land, whither they went. * The day following,
the people which stonde on the other side of
the sea, sawe that there was none other shippe
there, save that one, wherunto his disciples were
entred, & that Iesus was not with his disciples
in the ship, but that his disciples were gone a-
23 lone, * And shew there came other ships from
Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate
24 the bread after the foord had giue thanks. * Now
when the people sawe that Iesus was not there,
neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping,
25 & came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus. * And
when they had found him on the other side of
the sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest
26 thou hither? * Iesus answered them, & said Ver-
acly, vtrelly I say vnto you, ye seeke me, not be-

CHAP. VI.

cause ye saw the miracles, but because ye ate of
 the loaves, & were filled. * Labour not for the 27
 meate which perisheth, but for the meate that
 endureth vnto euerlasting life, which the Sonne
 of man shall giue vnto you: for him hath God
 the Father sealed. * Then said they vnto him, 28
 What shall we doe, that we might worke the
 workes of God? * Iesus answered, and saide 29
 vnto them, This is the worke of God, that ye
 beleue in him, whome he hath sent. * They 30
 saide therefore vnto him, What signe shewest
 thou then, that we may see it, and beleue
 thee? what doest thou worke? * Our fathers 31
 did eate Manna in the desert, as it is written,
 He gaue them bread from heauen to eat. * Then 32
 Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto
 you, Moses gaue you not that bread from hea-
 uen, but my Father giueth you that true bread
 from heauen. * For the bread of God is he 33
 which commeth downe from heauen, and gi-
 ueth life vnto the worlde. * Then they saide 34
 vnto him, Lorde, ouermore giue vs this bread.
 * And Iesus saide vnto them, I am that bread 35
 of life: he that commeth to me, shall not hun-
 ger, and he that beleueth in me, shall neuer
 thirst. * But I said vnto you, that ye also haue 36
 seene me, and beleue not. * All that the Father 37
 giueth me, shall come to me: & him that co-
 meth to me, I cast not away. * For I came down 38
 from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but
 his will which hath sent me. * And this is the 39
 Fathers will which hath sent me, that of
 all

S. I O H N.

all which he hath given me, I should lose
 thing, but should raise it vp againe at the
 40 day. * And this is the will of him that sent me,
 that every man which seeth the Sonne, and be-
 leeueth in him, should haue everlasting life.
 41 I will raise him vp at the last day. * The Iewes
 then murmured at him, because he saide, I am
 that bread, which is come downe from heauen.
 42 * And they said, Is not this Iesus that Ioseph
 43 then saith hee, I came downe from heauen?
 Iesus then answered, & said vnto them, Murmur
 44 not among your selues. * No man can come
 to me, except the Father, which hath sent me, draw
 45 him: and I will raise him vp at the last day.
 It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be
 taught of God. Every man therefore that hath
 heard, & hath learned of the Father, cometh
 46 vnto me. * Not that any man hath seen the Fa-
 ther, save hee which is of God: he hath seen the
 47 Father. * Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that
 48 beleueth in me, hath everlasting life. * I am
 49 that bread of life. Your Fathers did eat Manna
 50 in the wilderness, and are dead. * This is the
 bread, which cometh downe from heauen,
 51 that he which eateth of it, should not die. I
 am that liuing bread, which came downe from
 heauen: If any man eate of this bread, he shall
 lue for ever: and the bread that I will giue
 my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the
 52 world. * Then the Iewes stroued among them-
 selues, saying, Howe can this man giue

CHAP. VI.

flesh to eat? * Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you, * Whosoever eateth my flesh, & drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, & I will raise him vp at the last day. * For my flesh is meat in deed, & my blood is drinke in deed. * He that eateth my flesh, & drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, & I in him. * As that lining Father hath sent me, so liue I by the Father, & he that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me. * This is the bread which came downe from heauen: not as your Fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread, shall liue for euer. * These things spake he in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum. * Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) said, This is an hard saying: who can heare it? * But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that his disciples murmured at this, said vnto the. Doth this offend you? * What then if ye should see that Sonne of man ascend vp where he was before? * It is the Spirit that quickneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I speake vnto you, are spirit & life. * But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Iesus knew from the beginning, which they were that beleeued not, & who should betray him. * And he said, Therefore saide I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father. * From that time many of his disciples went back, & walked no more with him. * Then said Iesus to the twelve,

R. I.

will

3. JOHN

- 58 will ye also go away? * Then Simon Peter
 answered him, Master, to whom shall we go?
 59 hast the words of eternal life? * And we believe
 & know that thou art that Christ that Son
 60 of the living God. * Iesus answered them, Have
 not I chosen you twelve, & one of you is a
 61 traitor? * Now he spake it of Judas Iscariot the son
 of Simon: for he it was that should betray him,
 though he was one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

- 1 **A**fter these things, Iesus walked in Galilee:
 he would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes
 2 sought to kill him. * Now the Iewes feast of the
 3 Tabernacles was at hand. * His brethren there-
 fore said vnto him, Depart hence, and go into
 Iudea, that thy disciples may see the works that
 4 thou doest. * For there is no man that doth any
 thing secretly, & he himselfe seeketh to be fa-
 mous. If thou doest these things, shew thyselfe
 5 to the world. * For as yet his brethren beleeued
 6 not in him. * Then Iesus said vnto them, My
 time is not yet come: but your time is alwaies
 7 readie. * The world can not hate you: but me it
 hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works
 8 therof are euill. * Go ye vp vnto this feast: I will
 not go vp yet vnto this feast: for my time is not
 9 yet fulfilled. * These things he saide vnto them,
 10 & abode still in Galilee. * But as soone as his bre-
 thren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto
 11 the feast, not openly, but as it were priuily. * Then
 the Iewes sought him at the feast, and saide,
 12 Where is he? * And much murmuring was there

CHAP. VII.

these of him among the people, Some said, He
 is a good man: other said, Nay: but he decei-
 veth the people. *Howbeit no man spake open- 13
 ly of him, for feare of the Iewes. *Now when 14
 halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp into the
 Temple, and taught. * And the Iewes marvel- 15
 led, saying. How knoweth this man the Scrip-
 tures, seeing that he neuer learned? * Iesus an- 16
 swered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine,
 but his that sent me. * If any man will doe his 17
 will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it
 be of God, or whether I speak of my selfe. *He 18
 that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne
 glory: but hee that seeketh his glory that sent
 him, the same is true. and no vnrighteousnes is
 in him. *Did not Moses giue you a Lawe, and 19
 yet none of you keepeth the Lawe? Why go ye
 about to kill me? *The people answered, & said, 20
 Thou hast a deuill: who goeth about to kill
 thee? *Iesus answered, and said to them. I haue 21
 done one worke, and ye all marueile. * Moses 22
 therefore gaue vnto you circumcision, (not
 because it is of Moses, but of the fathers,) and
 ye on the Sabbath day circuncise a man. *If a 23
 man on the Sabbath receiue circumcision, that
 the Law of Moses should not be broken, be ye
 angry with me, because I haue made a man e-
 uery whit whole on the Sabbath day? * Iudge 24
 not according to the appearance, but iudge righ-
 teous iudgemēt. *The said some of them of Je- 25
 rusalem, Is not this he, whom they go about to
 kill? *And behold, he speaketh openly, and they 26

S. IOHN.

- say nothing to him: do the rulers know in deed
 27 that this is in deed that Christ? * Howbeit we
 knowe this man whence he is : but when that
 Christ commeth , no man shall know : whom
 28 he is. * Then cried Iesus in the Temple as he
 taught, saying, Ye both know mee, & knowe
 whence I am: yet am I not come of my selfe,
 but he that sent me, is true, whome ye knowe
 29 not. * But I know him: for I am of him, and he
 30 hath sent me, * Then they sought to take him,
 but no man laide handes on him , because his
 31 houre was not yet come. * Now many of the
 people beleueed in him, and saide, When this
 Christ commeth, will he doe mo miracles than
 32 this man hath done? * The Pharisees heard that
 the people murmured these things of him: and
 the Pharisees, and his Priests sent officers to take
 33 him. * Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a while
 while with you, and then goe I vnto him that
 34 sent me, * Ye shall seeke me, and shall not find
 35 me, and where I am, can ye not come. * Then
 said the Iewes among themselves Whither wil
 he go, that we shall not find him? Will he goe
 vnto them that are disperfed among the Grec-
 36 ans, & teach the Grecians? * What saying is this
 that he saide, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not
 37 find me? & where I am, can ye not come? * Now
 in the last and great day of the feast, Iesus stood
 & cried, saying. If any man thirst, let him come
 38 vnto me, and drinke. * He that beleueneth in me,
 as saith the Scripture, out of his belly shall flow
 39 riuers of water of life. * (This spake he of the
 Spirit

CHAP. VII.

Spirit which they that beleeued in him, should
 receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet giuen,
 because that Iesus was not yet glorified.) * So 40
 many of the people, when they heard this say-
 ing, said, Of a truth this is that Prophet. * Other 41
 said, This is that Christ: and some said, But shall
 that Christ come out of Galilee? * Sayeth not 42
 the Scripture, that that Christ shall come of the
 seed of David, & out of the towne of Bethleem,
 where David was? * So was there dissension a- 43
 mong the people for him. * And some of them 44
 would haue taken him, but no man laid hands
 on him. * Then came the officers to the hig- 45
 Priestes and Pharises, and they said vnto them,
 Why haue ye not brought him? * The officers 46
 answered, Neuer man spake like this mā. * Then 47
 answered them the Pharises, Are ye also decei-
 ued? * Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Phari- 48
 ses beleeue in him? * But this people which 49
 know not the Law, are cursed. * Nicodemus 50
 said vnto the, (he that came to Iesus by night,
 & was one of them) * Doth our Law iudge a mā 51
 before it hear him, & know what he hath done?
 * They answered, & saide vnto him, Art thou 52
 also of Galilee? Search and looke for out of Ga-
 lilee ariseth no Prophet. * And euery man went 53
 vnto his owne house.

CHAP. VIII.

And Iesus went vnto the mount of Oliues, 1
 * And early in the morning came againe in- 2
 to the Temple, and all the people came vnto
 him, & he sat downe, and taught them. * Then 3

5. I O H N.

the Scribes and the Pharises brought vnto
a woman, taken in adultery, and set her in
4 middes. * And saide vnto him, Master, we found
this woman committing adultery, even in
5 very acte. * Now Moses in our Law comma-
ded, that such should be stoned: what saiest thou
6 therefor? * And this they saide to tempt him,
that they might haue, wherof to accuse him. But
Jesus stooped downe, and with his finger wrote
7 on the ground. * And while they continued
asking him, he lift himselfe vp, & said vnto them,
Let him that is among you without sinne, cast
8 the first stone at her. * And againe he stooped
downe, and wrote on the ground. * And when
9 they heard it, being accused by their owne con-
science, they went out one by one, beginning
the eldest euen to the last: so Jesus was left
10 alone, & the woman standing in the midst. * When
Jesus had lift vp himselfe againe, & saw no man
11 but the woman, he said vnto her, Woman, where
are those thine accusers? hath no man con-
12 demned thee? * Shee said, No man, Lord. And Jesus
said, Neither doe I condemne thee: go and sine
13 no more. * Then spake Jesus againe vnto them,
saying, I am that light of the world: he that fol-
14 loweth me, shall not walke in darkenes, but
15 shall haue that light of life. * The Pharises there-
fore said vnto him, Thou bearest record of thy
16 selfe: thy record is not true. * Jesus answered &
said vnto them, Though I beare record of my
17 selfe, yet my record is true: for I know whence I
came, & whither I go: but ye can not tel whither I
18

CHAP. VIII.

15 I come and whither I goe. *Ye iudge after the
 16 selfe I iudge no man. *And if I also iudge, my
 17 iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, &
 18 the Father, that sent me. *And it is also written
 19 in your Law, that the testimonie of two men is
 20 true. *I am one that beare witnes of my selfe,
 21 and the Father that sent me, beareth witnes of
 22 me. *Then said they vnto him, Where is that
 23 Father of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither know
 24 me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had known
 25 me, ye should haue known that Father of mine
 26 also. *These wordes spake Iesus in the treasure,
 27 as he taught in the Temple, and no man laide
 28 hands on him: for his houre was not yet come.
 29 *Then said Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my
 30 way, & ye shall seeke me, and shall die in your
 31 finnes. Whither I go, can ye not come. *Then
 32 said the Iewes, Will he kill himselfe, because he
 33 saith, Whither I go, can ye not come? *And he
 34 said vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from
 35 above: ye are of this worlde: I am not of this
 36 world. *I said therefore vnto you, That ye shal dy
 37 in your finnes: for except ye beleue, that I am
 38 heye shal dy in your finnes. *The said they vn-
 39 to him, Who art thou? And Iesus said vnto the,
 40 Euen the same thing, that I said vnto you from
 41 the beginning. *I haue many things to say, & to
 42 iudge of you: but he that sent me, is true, & the
 43 things that I haue heard of him, those I speak to
 44 the world. *They vnderstood not that he spake
 45 to them of the Father. *Then said Iesus vnto
 46 them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man,
 47 then

then shal ye know that I am he, & that I doe
 thing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught
 me, so I speak these things. * For he that sent me
 is with me: the Father hath not left me alone
 because I doe alwaies those thinges that please
 him. * As he spake these things, many beleued
 in him. * The said Iesus to the Iewes which be-
 leued in him, If ye continue in my word, ye are
 verely my disciples, * And shall know the truth
 & the truth shall make you free. * They answ-
 red him, We be Abrahams seed, & were never
 bond to any man: why sayest thou then, Ye shall
 be made free? * Iesus answered them, Verely, ve-
 rely I say vnto you, that whosoever cometh
 in sinne, is the servant of sinne. * And the seruant
 abideth not in the house forever: but the Sonne
 abideth for ever. * If that Sonne therefore shall
 make you free, ye shall be free indeed. * I know
 that ye are Abrahams seede, but ye seek to kill
 me, because my word hath no place in you. * I
 speake that which I haue seen with my Father
 & ye do that which ye haue seen with your fa-
 ther. * They answered, and said vnto him, Abra-
 ham is our father. Iesus said vnto the, If ye were
 Abrahams children, ye would do the workes of
 Abraham. * But now ye go about to kill me, a
 man that hath told you the truth, which I haue
 heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the
 workes of your father. The said they to him, We
 are not borne of fornication: we haue one father,
 which is God. * Therefore Iesus said vnto them,
 If God were your Father, then would ye love

C H A P. VII.

For I proceeded forth, & came fro God, nill-
 come I of my selfe, but he sent me. * Why 43
 ye not vnderstand my talke? because ye can
 not heare my word. * Ye are of your father the 44
 diuill, & the lustes of your father ye will do: he
 hath bene a murderer from the beginning, & a-
 bothe not in the truth, because there is no truth
 in him: When he speaketh a lie, the speaketh he
 of his owne: for he is a liar, & the father thereof.
 * And because I tel you the truth, ye beleene me 45
 not. Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? & 46
 say the truth, why doe ye not beleue me?
 He that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: ye 47
 therefore heare them not, because ye are not of
 God. * Tho answered the Iewes, & said vnto him, 48
 howe we not well that thou art a Samaritane, &
 hast a deuill? * Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill, 49
 but I honour my Father, & ye haue dishonoured
 me. * And I seek not mine own praise: but there 50
 is one that seeketh it, & iudgeth, * Verely, verely 51
 I say vnto you, If a man keep my word, he shal
 neuer see death. * Then saide the Iewes to him, 52
 Now know we that thou hast a deuill. Abrahā
 is dead, & the Prophets, & thou sayest, If a man
 keepe my word, he shall neuer taste of death.
 * Art thou greater the our father Abrahā, which 53
 is dead, & the Prophets are dead: whom makest
 thou thy selfe? * Iesus answered, If I honour my 54
 selfe mine honour is nothing worth: it is my fa-
 ther that honoureth me, whom ye say, that he is
 your God. * Yet ye haue not known him: but I 55
 know him, & if I should say, I know him not, I
 should

3. I O H N.

Should be a liar like vnto you but I know
 96 & keep his word. * Your father Abraham reioyced
 97 to see my day, & he saw it, & was glad. * The
 the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yea
 98 old, & hast thou seene Abraham? * Iesus said vnto
 the, Verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham
 99 was, I am. * The tooke they vp stones, to cast
 him, but Iesus hid himselfe, & wet out of the temple:
 And he passed through the mids of the, & wet
 his way.

C H A P. IX.

1 A Nd as Iesus passed by, he saw a man which
 2 was blind fro his birth. * And his disciples
 asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this
 man, or his parents, that he was borne blind?
 3 * Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned,
 nor his parents: but that the workes of God
 4 should be shewed on him. * I must worke the
 workes of him that sent me, while it is day: for
 5 night commeth when no man can worke. * As
 long as I am in the world, I am the light of the
 6 world. * As soone as he had thus spoken, he sp
 on the ground, & made clay of the spittle, & an
 7ointed the eyes of the blinde with the clay.
 8 * And said vnto him, Goe wash in the pool of
 Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent:) He
 went his way therefore, and washed, & came
 9 againe seeing. * Now the neighbours & they that
 had seene him before, when he was blind, say
 10 Is not this hee that sate and begged? * Some
 said, This is hee: and other said, He is like him:
 but he himselfe saide I am he. * Therefore
 said vnto him, Howe were thine eyes opened?

CHAP. IX.

answered, & said, The man that is called
 me, made clay, & annointed mine eyes, & said
 vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and wash.
 So I went, & washed, & receiued light. * Then
 they said vnto him, Where is he? He said, I can
 not tell. * They brought to the Pharises him
 that was once blind. * And it was the Sabbath
 day, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his
 eyes. * Then againe the Pharises also asked him,
 how hee had receiued light. And he said vnto
 them, He laid clay vpon mine eyes, & I washed,
 & doe see. * Then saide some of the Pharises,
 This man is not of God, because he keepeth not
 the Sabbath day. Others saide, How can a man
 that is a sinner, do such miracles? & there was a
 division among them. * Then spake they vnto
 the blind againe, What saiest thou of him, be-
 cause he hath opened thine eyes? And he saide,
 He is a Prophet. * Then the Iewes did not be-
 lieue him, (that he had bin blind, & receiued his
 sight) until they had called the parents of him
 that had receiued sight. * And they asked them,
 Is this your sonne, who ye say was borne
 blind? How doth he now see thee? His parents
 answered them, & said, We knowe that this is
 our sonne, & that he was borne blind. * But by
 what meanes he now seeth, wee know not: or
 who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is
 enough aske him: he shall answer for him-
 self. * These words spake his parents, because
 they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordai-
 ned already, that if any man did confesse that he

S. I O H N.

21 was Christ, he should be *excommunicat*
 22 the Synagogue. * Therefore said his parents
 23 is old ynough: aske him. * Then againe
 24 they the man that had bene blind, & said vnto
 25 him, Giue glorie vnto God: we know that
 26 man is a sinner. * Then he answered, and said
 27 Whether he be a sinner, or no, I can not tell
 28 thing I know, that I was blind, and now I see.
 29 * Then said they to him againe, What did he
 30 do to thee? how opened he thine eyes? * He answered
 31 them, I haue tolde you already, and ye haue
 32 not heard it: wherfore would ye heare it againe?
 33 wil ye be also his disciples? * Then reuiled they
 34 him, & said, Thou art his disciple, we be not
 35 disciples. * We know that God spake with Moyses:
 36 but this man we know not from whence he
 37 is. * The man answered, & said vnto thei, Doe
 38 lesse, this is a marueilous thing, that ye know
 39 not whence he is, & yet he hath opened mine
 40 eyes. * Nowe we knowe, that God heareth sinners:
 41 but if any man be a worshipper of God, & doth
 42 his wil, him heareth he. * Since the world
 43 began was it not heard, that any mā opened the
 44 eyes of one that was borne blind. * If this man
 45 were not of God, he could haue done nothing.
 46 * They answered, & said vnto him, Thou art
 47 together born in sinnes, & dost thou teach vs?
 48 So they cast him out. * Iesus heard that they
 49 had cast him out: & when he had found him, he
 50 said vnto him, Doe thou beleeue in the Son
 51 of God? * He answered and said, Who is he
 52 Lord, that I might beleeue in him? * And Iesus

CHAP. X.

1 Both thou hast scene him, & he is
 2 talking with thee. * Then he said, Lord, I
 3 worshipped him. * And Iesus saide, I
 4 am come vnto iudgement into this world, that
 5 they which see not, might see. & that they which
 6 might be made blinde. * And some of the
 7 pharisees which were with him, hearde these
 8 sayes, & said vnto him, Are we blind also? * Ie-
 9 sus said vnto the, If ye were blind, ye should not
 10 sin: but now ye say, We see: therefore your
 11 sin remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that entreteth
 2 in by the doore into the sheepfold, but
 3 goeth vp another way, he is a thiefe, & a rob-
 4 ber. * But he that goeth in by the doore, is the
 5 shepheard of the sheep. * To him the porter o-
 6 peneth, & the sheep heare his voice, & he calleth
 7 his owne sheepe by name, & leadeth them out.
 8 And when he hath sent forth his own sheep,
 9 he goeth before them, & the sheep follow him:
 10 for they know his voice. * And they will not
 11 follow a stranger, but they flee fro him: for they
 12 know not the voice of strangers. * This parable
 13 saide Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstood not
 14 the things they were, which he spak vnto the.
 15 Iesus said Iesus vnto the againe, Verely, verely I
 16 say vnto you, I am the doore of the sheep. * All
 17 that euer came before me, are theenes & robbers:
 18 for the sheep did not heare the. * I am the doore:
 19 if any man enter in, he shalbe saued, and
 20 he will go in, & go out, & finde pasture. * The thief
 21 cometh not, but for to steale, & to kill, and so

S. I O H N.

destroy: I am come that they might haue life, &
11 haue it in abūdāce. * I am that good shepheard
that good shephearde giueth his life for his
12 sheepe. * But an hireling, & he which is not the
shepheard, neither are the sheepe his own, seeth
the wolfe comming, & he leaueth the sheepe, &
13 fleeth, & the wolfe catcheth them, & scattereth
the sheepe. * So the hireling fleeth, because he is
14 an hireling, & careth not for the sheepe. * I am
that good shephearde, and know mine, and am
15 knowne of mine. * As the Father knoweth me,
so know I the Father, & I lay down my life for
16 my sheepe. * Other sheepe I haue also, which are
not of this fold: them also must I bring, & they
shall heare my voice: & there shall be one sheepe
17 fold, & one shepheard. * Therefore doeth my Fa-
ther loue me, because I lay downe my life, that
18 I might take it againe. * No man taketh it of
me: but I lay it down of my selfe: I haue power
to lay it downe, & haue power to take it againe.
19 This commaundement haue I receiued of my
Father. * Then there was a dissention among
20 the Iewes for these sayings. * And many of the
said, He hath a deuill, & is madde: why heare ye
21 him? Others said, These are not the wordes of
him that hath a deuill: can the deuill open the
22 eyes of the blinde? * And it was at Hierusalem
the feast of the Dedicatiō. & it was winter. * And
23 Iesus walked in the Temple, in Solomōns porch.
24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and
saide vnto him, How long dost thou make vs
doubt? If thou be that Christ, tell vs plainly.
* Iesus

CHAP. IX.

*Iesus answered them, I told you, & ye beleeue not: the works that I do in my Fathers Name, they beare witnes of me. *But ye beleeue not: for ye are not of my sheepe as I said vnto you. *My sheepe heare my voice, & I know them, & they follow me. *And I giue vnto them eternal life, & they shall neuer perishe, neither shall any pluck the out of mine hand. *My Father which geueth them me, is greater then al, & none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand. *I & my Father are one. *Then the Iewes againe took vp stones, to stone him. *Iesus answered the, Many good works haue I shewed you from my Father, in which of these works do ye stone me? *The Iewes answered him, saying, For the good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemie, & that thou bring a man, makest thy selfe God. *Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your Law, I said, Ye are gods? *If he called them gods, vnto who the word of God was giuen, & the Scriptures cannot be broken, *Say yee of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, & set into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Sonne of God? *If I doe not the worke of my Father, beleeue me not. *But if I do, then though ye beleeue not me, yet beleeue the works, that ye may know & beleeue, that the Father is in me, & I in him. *Again they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their handes, *And went apace beyond Iordā, into the place where Iohn was baptized, & there abode. *And many resorted vnto him, & saide, Iohn did no miracle: but all

S. I O H N.

all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true. * And many belcened in him there.

C H A P. XI.

1 **A**Nd a certain man was sicke, named Lazarus
 2 of Bethania, the towne of Marie, & her sister
 3 Martha. * (And it was that Marie which anoynted
 4 the Lord with oyntment, & wiped his feet
 5 with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.)
 6 * Therefore his sisters set vnto him, saying, Lord,
 7 behold, he whome thou louest, is sicke. * When
 8 Iesus heard it, he said, This sickenes is not vnto
 9 death, but for the glorie of God, that the Son
 10 of God might be glorified therby. * Now Iesus
 11 loued Martha & her sister, & Lazarus. * And
 12 after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode he
 13 two daies still in the same place where he was.
 14 * Then after that, said he to his disciples, Let vs
 15 goe into Iudea againe. * The disciples said vnto
 16 him, Master, the Iewes lately sought to stone
 17 thee, & dost thou go thither againe? * Iesus answered,
 18 Are there not twelue houres in the day?
 19 If a man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, be-
 20 cause he seeth the light of this world. * But if a
 21 man walke in the night, hee stumbleth, because
 22 there is no light in him. * These things spake
 23 hee, & after he said vnto them, Our friende La-
 24 zarus sleepeth: but I go to wake him vp. * Then
 25 said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shalbe safe.
 26 * Howbeit, Iesus spake of his death: but they
 27 thought that he had spokē of the natural sleep.
 28 * Then said Iesus vnto them plainly, Lazarus is
 29 dead. * And I am glad for your sakes, that I was

to there that ye may beleewe: but let vs go vnto
 him. * Then said Thomas (which is called Di- 16
 sciple) vnto his fellow disciples. Let vs also go,
 that we may die with him. * Then came Iesus & 17
 said that he had lien in the graue 4 daies alrea-
 dy. (Now Bethania was nere vnto Hierusalem 18
 about 1 s. i. furlongs off.) * And many of the Iewes 19
 were come to Martha & Marie to comfort them
 for their brother. * Then Martha whē she heard 20
 that Iesus was coming, went to meete him: but
 Marie saie still in the house. * Then said Martha 21
 vnto Iesus, Lorde, if thou haddest bene here, my
 brother had not bene dead. * But now I know 22
 that whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God
 will giue it thee. * Iesus said vnto her, Thy bro- 23
 ther shall rise againe. * Martha said vnto him, I 24
 know that he shall rise againe in the resurrectio-
 n the last day. * Iesus said vnto her, I am the re- 25
 surrection & the life: he that beleeueth in mee,
 though he were dead, yet shall he liue. * And 26
 whosoever liueth, & beleueth in me, shal neuer
 be deceiued thou this? * She said vnto him, Yea, 27
 Lorde, I beleewe that thou art that Chriff that
 Sone of god, which shold come into the world.
 * And when she had so said, she went her way, & 28
 called Marie her sister secretly, saying. The ma-
 ster is come, & calleth for thee. * And when she 29
 heard it, she arose quickly, & came vnto him.
 * For Iesus was not yet come into the towne,
 but was in the place where Martha met him. 30
 * The Iewes then which were with her in the 31
 house & comforted her, whē they saw Marie, that

- 32 **32** She rose vp hastily, & went out, following him
 saying, She goeth vnto the grave, to weep there.
 33 **33** * Then when Marie was come where Iesus was
 & saw him, she fel down at his feet, saying vnto
 him, Lord, if thou haddest bene here, my brother
 34 **34** hath not bene dead. * When Iesus therefore saw
 her weep, & the Iewes also weep which came
 with her, he groined in the spirit, & was troubled
 35 **35** in himself. * And said, Where haue ye laid him?
 They said vnto him, Lord, come & see. * And Iesus
 36 **36** wept. * Then saide the Iewes, Beholde, how
 he loued him. * And some of the said, Could hee
 37 **37** haue, which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue
 made also, that this man should not haue died?
 38 **38** * Iesus therefore againe groined in him selfe, &
 came to the grave. And it was a cave, & a stone
 39 **39** was laid vpon it. * Iesus said, Take ye away the
 stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead,
 40 **40** saide vnto him, Lord, he stinketh already: for he
 hath bin dead 4. daies. * Iesus said vnto her, Saile
 I not vnto thee, that if thou diddest beleue, thou
 41 **41** shouldest see the glory of god? * Then they took
 away the stone from the place where the dead
 42 **42** was laid. And Iesus list vp his eyes, & saide, Fa-
 ther, I thank thee, because thou hast heard me. * I
 know that thou hearest me alwaies, but because
 43 **43** of the people that stande by, I saide it that they
 may beleue, that thou hast sent me. * As he had
 spoken these things, he cried with a loud voice,
 44 **44** Lazarus, come forth. * Then he that was dead,
 came forth, bound hande & foot with bands, &
 his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said

CHAP. XL

45 **then, Loose him, & let him go. * The ma-**
 ny of the Iewes, which came to Marie, and had
 seen the things which Iesus did, beleued in him.
 46 *** But some of the went their way to the Pharises,**
 & told the what things Iesus had done. * Then
 47 gathered the hie Priests, & the Pharises a coun-
 cil, & said, What shal we doe For this man doth
 many miracles. * If we let him thus alone, al me
 48 wil beleene in him, & the Romanes wil come &
 take away both our place, & the nation. * Then
 49 one of the named Caiaphas, which was the hie
 priest that same yere, said vnto the, Ye perceiue
 nothing at all, * Nor yet do you consider that it
 50 is expedient for vs, that one mā die for the peo-
 ple & that the whole nation perish not. * This
 51 saie he not of himself: but being hie priest that
 same yere, he prophesied that Iesus should die
 for that nation. * And not for that natiō onely,
 52 but that he should gather together in one, the
 children of God, which were scattered. * Then
 53 from that day forth they consulted together, to
 put him to death. * Iesus therefore walked no
 54 more openly among the Iewes, but went thence
 vnto a countrey nere to the wildernes, into a citie
 called Ephraim, & there continued with his dis-
 55 ciples. * And the Iewes Passecouer was at hand, &
 many went out of the countrey vp to Hierusalem
 before the Passecouer, to purifie theselues. * Then
 56 sought they for Iesus, & spake among theselues,
 as they stood in the Temple, What thinke yee,
 57 that he cometh not to the feast? * Nowe both
 the hie Priests & the Pharises had giuen a com-

mandement, that if any man knew where
were, hee should shew it, that they might
find him.

CHAP. XII.

- 1 **T**hen Iesus, fixe dayes before the Passover,
came to Bethania, where Lazarus was,
2 dyed, whom he had raised from the dead. * Then
they made him a supper, & Martha serued: but
3 Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table
with him. * Then tooke Marie a pound of
4 oyntment of Spikenard very costly, and anointed
Iesus feet, & wiped his feete with her haire,
and the house was filled with the saour of the
5 ointment. * Then said one of his disciples,
Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne, which should be-
6 tray him: * Why was not this ointment sold
for three hundred pence, & given to the poore?
7 * Nowe he said this, not that he cared for the
poore, but because he was a thiefe, and had the
8 bag, & bare that which was given. * Then said
Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my be-
9 rying she kept it. * For the poore alwayes
have with you, but me ye shall not have al-
10 wayes. * Then much people of the Iewes knew
that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus
11 sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also,
whom he had raised from the dead. * The
12 Priests therefore consulted that they might
kill Lazarus to death also, * Because that for
13 his sake many of the Iewes went away, & be-
lieved in Iesus. * On the morowe a great multitude
14 that were come to the feast, when they heard
that Iesus should come to Hierusalem, * Took
15 branches

C H A P. XII.

branches of plaine trees, & went forth to meete
 him, & cryed, Hosanna, Blessed is the King of Is-
 rael that cometh in the Name of the Lorde.
 *And Iesus found a yong asse, & sate thereon, as
 it is written; *Feare not, daughter of Sion: be-
 hold thy King cometh sitting on an asses colte.
 *But his disciples vnderstood not these things
 at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then
 remembered they, that these things were written
 of him, & that they had done these things vnto
 him. *The people therefore that was with him,
 bare witness that he called Lazarus out of the
 grave, & raised him from the dead. *Therefore
 met him the people also, because they heard
 that he had done this miracle. *And the Phari-
 sees said among them selues, Perceiue ye how ye
 payntle nothing? Behold, the world goeth af-
 ter him. *Now there were certaine Greekes a-
 mong them that came vp to worshippe at the
 feast. *And they came to Philip, which was of
 Bethsaida in Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir,
 we would see that Iesus. *Philip came and told
 Andrew: & againe Andrew & Philip tolde Je-
 sus. *And Iesus answered the, saying, The houre
 is come, that the Sonne of man must be glorifi-
 ed. *Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the
 wheat corne fall into the ground and dye, it be-
 geth not: but if it die, it bringeth forth much
 fruite. *He that loseth his life, shall lose it, and
 he that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe
 it vnto life eternall. *If any man serue me, let
 him follow me: for where I am, there shall also

3. I O H N.

my seruant be: & if any man serue me, him will
 27 my Father honour. * Nowe is my soule trou-
 bled: & what shall I say? Father, saue me from
 this houre: but therefore came I vnto this houre.
 28 * Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a
 voyce from heauen. *saying*, I haue both glorif-
 29 ed it, and will glorifie it againe. * Then said the
 people that stood by, and heard, that it was a
 thunder: other saide, An Angel spake to him.
 30 * Iesus answered, and said, This voyce came not
 31 because of me, but for your sakes. * Now is the
 iudgement of this world: now shall the prince
 32 of this world be cast out. * And I, if I were lift
 vp from the earth, will draw all men vnto me.
 33 * Nowe this said he, signifying what death he
 34 should die. * The people answered him, We
 haue heard out of the Law, that that Christ hi-
 deth for euer: and howe sayest thou, that the
 Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is that
 35 Sonne of man? * Then Iesus said vnto them, Ye
 a little while is the light with you: walk
 while ye haue that light, least the darknes come
 vpon you: for he that walketh in the dark-
 36 knoweth not whither he goeth. * While ye
 haue that light, beleue in that light, that ye may
 be the children of the light. These things spake
 Iesus, & departed, and hid him selfe from them.
 37 * And though he had done so many miracles
 38 before the, yet beleued they not on him. * The
 saying of Esaias the Prophet might be ful-
 filled, that he said, Lorde, who beleued our re-
 port: & to whome is the arme of the Lord re-
 ualed.

CHAPTER XII

saied? * Therefore could they not beleue, be-
 cause that Esaias saith againe, * He hath blinded
 their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they
 should not see with *their* eyes, nor vnderstande
 with *their* heart, & should be converted, and I
 should heale them. * These things saide Esaias
 when he saw his glorie, & spake of him. * Ne-
 verthelesse, even among the chiefe rulers, many
 beleued in him: but because of the Pharisees
 they did not confesse him, lest they should be
 cast out of the Synagogue. * For they loued
 the praise of men more then the praise of God.
 * And Iesus cryed, & said, He that beleueth in
 me, beleueth not in me, but in him that sent
 me. * And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent
 me. * I am come a light into the worlde, that
 whosoener beleueth in me, should not abide in
 darkenesse. * And if any man heare my wordes,
 & beleue not, I iudge him not: for I came not
 to iudge the world, but to save the world. * He
 that reuseth me, & receiveth not my wordes,
 hath one that iudgeth him: the worde that I
 have spoken, it shall iudge him in the last day.
 * For I have not spoken of my selfe: but the Fa-
 ther which sent me, he gave me a commande-
 ment what I should say & what I should speake.
 * And I knowe that his commandement is life
 everlasting: the things therefore that I speake,
 I speake them, so as the Father said vnto me.

CHAPTER XIII

NOW before the feast of the Pasche, when
 Iesus knew that his houre was come, that

VISION.

he should depart out of this world vnto
 Father, forasmuch as he loued his owne
 were in the world, vnto the end he loued them.
 2 * And when supper was done (& that the
 had now put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot
 3 thons some, to betray him) Iesus knowing that
 the Father had giuen all things into his hands,
 & that he was come forth from God, and went
 to God, * He riseth from supper, & layeth
 his upper garments, & tooke a towel, & girded
 himselfe. * After that, he poured water into
 5 a basin, & began to wash the disciples feet, and to
 wipe them with the towel, wherewith he was
 girded. * Then came he to Simon Peter, who
 7 said, Lord doe thou wash my feet? * Iesus an-
 swered, and saide vnto him, What I doe, thou
 knowest not now: but thou shalt know it here-
 8 after. * Peter saide vnto him, Thou shalt
 wash my feet. Iesus answered him, If I wash
 9 thee not, thou shalt haue no part with me. Si-
 mon Peter said vnto him, Lorde, not my feet
 10 only, but also the hands & the head. * Iesus said
 to him, He that is washed, needeth not, but to
 11 wash his feet, but is cleane euery whit. & ye are
 cleane, but not all: * For he knew who should
 betray him: therefore saide he, Ye are not all
 12 cleane. * So after he had washed their feet, and
 had taken his garments, & was set down againe,
 he said vnto them, Knowe ye what I haue done
 13 to you? * Ye call me Master, & Lord, and ye say
 14 well, for so am I. * If I then your Lord,
 haue washed your feet, ye also ought

CHAP. XVII.

one anothers feete. * For I haue giuen you
 an example, that ye should doe, euen as I haue
 done to you. * Verely, verely I say vnto you,
 The seruant is not greater then his master, nei-
 ther the ambassadour greater then he that sent
 him. * If ye know these things, blessed are ye, if
 ye do them. * I speake not of you all: I knowe
 whome I haue chosen: but it is that the Scrip-
 ture might be fulfilled, He that eateth bread
 with me hath lift vp his heele against me. * Fro-
 hereforth tell I you before it come, that when
 it shall come to passe, ye might beleue that I am
 he. * Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I send any,
 he that receiveth him, receiveth me, & he that
 receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. * Whe-
 Jesu had said these thinges, he was troubled in
 the Spirit, & testified, & said, Verely, verely I say
 vnto you, that one of you shall betray me. * The
 disciples looked one on another, doubting
 of whom he spake. * Now there was one of his
 disciples, which leaned on Iesus bosome, whom
 Iesus loved. * To him therefore beckened Simon
 Peter, that he should aske who it was of whom
 he spake. * He then as he leaned on Iesus brest,
 said vnto him, Lord, who is it? * Iesus answered,
 He it is, to whom I shall giue a sop, when I haue
 dipt it: & he wet a sop, & gaue it to Iudas Isca-
 riot, simons sonne. * And after the soppe, Satan
 tempted mee him. Then saide Iesus vnto him,
 Thou doest so quickly. * But none of them
 knewe for what cause he
 said to Iesus this. * For some of them thought

S. I O H N.

because Iudas had the bag, that Iesus had giue
vnto him. Buy those things that we haue neede
of against the feast: or that he should giue some
30 thing to the poore. * A litle then as he had re-
ceiued the soppe, he went immediatly out. It
31 was night. * When he was gone out, Iesus said,
Now is the Sonne of man glorified and Gods
32 glorified in him. * If God be glorified in him,
God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, & shall
33 straightway glorifie him. * Little children, yet a
little while am I with you: yet shall seeke me out
as I said vnto the Iewes, Whither I go, ye
34 not come: also to you say I now, * A new
mandement giue I vnto you, that ye loue one
another: as I haue loued you, that ye also loue
35 one another. * By this shall all men knowe that
ye are my disciples, if ye haue loue one to ano-
36 ther. * Simo Peter said vnto him, Lord, whither
goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I go,
thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt
37 follow me afterwarde. * Peter said vnto him,
Lord, why can I not follow thee now? I will
38 lay downe my life for thy sake. * Iesus answered
him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake?
Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke shall
not crowe, till thou haue denied me thrise.

C H A P. X I I I. Iud. 2. 31. 300.

1 E t nat your heart be troubled: ye beleue
2 in God, beleene also in me. * In my Fathers
house are many dwelling places: if it were not
3 so, I would haue tolde you. I go to prepare a
4 place for you. * And if I go to prepare a place

CHAP. XIII

I will come againe, & receive you vnto
 my selfe, that where I am, there may ye be also.
 * And whither I goe, ye knowe, and the way ye
 know. * Thomas said vnto him, Lord, we knowe
 not whither thou goest: how can we knowe
 the way? * Iesus said vnto him, I am that Way,
 & that Trueth, & that Life. No man cometh
 vnto the Father, but by me. * If ye had knownen
 me, ye should haue knowen my Father also: &
 from henceforth, ye knowe him, and haue seene
 him. * Philip said vnto him, Lorde, shewe vs the
 Father, & it sufficeth vs. * Iesus said vnto him, I
 haue bene so long time with you, & haue thou
 not knowen me, Philip? he that hath seene me,
 hath seene my Father: howe then sayest thou,
 shewe vs the Father? * Beleeuest thou not that
 I am in the Father, & the Father is in me? The
 wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of
 my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me,
 he doeth the workes. * Beleeue me, that I am in
 the Father, & the Father is in me: at the least
 beleeue me for the very workes sake. * Verily,
 verily, I say vnto you, he that beleeueth in me,
 he workes that I do, he shall do also, & greater
 then these, that he do: for I go vnto my Father.
 * And what neuer ye aske in my Name,
 that will I do, that the Father may be glorified
 in the Sonne. * If ye shall aske any thing in my
 Name, I will doe it. * If ye loue me, keepe my
 commandements, * And I will pray the Father,
 & he shall giue you another Comforter, that
 shall abide with you for euer, & shall be

S I O N.

Spirit of truth, whome the worlde can not
 see, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth
 him: but ye know him: for he dwelleth with you
 & shall be in you. * I will not leave you fatherless
 but I will come to you. * Yet a little while, & the
 world shall see me no more, but ye shall see me
 because I live, ye shall live also. * At that day shall
 ye know that I am in my Father, & you in the
 Father, & I in you. * He that hath my commandments,
 & keepeth them, is he that loveth me: and he
 that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father: and
 I will love him, & will shew mine owne selfe to
 him. * Judas said vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord,
 what is the cause that thou wilt shew thy selfe
 vnto us, & not vnto the world? * Iesus answered
 & said vnto him, If any man love me, he will
 keepe my word & my Father will love him, &
 we will come vnto him, & will dwell with him.
 * He that loveth me not, keepeth not my
 words, & the word which ye heare, is not mine,
 but the Fathers which sent me. * These things
 have I spoken vnto you, being present with
 you. * But the Comforter, which is the holy
 Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name,
 he shall teach you all things, & bring all things
 to your remembrance which I have tolde you.
 * Peace I leave with you, my peace I give vnto
 you: not as the world giveth, give I vnto you.
 Let not your heart be troubled, nor feare. * Ye
 have heard how I said vnto you, I go away, but
 will come vnto you. If ye loved me, ye would
 have joyed, because I said, I go vnto the Father.

Therefore the Father is greater then I. * And now
 have I spoken vnto you, before it come, that
 when it is come to passe, ye might beleue.
 Hereafter will I not speake many things vnto
 you: for the prince of this world commeth, &
 hath nought in me. * But it is that the worlde
 may know that I loue my Father: & as the Fa-
 ther hath commanded me, so I doe. Arise, let vs
 goe hence.

CHAP. XV.

I Am that true vine, and my Father is that hus-
 bandman. * Euery branch that beareth not
 fruit in mee, he taketh away: and euery one
 that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may
 bring forth more fruit. * Now are ye clean thro-
 row the word, which I haue spoken vnto you.
 * Abide in me, and I in you: as the branch can
 not beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in the
 vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me. * I
 am that vine: ye are the branches: he that abi-
 deth in me, & I in him, the same bringeth forth
 much fruit: for without me can ye do nothing.
 * If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a
 branch, & withereth: & men gather them, and
 cast them into the fire, & they burne. * If ye
 abide in me, & my words abide in you, ask what
 ye will, & it shalbe done to you. * Herein is my
 Father glorified, that ye beare much fruit, & be
 made my disciples. * As the Father hath loued
 me, so haue I loued you: continue in that my
 loue. * If ye shal keepe my commandments, ye
 shall abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fa-

- 22 their commandments, and abide in his love.
 23 * These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my
 24 ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy
 25 might be full. * This is my commandment,
 26 that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you.
 27 * Greater loue then this hath no man, when
 28 any man bestoweth his life for his friends: * Ye
 29 are my friends, if ye do whatsoeuer I command
 30 you. * Henceforth, call I you not seruants: for
 31 the seruant knoweth not what his master doeth:
 32 but I haue called you friends: for all things that
 33 I haue heard of my Father, haue I made known
 34 en to you. * Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue
 35 chosen you, and ordeined you that ye goe and
 36 bring forth fruit, & that your fruit remaine, that
 37 whatsoeuer ye shall aske of the Father in my
 38 Name, he may giue it you. * These things com-
 39 mand I you, that ye loue one another. * If the
 40 worlde hate you, ye know that it hated me be-
 41 fore you. * If ye were of the worlde, the worlde
 42 would loue his owne: but because ye are not
 43 of the worlde, but I haue chosen you out of the
 44 worlde, therefore the worlde hateth you. * Re-
 45 member the word that I said vnto you, The ser-
 46 uant is not greater then his master. If they haue
 47 persecuted me, they will persecute you also: if
 48 they haue kept my worde, they will also keepe
 49 yours. * But all these things will they do vnto
 50 you for my Names sake, because they haue not
 51 known him that sent me. * If I had not come
 52 & spoken vnto them, they should not haue had
 53 sinne: but nowe haue they no cloke for their
 54 sinne.

C H A P. XVI.

21 **He** that hateth me, hateth my Father also.
 22 **If** I had not done workes among them
 which none other man did, they had not had
 23 **hate**: but now haue they both scene, and haue
 hated both me, & my Father. **But** it is that the
 word might be fulfilled, that is written in their
 lawe, They hated me without a cause. **But**
 24 when that Comforter shall come, whom I will
 send vnto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit
 of truth, which proceedeth of the Father, he shall
 25 **testifie** of me. **And** ye shall witnesse also, because
 ye haue bene with me from the beginning.

C H A P. XVI.

1 **These** things haue I said vnto you, that ye
 should not be offended. **They** shall exco-
 2 **municate** you: yea, the time shall come, that
 whosoever killeth you, will thinke that he doth
 God service. **And** these things will they doe
 3 vnto you, because they haue not knowen the
 Father, nor me. **But** these things haue I tolde
 4 you, that when the houre shall come, ye might
 remember, that I tolde you them. **And** these
 things said I not vnto you from the beginning,
 because I was with you. **But** now I goe my
 5 way to him that sent me, & none of you asketh
 me, Whither goest thou? **But** because I haue
 6 said these things vnto you, your hearts are full
 of sorow. **Yet** I tell you the truth. It is expe-
 7 **dient** for you that I goe away: for if I goe not
 away, that Comforter will not come vnto you:
 but if I depart, I will send him vnto you. **And**
 8 when he is come, he will reprove the world of
 sinne,

9. sinne, & of righteousness, & of iudgement: *
 10. sinne, because they beleue not in me: *
 11. righteousness, because I go to my Father, &
 12. shall see me no more: * Of iudgement, because
 13. the Prince of this world is iudged. * I have yet
 many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot
 14. beare them now. * Howbeit, when he is come
 which is the Spirit of truth, he shall lead you
 into all truth: for he shall not speake of him
 selfe, but whatsoever he shall heare, shall he
 speake, & he will shew you the things to come.
 15. * He shall glorifie me: for he shall receive
 16. mine, & shall shew it vnto you. * All things that
 the Father hath are mine: therefore said I that
 17. shall take of mine, & shew it vnto you. * A little
 while, & ye shall not see me: & againe a little while
 18. & ye shall see me: for I go to the Father. * They
 saide some of his disciples among them selves,
 What is this that he saith vnto vs, A little while,
 & ye shall not see me, & againe, A little while,
 19. ye shall see me, & For I go to the Father? * They
 said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little
 20. while? we know not what he saith. * Now Ie-
 sus knew that they would aske him, & said vnto
 them, Doe ye enquire among your selves, of
 that I said, A little while, & ye shall not see me:
 21. & againe, A little while, & ye shall see me? * Ve-
 rely, verely I say vnto you, that ye shall weepe
 & lament, & the world shall reioyce: & ye shall
 sorowe, but your sorowe shall be turned to ioy.
 22. * A woman when she travaileth, hath sorowe,
 because her houre is come: but as soon as she
 hath borne a child, she forgetteth the sorowe,
 because she hath borne a man into the world.

delivered of the child, she remembreth no more
 the anguish, for ioy that a man is borne into
 the world. *And ye now therefore are in sorow: 18
 but I will see you againe, and your hearts shall
 reioice, & your ioy shall no man take from you.
 *And in that day shall ye aske me nothing. Ve- 21
 rily, verily I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall
 aske the Father in my Name, he wil giue it you.
 *Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: 24
 & ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.
 *These things haue I spoken vnto you in para- 25
 bles: but the time will come, when I shall no
 more speak to you in parables: but I shall shew
 you plainly of the Father. *At that day shall ye 28
 aske in my Name, & I say vnto you, that I will
 say vnto the Father for you: *For the Father 29
 himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loved me,
 & haue beleued that I came out fro God. *I am 28
 come out from the Father, & came into the
 world againe I leaue the world, & go to the Fa-
 ther. *His disciples said vnto him, Lo, now spea- 29
 kest thou plainly, & thou speakest no parable.
 *Now know we that thou knowest all things, 30
 & needest not that any man should aske thee,
 By this we beleene, that thou art come out fro
 God. *Iesus answered them, Doe yee beleue 31
 now? Behold, the houre commeth, & is already 32
 come, that ye shall be scattered euery man into
 his owne, & shall leaue me alone: but I am not
 alone, for the father is with me. *These things 33
 haue I spoken vnto you, that in mee ye might
 haue peace: in the world ye shall haue affliction.

on, but be of good comfort: I haue overcome
the world.

C H A P. X V I I.

- 1 T Hese things spake Iesus, & lift vp his eyes to
heaven, & saide, Father, that houre is come
2 glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glo-
rifie thee, * As thou hast giuen him power ouer
all flesh, that he should giue eternall life to all
3 them that thou hast giuen him. * And this is life
eternall, that they knowe thee to be the onely
4 very God, & whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ.
* I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue fini-
shed the worke which thou gauest me to doe.
5 * And now glorifie me, thou Father, with thine
owne selfe, with the glory which I had with
6 thee before the world was. * I haue declared
thy name vnto the men which thou gauest me
out of the world: thine they were, & thou ga-
7 uest them me, & they haue kept thy word. * Now
they know that all things whatsoever thou hast
8 giuen me, are of thee. * For I haue giuen vnto
them the words, which thou gauest me, & they
haue receiued them, & haue known surely that
I came out from thee, & haue believed that thou
9 hast sent me. * I pray for them: I pray not for
the world, but for them which thou hast giuen
10 me: for they are thine. * And all mine are thine,
& thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.
11 * And now am I no more in the world, but these
are in the world, & I come to thee Holy Father,
keep them in thy name, *even* them whom thou
hast giuen me, that they may be one, as we are.

* While

CHAP. XVII.

*While I was with them in the worlde, I kept 12
 them in thy Name: those that thou gavest me,
 have I kept, & none of the is lost, but the child
 of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfil-
 led. *And now come I to thee, & these things 13
 speak I in the world, that they might have my
 ioy fulfilled in themselves. *I have given them 14
 thy worde, and the world hath hated them, be-
 cause they are not of the worlde, as I am not
 of the worlde. *I pray not that thou shouldest 15
 take them out of the world, but that thou keep
 them fro euill. *They are not of the world, as I 16
 am not of the world. *Sanctifie them with thy 17
 truth: thy word is truth. *As thou diddest send 18
 me into the world, so haue I sent them into the
 world. *And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe, 19
 that they also may be sanctified through the
 truth. *I pray not for these alone, but for them 20
 also which shall beleue in me through their
 word. *That they al may be one, as thou, O Fa- 21
 ther, art in me, & I in thee: even that they may
 be also one in vs, that the world may beleue
 that thou hast sent me. *And the glory that 22
 thou gavest me, I haue given the, that they may
 be one, as we are one, *I in them, & thou in me, 23
 that they may be made perfect in one, and that
 the world may know that thou hast sent me, &
 hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. *Father, 24
 I will that they which thou hast given me, be
 with me, ene where I am, that they may behold
 thy glory, which thou hast given me: for
 thou lovedst me before the foundation of the 25
 world.

25 world. * O righteous Father the world alſo
not known thee, but I haue known thee, & thou
26 haue known that thou haſt ſent me. * And I haue
declared vnto them thy name, & wil declare it,
that the loue wherewith thou haſt loued me
may be in them, & in them.

CHAPTER XVII.

1 **W**Hen Ieſus had ſpoken theſe things, he went
forth with his diſciples ouer the brooke
Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he
2 entered, & his diſciples. * And Iudas which betrayed
him, knew alſo the place: for Ieſus oft times
3 reſorted thither with his diſciples. * Iudas then
after he had receiued a band of men & officers
of the hie Priſtes, & of the Pharifees, came thither
4 with lanternes, & torches, & weapons. * Then
Ieſus, knowing al things that ſhould come vnto
to him, went forth & ſaid vnto them, Whom
5 ſeek ye? * They answered him, Ieſus of Nazareth.
Ieſus ſaide vnto them, I am he. Now Iudas which
6 betrayed him, ſtood with them. * After that
then as he had ſaid vnto them, I am he, they went
7 away backward, & fell to the ground. * Then he
asked them againe, Whom ſeek ye? And they
8 ſaid, Ieſus of Nazareth. * Ieſus answered & ſaid
vnto you, that I am he: therefore if ye ſeek me,
9 let theſe go their way. * This ſaid he, that the word
might be fulfilled which he ſpake, Of the which
10 thou gaueſt me, I haue loſt none. * Then Simon
Peter hauing a ſword drew it, & ſmote the
Priſte ſeruant, & cut off his right eare. Now
11 ſeruant name was Malchus. * Then ſaid Ieſus

C H A P. XVIII.

And Peter, Put up thy sword into thy sheath:
 shall I not drinke of the cup which my Father
 hath giuen me? Then the hand, & the captaine,
 & the officers of the Jewes took Iesus & bound
 him, And led him away to Annas first (for he
 was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the
 high Priest that same yere) And Caiaphas was
 he that gaue counsell to the Jewes, that it was
 expedient that one man should die for the peo-
 ple. Now Simon Peter followed Iesus, & an-
 other disciple, & that disciple was knowen of
 the high Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus
 into the hall of the high Priest: But Peter stood
 at the doore without. Then went out the other
 disciple which was knowen vnto the high Priest,
 & spake to her that kept the doore, & brought
 in Peter. The said the maid that kept the doore,
 vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans
 disciples? He said, I am not. And the seruants &
 officers stood there, which had made a fire of
 brimston for it was cold, & they warmed themselues.
 And Peter also stood among them, & warmed
 himself. The high Priest then asked Iesus of his
 disciples, & of his doctrine. Iesus answered him,
 I spake openly to the world. I neuer taught in the
 Synagogue, & in the Temple, whiches the Jewes
 obserue continually, & in secret haue I said nothing.
 Why askest thou me? aske them which heard
 what I said vnto them: behold, they know
 what I said. When he had spoke these things,
 some of the officers which stood by, smote Iesus
 with his rod, saying, Answerest thou the high

5. I O H N.

23 Priest for Iesus answered him, if I haue euill spoken, beare wienes of the euill, but if I haue well
 24 spoken, why smitest thou me? * (Now Anna
 25 had sent him bound vnto Caiaphas the hie
 26 priest.) * And Simon Peter stood and warmed
 27 himselfe, & they said vnto him, Art not thou
 28 so of his disciples? He denied it, & said, I am not.
 29 * One of the seruants of the hie Priest, his Con-
 30 sin whose eare Peter smote off, said, did not I see
 31 thee in the garde with him? * Peter then denied
 32 againe, & immediatly the cock crew. * Then led
 33 they Iesus from Caiaphas into the commo hall.
 34 Now it was morning, & they themselues went
 35 not into the common hall, least they should be
 36 defiled, but that they might eate the Passeouer.
 37 * Pilat then went out vnto them, & said, What
 38 accusation bring ye against this man? * They an-
 39 swered, & said vnto him, if he were not an euil
 40 doer, we would not haue deliuered him vnto
 41 thee. * Then said Pilat vnto the, Take ye him &
 42 iudge him after your owne Law. Then the Iewes
 43 said vnto him, It is not lawful for vs to put any
 44 man to death. * For as that the word of Iesus
 45 might be fulfilled which hee spake, signifying
 46 what death he should die. * So Pilate entred
 47 to the common hall againe, & called Iesus, & said
 48 vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? * He
 49 answered him, Sayest thou that of thy selfe,
 50 or did other tell it thee of me? * Pilate answered
 51 Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, & the Iew
 52 Priests, haue deliuered thee vnto me. What hast
 53 thou done? * Iesus answered, My kingdome is

C H A P. XVII.

not of this world: if my kingdome were of this worlde, my seruants would surely fight, that I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

Pilate then said vnto him, Art thou a King therfore answered, Thou sayest that I am a King: for this cause am I borne, & for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witnes vnto the truth, every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

Pilate said vnto him, What is truth? And when he had said that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, & said vnto them, I find in him no cause at all. But you have a custome, that I should deliuer you one loose at the Passeouer: will ye then that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes? Then cried they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barabbas: now this Barabbas was a murderer.

C H A P. XIX.

Then Pilate took Iesus, & scourged him. And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, & put it on his head, & they put on him a purple garment. And saide, Haile, king of the Iewes. And they smote him with reed rods. Then Pilate went forth againe, & saide vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know, that I find no fault in him at all. Then came Iesus forth, wearing a crowne of thornes, & a purple garment. And Pilate said vnto the, Behold the man. Then when the hie Priests & officers saw him, they cryed, saying, Crucifie him. Pilate said vnto the, Take ye him, & crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

Iesus answered him. We haue a Lawe,
 our lawe he ought to die, because he made
 8. Iesse the Sonne of God. * When Pilate then
 9. that worde he was the more afraid. * And
 againe into the common hall and said vnto
 Iesus. Whence art thou? Iesus gaue him
 10. answer. * Then said Pilate vnto him. Speake
 thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not that
 I haue power to crucifie thee and haue power
 11. to loose thee? Iesus answered. Thou couldest haue
 no power at all against me, except it were
 12. geuen thee from above: therefore he that deliuered
 me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne. * From
 thenceforth Pilate sought to loose him, but
 the Iewes cried, saying. If thou deliuer him,
 thou art not Cæsars friend: for whosoever maketh
 13. himselfe a King, speaketh against Cæsar. * When
 Pilate heard this worde, he brought Iesus forth
 14. and sate downe in the iudgement seate in a place
 called the Pauement. & in Hebrew, Gabbatha.
 * And it was the Preparation of the Passouer,
 & about the sixth houre: and hee saide vnto
 the Iewes. Behold your King. * But they cried,
 15. away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate
 said vnto them. Shall I crucifie your King?
 The Iewes answered. We haue no King
 16. but Cæsar. * Then deliuered he him vnto them
 to be crucified. And they tooke Iesus, and
 17. led him away. * And he bare his owne crosse,
 and came into a place named of dead mens skel-
 18. lons, which is called in Hebrew, Golgotha: * Where
 they crucified him, & two other with him,

CHAP. XIX.

And side one, & Iesus in the middes. And Pi-
 late wrote also a title, & put it on the crosse, &
 it was written, IESVS OF NAZARETH
 THE KING OF THE IEWES. This
 then read many of the Iewes: for the place
 where Iesus was crucified, was nere to the city:
 & it was written in Hebrue, Greeke, & Latine.
 Then said the hie Priests of the Iewes to Pilat,
 Write not, The king of the Iewes, but that he
 said, I am King of the Iewes. Pilate answered,
 What I haue written, I haue writte. Then the
 soldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, tooke
 his garments: (and made foure partes, to euery
 soldier a part) and his coate: & the coate was
 without seame wouen fro the top through out.
 Therefore they said one to another, Let vs not
 raffe it, but cast lots for it; whose it shall be.
 That the Scripture might be fulfilled,
 which saith, They parted my garments among
 them, & on my coate did cast lots. So the sol-
 diers did these things indeed. Then stood by
 the crosse of Iesus, his mother, & his mothers
 sister, & Marie the wife of Cleopas, & Mary Magda-
 len. And when Iesus saw his mother, & the dis-
 ciple standing by, whom he loved, he said vnto
 his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne. Then
 said he to the disciple, Beholde thy mother: and
 from that houre the disciple tooke her home
 with him. After, when Iesus knew that all things
 were performed, that the Scripture might be
 fulfilled he saide, I thirst. And there was set a
 vessel full of vinegar, & they filled a sponge

13. JOHN.

with vinegar, & put it about an hyssope. **30** & put it to his mouth. * Now when Iesus had received of the vinegar, he said, It is finished. **31** bowed his head, and gave vp the ghost. * The Iewes then (because it was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath day: for that Sabbath was in his day) besought Pilat that their legs might be broken, & that they might be taken downe. **32** * The came the soldiers & brake the legs of the first, & of the other, which was crucified with Iesus. **33** * But when they came to Iesus, & saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legges. **34** * But one of the souldiers with a speare perced his side, & forthwith came there out blood & water. * And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true: and hee knoweth that he hath true, that ye might beleue it. * For these things were done that the Scripture should be fulfilled, **37** Not a bone of him shall be broken. * And againe another Scripture saith, They shal see whome they haue thrust through. * And after these things Ioseph of Arimathæa (who was disciple of Iesus, but secretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pilat that he might take downe the bodie of Iesus. And Pilate gaue him licence. **39** He came then & tooke Iesus body. * And there came also Nicodemus (which first came to Iesus by night) & brought of myrre & aloes mingled together about an hundred pound. * Then took they the body of Iesus, & wrapped it in new clothes with the spices, as the manner was

CHAP. IX.

Now is to bury. * And in that place where Iesus
was crucified, was a garde, & in the garde a new
sepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet laid. These
men laid Iesus, because of the Iewes Pro-
hibition day, for the sepulchre was neere.

CHAP. X.

Now the first day of the weeke came Marie
Magdalene, early when it was yet darke, vnto
the sepulchre, & sawe the stone taken away
from the tombe. * Then she ranne, & came to
Simon Peter, & to the other disciple whom Ie-
sus loved, & saide vnto them, They haue taken
away the Lord out of the sepulchre, & we know
not where they haue laide him. * Peter therfore
went forth, & the other disciple, & they came
vnto the sepulchre. * So they ranne both toge-
ther, but the other disciple did outrunne Peter,
& came first to the sepulchre. * And he stouped
downe, & saw the linnen clothes lying: yet he
was not in. * Then came Simon Peter following
him, & went into the sepulchre, & saw the lin-
nen clothes lye. * And the kerchiefe that was
vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothe,
but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.
* Then went in also the other disciple, which
came first to the sepulchre, & he saw it, & belee-
ued. * For as yet they knew not the Scripture,
that he must rise againe fro the dead. * And the
disciples wet away again vnto their own home.
* But Marie stood without at the sepulchre wee-
ping. * And as she wept, she bowed her self into the
sepulchre, * And saw two Angels in white, sit-
ting.

EXIOM.

- 23 thing, the one at the head, & the other at the feet.
 24 where the body of Iesus lay hidden. * And then
 25 said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? she
 26 said vnto him, They haue taken away my Lord,
 27 & I know not where they haue laid him. * When
 28 she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and
 29 saw Iesus standing, & knew not that it was Ie-
 30 sus. * Iesus said vnto her, Woman, why weepest
 31 thou? Whome seekest thou? She supposing that
 32 hee had bene the gardiner, said vnto him, Sir,
 33 thou hast borne him hence: tell me where thou
 34 hast laid him, and I will take him away. * Iesus
 35 saith vnto her, Marie. Shee turned her selfe, and
 36 said vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.
 37 * Iesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not: for I am
 38 not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my
 39 brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my
 40 Father, and to your Father, and to my God, and
 41 your God. * Marie Magdalene came and tolde
 42 the disciples that shee had seene the Lorde, and
 43 that hee had spoken these things vnto her.
 44 * The same day then at night, which was the
 45 first day of the week, & when the doores were
 46 shut where the disciples were assembled for feare
 47 of the Iewes, came Iesus & stood in the midst,
 48 & said to them, Peace be vnto you. * And when he
 49 had so said, hee shewed vnto them his hands, &
 50 his side. Then were the disciples glad when they
 51 had seene the Lorde. * Then said Iesus vnto them
 52 again, Peace be vnto you, as my Father sent me,
 53 so send I you. * And when he had saide these
 54 things, he breathed on them, and said vnto them, Receiue

C H A P. XX

Holy Ghost. * Whosoever sents ye stin, 29
 they are remitted vnto them: & whosoever
 sents ye reteine, they are retained. * But Tho- 24
 mas one of the twelue called Didymus, was not
 with them when Iesus came. * The other disci- 25
 ples said vnto him. We haue seene the Lorde:
 but he said vnto them. Except I see in his hands
 the print of the nailes, and put my finger into
 the print of the nailes, and put my hande into
 his side, I will not beleoue it. * And eight daies 26
 after againe his disciples were within, & Tho-
 mas with them. Then came Iesus, when the
 doores were shut, & stood in the midst, & saide,
 Ieep vnto you. * After said he to Thomas, 17
 shew thy finger here, & see myne hands, and put
 forth thine hand and put it into my side, & be
 not faithlesse but faithfull. * Then Thomas an- 28
 swered and said vnto him. Thou art my Lord, &
 my God. * Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because 29
 thou hast seene me, thou beleeuest: blessed are
 they that haue not seene & haue beleeued. * And 30
 many other signes also did Iesus in the presence
 of his disciples, which are not written in this
 booke. * But these things are writte that ye might 31
 beleeue, that Iesus is that Christ that Some of
 God: and that in beleeuing ye might haue life
 through his Name.

C H A P. XXI

After these things, Iesus shewed himselfe a- 32
 gaine to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias:
 & thus shewed he himselfe. * There were together 1
 Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called

S. I O H N.

2^d Didymus, & Nathanael of Capa in Galile, & the
 3^d friends of Zebedeus, and two other of his disci-
 4^{ples}. *Simon Peter said vnto them, I goe a fish-
 5^{ing}. They said vnto him, We also will go with
 6^{thee}. Then they went their way & entred into
 7^{a ship} straightway, and that night caught they
 8^{nothing}. *But when the morning was come, Je-
 9^{sus} stood on the shore: nevertheless the disci-
 10^{ples} knew not that it was Iesus. *Iesus said vnto
 11^{them}, Syrachate ye any meat? They answered
 12^{him}, No. *Then he said vnto them, Cast the
 13^{net} on the right side of the ship, & ye shall
 14^{finde}. So they cast out, & they were not able
 15^{all} to draw it, for the multitude of fishes. *There-
 16^{fore} said the disciple whome Iesus loved, vnto
 17^{Peter}, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard
 18^{that} it was the Lord, he girded his coat to him
 19^(for he was naked), & cast himself into the sea.
 20^{*But the other disciples came by ship} (for they
 21^{were not farr from land}, but about two hun-
 22^{dred cubites}), & they drew the net with fishes.
 23^{*Althoughe then as they were come to land},
 24^{they sawe two costes}, and fish lade thereon,
 25^{and breide}. *Iesus said vnto them, Bring
 26^{the fishes}, which ye haue now caught. *Simon
 27^{Peter} stepped forth, and drew the net to land,
 28^{full of great fishes}, an hundredth thirtie and thine,
 29^{and albeit there were so many}, yet was not
 30^{the net broken}. *Iesus said vnto them, Come
 31^{and dine}. And none of the disciples durst aske him,
 32^{Who art thou? saying they knew that he was}
 33^{the Lord}. *Iesus said vnto them, Come and dine.

put them, and fish likewise. * This is now the 14
third time that Iesus shewed himself to his disci-
ples, after that he was risen again fro the dead.
* So when they had dined, Iesus said to Simon 15
Peter, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, lonest thou me
more the these? He said vnto him, Yea Lord, thou
knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feed
my lābes. * He said to him again the secōd time, 16
Simon *the sonne* of Iona, lonest thou mee? Hea
said vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I
loue thee. He said vnto him, Feede my sheepe.
* He said vnto him the third time, Simon *the* 17
sonne of Iona, lonest thou me? Peter was sore
because he had said to him the third time, Lo-
nest thou me? & said vnto him, Lord thou know-
est all things, thou knowest that I loue thee.
Iesus saide vnto him, Feede my sheepe. * Ye 18
rely, verely I say vnto thee, When thou wast
young, thou girdedst thy selfe & walkedst whi-
ther thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be
old, thou shalt stretch forth thine hands, & ano-
ther shall gird thee, & lead thee whither thou
wouldest not. * And this spake he signifying by 19
what death he should glorifie God. And when
he had said this, he said to him, Follow me. * The 20
Peter turned about, & saw the disciple whome
Iesus loued, following, which had also leant on
his brest at supper, & had said, Lord, which is he
that betrayeth thee? * When Peter therefore 21
saw him, he saide to Iesus, Lord, what shall this
man doe? Iesus said vnto him, If I will thou hear 22
my will I come, what is it to thee? follow, when

THE ACTES.

1. And then went this word abroad among the
 brethren, that this disciple should not die: for
 Iesus said not unto him, he shall not die: but
 I will that he tarry till I come, what is it to that?
 2. * This is the disciple which testifieth of these
 things, & wrote these things, & we know that
 3. his testimony is true. * Now there are also many
 other things which Iesus did, the which
 they should be written every one, I suppose the
 world could not containe the booke that
 should be written, AMEN.

THE ACTES OF THE HOLY APOSTLES WRITTEN BY Luke the Evangelist.

CHAP. I.

WHEN Iesus had made the former treatise
 of all that Iesus & V. S. began to doe and teach
 * Untill the day, that he was
 taken vp: after that hee through
 the holy Ghost, had given commandements
 unto the Apostles, whom he had chosen: * To
 whom also he presented himselfe alive after
 that hee had suffered, by many infallible tokens,
 being seene of them by the space of foure
 dayes, & speaking of those things which apper-
 tained to the kingdom of God: * And while hee had
 gathered them together, hee commanded them
 that they should not depart from Hierusalem,
 but wait for the promys of the Father, which
 hee had spoken by Iohn the baptist: * For Iohn in de-

CHAP. I.

baptizd with water, but ye shall be baptizd
 with the holy Ghost within these fewe daies.
 *Whē they therfore were come together, they
 asked of him, saying, lord, wilt thou at this time
 restore the kingdome to Israel? *And hee saide
 vnto thē, It is not for you to know the times, or
 the seasons, which the Father hath put in his
 owne power. *But ye shal receiue power of the
 holy Ghost, when he shall come on you: & yee
 shall be witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem
 & in all Iudea, & in Samaria, & vnto the vtter-
 most part of the earth. *And when he had spo-
 ken these things, while they beheld, he was takē
 vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of their sight.
 *And while they looked stedfastly toward hea-
 ven, as he went, behold, two men stood by thē
 in white apparell. *Which also said, Ye men of
 Galile, why stand ye gazing into heauen? This
 Iesus which is taken vp frō you into heauen, shal
 come, as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.
 *Then returned they vnto Hierusalem frō the
 mount that is called the mount of Olives, which
 is nere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath
 dayes iourney. *And when they were come in,
 they went vp into an vpper chamber, where a-
 bode both Peter, & James, & Iohn, & Andrew,
 Philip, & Thomas, Barlemewe, & Matthewe,
 James the sonne of Alphens, & Simon Zelotes,
 & Iudas James brother. *These all continued
 with one accord in prayer & supplication with
 the women, & Mary the mother of Iesus, & with
 his brethren. *And in those daies Peter stood

THE ACTES.

- 17 in the mids of the disciples, & said (now the
 number of names that were in one place were
 18 about an hundreth & twentie.) *Ye me brethren, this Scripture must needs haue beene
 filled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of
 David spake before of Iudas, which was guide
 19 to them that took Iesus. *For he was numbered
 with vs, & had obtained fellowship in this mi-
 20 nistration. * He therefore hath purchased a field
 with the reward of iniquitie: and when hee had
 throwne downe himselfe headlong, he brake
 sunder in the mids, & all his bowels gushed out.
 21 * And it is knowen vnto all the inhabitants of
 Hierusalem, in so much that that field is called in
 their own language, Aceldema, that is, The field
 22 of blood. * For it is written in the booke of
 Psalmes, Let his habitation be void, & let no
 man dwell therein: also, Let another take his
 23 charge. * Wherefore, of these me which haue
 accompanied with vs, at the time that the Lord
 24 was conuersat amōg vs, *Beginning frō the be-
 ginning of Iohn vnto the day that he was taken
 vp frō vs, must one of them be made a witnes
 25 with vs of his resurrection. * And they pro-
 posed two, Ioseph, called Barsabas, whose surname
 26 Iustus, and Matthias. * And they prayed, saying
 Thou Lord which knowest the harts of all men,
 shewe whether of these two thou hast chosen
 27 * That he may take the room of his ministry
 & Apostleship, frō which Iudas hath gone
 28 to go to his own place. * Then they gave
 their lotter: and the lotte fell on Matthias.

CHAP. II.

he was by a common consent counted with
the cleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

And when the day of Pentecost was come, 1
they were all wth one accorde in one place.
*And suddenly there came a sound frō heauē, 2
as of a rushing & mightie wind, & it filled all
y^e house where they sate. *And there appeared 3
vnto thē clouen tongues, like fire, & it sate vp-
on ech of them. * And they were all filled wth 4
the Holy Ghost, & began to speake with other
tongues, as y^e Spirit gaue thē vtterance. *And 5
there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men
that feared God, of euery nation vnder heaven.
* Nowe when this was noysed, the multitude 6
came together & were astonied, because that e-
uery man heard thē speake his owne language.
*And they wondered al, & marueiled, saying a- 7
mong them selues, Behold, are not all these w^{ch}
speake, of Galile? * How then heare we euery 8
man our own lāguage wherein we were born?
* Parthians, & Medes, & Elamites, & y^e inhabi- 9
tants of Mesopotamia, & of Iudea, & of Cap-
padocia, of Pontus, & Asia: *And of Phrygia, & 10
Pamphylia, of Egypt, & of the parts of Lybia,
which is beside Cyrene, & strangers of Rome,
& Iewes, & proselytes, *Cretes, & Arabiās: we 11
heard them speake in our owne tongues the
wonderful works of God. *They were al thē a- 12
maled, & douted, saying one to another, What
may this be? *And others mocked, & said, They 13
are ful of new wine. *But Peter standing with 14
the

THE ACTES.

- the eleven lift vp his voice, & said vnto them,
Ye men of Iudea, *and* ye all ⁵ inhabite Hieru-
salem, be this knowē vnto you, & hearken vnto
15 my words. * For these are not drunkē, as ye
suppose, since it is but the third houre of the
16 day. * But this is ⁵, which was spoken by the
17 Prophet Ioel, * And it shalbe in the last dayes,
saith God, I will powre out of my spirit vpon
all flesh, & your sonnes, & your daughters shal
prophecie, & your yong men shal see visions,
18 your old men shal dream dreams. * And on my
seruants, & on mine handmaides I will powre
out of my spirit in those dayes, and they shal
19 prophecie. * And I wil shew wonders in hea-
uē, & tokens in the earth beneath, blood,
20 fire, & the vapour of smoke. * The Sūne shalbe
turned into darknes, & the Moone into blood,
before that great and notable day of the Lord
come. * And it shalbe, that whosoever shal call
21 on the Name of ⁵ Lord, shalbe saved. * Ye men
22 of Israel, heare these words, I E S V S of Na-
zaret, a man approued of God among you w
great works, & wonders, & signes, which God
did by him in ⁵ mids of you, as ye your selues
23 also know: * Him, ⁷ say, being deliuered by the
determinate cōsel, & foreknowledge of God,
after you had taken, with wicked handes you
24 haue crucified and slaine. * Whom God hath
raised vp, and loosed the sorrowes of death,
because it was vnpossible that he should
25 be holden of it. * For Dauid saith, concern-
ing him, I behelde the Lord alwayes before

CHAP. II.

me: for he is at my right hand, that I should
 not be shaken. * Therefore did mine heart re- 26
 joice, and my tongue was glad, and moreover
 also my flesh shall rest in hope, * Because thou 27
 wilt not leaue my soule in graue, neither wilt
 suffer thine Holy one to see corruption. * Thou 28
 hast shewed me the wayes of life, & shalt make
 me full of ioy with thy countenance, * Men & 29
 brethren, I may boldly speake vnto you of the
 Patriarch David, that he is both dead & buried,
 and his sepulchre remaineth with vs vnto this
 day. * Therefore, seeing he was a Prophet, and 30
 knew that God had sworn with an oth to him,
 that of the fruite of his loynes he would raise
 vp Christ concerning the flesh, to set him vpon
 his throne, * He knowing this before, spake of 31
 the resurrection of Christ, that his soule should
 not be left in graue, neither his flesh should see
 corruption. * This Iesus hath God raised vp; 32
 whereof we all are witnesses. * Since then that 33
 he by the right hand of God hath bin exalted,
 & hath receiued of his Father the promise of
 the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which
 ye now see and heare. * For David is not ascen- 34
 ded into heauen, but he saith, The Lord said
 to my Lorde, Sit at my right hande, * Vntill I 35
 make thine enemies thy footstoole. * Therefore, 36
 let all the house of Israel knowe for a suretie,
 that God hath made him both Lord, & Christ,
 this Iesus, & say, whom ye haue crucified. * Now 37
 when they heard it, they were pricked in their
 hearts, & said vnto Peter & the other Apostles,

THE ACTES.

- 38 Men, & brethren, what shall we doe? * Then
Peter said vnto them, Amend your liues, & be
haptized euery one of you in the Name of Je-
sus Christ for the remission of sinnes: & ye shall
39 receive the gift of the holy Ghost. * For the
promise is made vnto you, & to your children,
& to al that are a farre off, *euē* as many as the
40 Lord our God shall call. * And with many other
words he besought and exhorted *them*, saying,
Saue your selues from this froward generation.
41 * Then they that gladly receiued his worde,
were baptized: & the same day there were ad-
ded *to the Church* about three thousand soules.
42 * And they continued in the Apostles doctrine,
& fellowship, & breaking of bread, & prayer.
43 * And feare came vpon euery soule: and many
wonders & signes were done by the Apostles.
44 * And all that beleueed, were in one place, and
45 had all things common. * And they sold their
possessions & goods, & parted them to al men,
46 as euery one had neede. * And they continued
daily with one accord in the Temple, & break-
ing bread at home, did eate their meate toge-
47 ther with gladnes & singlenes of heart, * Prai-
sing God, and had fauour with all the people,
and the Lord added to the Church from day
to day such as should be saved.

CHAP. III.

- 1 **N**OW Peter & Iohn went vp together into
the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.
2 * And a certain mā which was a creeple from
his mothers wombe, was caryed, whom they

sold daily at the gate of the Tēple called Be-
 tiffull, to aske almes of them that entred into
 the Temple. * Who seeing Peter & Iohn, that
 they would enter into the Temple, desired to
 receiue an almes. * And Peter earnestly behol-
 ding him with Iohn, said, Lookē on vs. * And he
 gaue heede vnto them, trusting to receiue some
 thing of them. * Then said Peter, Silver & golde
 haue I none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee.
 In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise
 vp & walke. * And he tooke him by the right
 hand, & lift him vp, & immediatly his feet and
 ankle bones receiued strength. * And he leaped
 vp, stood, & walked, and entred with them into
 the Tēple, walking & leaping, & praising God.
 * And all the people saw him walke, & praising
 God. * And they knew him, that it was he which
 sat for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the
 Temple: & they were amased, and sore astonied
 at that, which was come vnto him. * And as the
 temple which was healed, held Peter & Iohn, al
 the people ran amased vnto them in the porch
 which is called Solomons. * So when Peter
 saw it, he answered vnto the people, Ye men of
 Israel, why maruaile ye at this? or why looke ye
 steadfastly on vs, as though by our own pow-
 er, or godlines, we had made this man go? * The
 God of Abraham, & Isaac, & Iacob, the God of
 our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Iesus, who
 ye betrayed, & denied in the presence of Pilate,
 when he had iudged him to be deliuered. * But
 ye denied the Holy one & the Iust, & desired a

THE ACTES.

15 murderet to be given you, * And killed the
 16 Lord of life, whome God hath raised from the
 dead, whereof we are witnesses. * And his Name
 hath made this man sounde, whome ye see, and
 knowe, through faith in his Name: & the faith
 which is by him, hath given to him this perfect
 17 health of his whole body in the presence of you
 all. * And now brethren, I knowe that through
 18 ignorance ye did it, as did also your governors.
 19 * But those things which God before had shew-
 ed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ
 should suffer, he hath thus fulfilled. * Amend
 your lines therefore, and turne, that your sinnes
 may be put away, when the time of refreshing
 shall come from the presence of the Lord. * And
 he shall sende Iesus Christ, which before was
 20 preached vnto you. * Whom the heauen must
 containe vntil the time that all things be res-
 21 tored, which God had spoken by the mouth of all
 his holy Prophets since the world began. * For
 Moses saide vnto the Fathers, The Lorde your
 22 God shall raise vp vnto you a Prophet, euen of
 your brethren like vnto me: ye shall heare him
 in all things, whatsoever he shall say vnto you.
 23 * For it shall be, that euery person which shall
 not heare that Prophet, shall be destroyed out of
 24 the people. * Also all the Prophets from Samu-
 el, & thenceforth as many as haue spoken, haue
 25 likewise foretolde of these dayes. * Ye are the
 children of the Prophets, and of the conenant,
 which God hath made vnto our fathers, saying
 to Abraham, Euen in thy seede shall all the kin-
 reds

CHAP. IIII.

of the earth be blessed. * First vnto you 26
 hath God raised vp his Sonne Iesus, and him he
 hath sent to blesse you, in turning ebery one of
 you from your iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

AND as they spake vnto the people, the 2
 Priests & the captaine of the Temple, & the
 Sadducees came vpon the, * Taking it grieuou- 3
 ly that they taught the people, and preached in
 Iesus Name the resurrection from the dead.
 * And they laid hands on them, & put them in 3
 hold, vntill the next day: for it was now even-
 tide. * Howbeit, many of them which heard the 4
 word, beleueed, & the nuber of the men was a-
 bout five thousand. * And it came to passe on 5
 the morowe, that their rulers, and Elders, and
 Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,
 * And Annas the chiefe Priest, & Calaphas, and 6
 John, & Alexander, and as many as were of the
 kindred of the hie Priests. * And when they had 7
 set them before the, they asked, By what pow-
 er, or in what Name haue ye done this? * Then 8
 Peter full of the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye
 rulers of the people, & Elders of Israel, * For as 9
 much as we this day are examined of the good
 deed done to the impotent man, to w^{is}, by what
 means he is made whole., * Be it knowen vnto 10
 you all, & to all the people of Israel, that by the
 Name of IESVS CHRIST of Naz-
 areth, whom ye haue crucified, whom God raised
 againe from the dead, *even* by him doeth this
 man stand here before you, whole. * This is the 11
 Stone

THE ACTES.

13 **stone** cast abde of you builders, which is to
 14 come the head of the corner. * Neither is there
 15 saluation in any other : for among men there
 16 is giuen none other Name vnder heauen, whereby
 17 we must be saued. * Nowe when they saw the
 18 boldnesse of Peter & Iohn, & vnderstoode that
 19 they were vnlerned men and without know-
 20 ledge, they marueiled, and knew them, that they
 21 had bene with Iesus: * And beholding also the
 22 man which was healed standing with them, they
 23 had nothing to say against it. * Then they com-
 24 manded them to go aside out of the Council,
 25 & conferred among them selues, * Saying, What
 26 shall we do to these men? for surely a manifest
 27 signe is done by them, and it is openly known
 28 to all them that dwell in Hierusalem: & we can
 29 not denie it. * But that it be noised no farther
 30 among the people, let vs threaten and charge
 31 them, that they speake henceforth to no man in
 32 this Name. * So they called them, & comman-
 33 ded them, that in no wise they should speake or
 34 teach in the Name of Iesus. * But Peter &
 35 Iohn answered vnto them, & said, Whether it
 36 be right in the sight of God, to obey you
 37 rather then God, iudge ye. * For we can not but
 38 speake the thinges which we haue seene and
 39 heard. * So they threatned them, & let them go,
 40 & found nothing how to punish them, because
 41 of the people: for all men praised God for that
 42 which was done. * For the man was about fou-
 43 tie yeeres old, on whom this miracle of healing
 44 was shewed. * Then alsoone as they were

C H A P. IIII.

so, they came to their fellowes, and shewed all
 that y^e hie Priests & Elders had said vnto the.
 * And whē they heard it, they list vp their voi- 24
 ces to God with one accord, and said, O Lord,
 thou art y^e God which hast made the heauen,
 & the earth, y^e sea, & all things that are in the,
 * Which by the mouth of thy seruant David 25
 hast said, Why did y^e Gentiles rage, & the peo-
 ple imagine vaine things? * The kings of the 26
 earth assembled, & the rulers came together a-
 gainst the Lord, and against his Christ. * For 27
 doublesse against thine holy Sonne Iesus, who
 thou haddest anointed, both Herod & Pontius
 Pilate with y^e Gentiles, & the people of Israel
 gathered them selues together, * To do what- 28
 soeuer thine hand, & thy counsel had determi-
 ned before to be done. * And now, O Lord, be- 29
 hold their threatnings, & graunt vnto thy ser-
 uants wth all boldnes to speake thy word, * So 30
 that thou stretch forth thine hand, y^e healing,
 & signes & wonders may be done by y^e name
 of thine holy Sonne Iesus. * And when as they 31
 had prayed, the place was shaken where they
 were assembled together, & they were al filled
 with the holy Ghost, & they spake the worde
 of God boldly. * And the multitude of them 32
 y^e beleeued, were of one heart, & of one soule:
 neither any of them said, that any thing of that
 which he possessed, was his owne, but they had
 all things common. * And with great power 33
 gaue y^e Apostles witnes of the resurrection of
 the Lord Iesus: & great grace was vpon them
 all.

THE ACTES.

all. *Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were possessors of land or houses, solde them, and brought the price of the things that were sold, *And laid it downe at the Apostles seete, & it was distributed vnto euery man according as he had neede. *Also Ioses, which was called of the Apostles Barnabas, (that is by interpretation, the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, & of the countrey of Cyprus, *Where as he had land, sold it, & brought the mony, & laid it downe at the Apostles seete.

C H A P. V.

BVt a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, *And kept away *part* of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine part, and laid it downe at the Apostles seete. *Then said Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, & keep away *parte* of the price of this possession? *Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was solde, was it not in thine owne power? how is it that thou hast concealed this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God. *Nowe when Ananias heard these words, he fell down, & gave vp \bar{y} Ghost. The great feare came on all them that heard these things. *And \bar{y} yong men rose vp, & tooke him vp, and caried *him* out, & buried *him*. *And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, \bar{y} his wife came in, ignorant of that w^{as} done. *And Peter said vnto her,

Te

CHAP. V.

Tell me, sold ye the land for so much? And she
 said, Yea, for so much. * The Peter said vnto her, 9
 Why haue ye agreed together to tempt y^e spirit
 of y^e Lord? behold, y^e feet of the w^o haue buried
 thine husbād, are at y^e doore, & shal carry thee
 out. * The she fell down straitway at his feet, & 10
 yekled vp y^e ghost: & y^e yong men came in, &
 found her dead, & caried her out, & buried her
 by her husbād. * And great feare came on al the 11
 Church, & on as many as heard these thinges.
 * Thus by y^e hands of the Apostles were many 12
 signes & wōders shewed amōg y^e people (& they
 were w^o one accord in Solomōs porch. * And of 13
 y^e other durst no mā ioyne him selfe to the: ne-
 uertheles y^e people magnified the. * Also y^e nū- 14
 ber of the y^e beleued in y^e Lord, both of men &
 women, grew more & more. * In so much that 15
 they brought y^e sicke into y^e streetes, & laid the
 on beds, & conches, y^e at y^e least way y^e shadow
 of Peter, whē he came by, might shadow some
 of the. * There came also a multitude out of y^e 16
 cities round about vnto Hierusalē, bringing sicke
 folke, & the w^o were vexed with vncleane spi-
 rits, who were all healed. * The the chiefe Priest 17
 rose vp, & all they that were with him (which
 was the sect of the Sadduces) & were full of in-
 dignation, * And laid hands on the Apostles, & 18
 put them in the common prison. * But the An- 19
 gel of the Lorde by night opened the prison
 doores, & brought the forth, & said, * Go your 20
 way, & stand in the Temple, and speake to the
 people all the words of this life. * So whē they 21
 heard

THE ACTES.

heard it, they entred into the Temple early in
 the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Priest
 came, & they that were with him, & called the
 Councill together, & all the Elders of the chil-
 dren of Israel, & sent to the prison, to cause the
 22 to be brought. * But when the officers came, &
 found them not in the prison, they returned &
 23 told it. * Saying, Certenly we found the prison
 shut as sure as was possible, & the keepers stan-
 ding without, before the doores: but when we
 24 had opened, we found no man within. * Then
 when the chiefe Priest, and the captaine of the
 Temple, and the hie Priests heard these things,
 they doubted of them, whereunto this would
 25 grow. * Then came one & shewed them, saying,
 Behold, the men that ye put in prison are stan-
 26 ding in the Temple, & teach the people. * Then
 went the captaine with the officers, & brought
 them without violence (for they feared y^e peo-
 27 ple, lest they should haue bene stoned) * And
 when they had brought them, they set the be-
 fore the Council, & the chiefe Priest asked the,
 28 * Saying, Did not we straitly commaund you,
 that ye should not teach in this Name? and be-
 hold, ye haue filled Hierusalem with your doc-
 trine, & ye would bring this mans blood vpon
 29 vs. * Then Peter and the Apostles answered, &
 said, We ought rather to obey God then men.
 30 * The God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus,
 31 whom ye slew, & hanged on a tree. * Him hath
 God lift vp with his right hand, to be a Prince
 & a Saniour, to giue repentance to Israel, & to
 giue

C H A P. VJ

of sinnes. * And we are his witnesses
 concerning these things which we say: yea, and
 the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them
 that obey him. * Now when they heard it, they
 burst for anger, & consulted to slay them. * Then
 stood there vp in the Councill, a certaine Pha-
 rise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Law, ho-
 noured of all the people, & commanded to put
 the Apostles forth a little space, * And said vnto
 them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues,
 what ye intend to do touching these men. * For
 before these times rose vp Theudas boasting
 him selfe, to whom resorted a number of men,
 about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: & they
 all which obeyed him, were scattered, & brought
 to nought. * After this man, arose vp Iudas of
 Galile, in the dayes of the tribute, & drew away
 much people after him: he also perished, & all
 that obeyed him, were scattered abroad. * And
 now I say vnto you, Refraine your selues from
 these men, & let them alone: for if this counsel,
 or this worke be of me, it wil come to nought:
 * But if it be of God, ye can not destroy it, least
 ye be founde euē fighters against God. * And
 to him they agreed, & called the Apostles: and
 when they had beaten them, they commanded
 that they should not speake in the Name of Je-
 sus, & let them go. * So they departed from the
 Councill, reioycing that they were counted
 worthe to suffer rebuke for his Name. * And
 daily in the Temple, and from house to house
 they ceased not to teach, & preach Iesus Christ.

C H A P.

THE ACTES.

CHAP. VI.

1 **A**ND in those dayes, as the number of the
 disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the
 Grecians towardes the Hebrews, because their
 widowes were neglected in the daily mini-
2 string. * Then the twelve called the multitude
 of the disciples together, & said, It is not meete
 that we should leane the word of God to serve
3 the tables: * Wherefore brethren, looke ye out
 among you seven men of honest report, & full
 of the holy Ghost, and of wisdom, which we
4 may appoint to this businesse. * And we will
 give our selues continually to prayer, and to the
5 ministration of the word. * And the saying pleased
 the whole multitude: & they chose Steuen
 a man full of faith & of the holy Ghost, & Phil-
 lip, & Prochorus, & Nicanor, & Timon, and Pa-
 menas, and Nicolas, a Proselyte of Antiochia.
6 * Which they set before the Apostles: and they
7 prayed & laid their hands on them. * And the
 word of God increased, and the number of the
 disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly,
 & a great company of the Priestes were obedi-
8 ent to the faith. * Now Steuen full of faith and
 power, did great wonders and miracles among
9 the people. * Then there arose certaine of the
 Synagogue, which are called Libertines & Cy-
 rians, & of Alexandria, & of them of Cilicia, and
10 of Asia & disputed with Steuen. * But they were
 not able to resist the wisdom, & the Spirit by
11 the which he spake. * Then they suborned men,
 which saide, We haue heard him speake blas-
 phemies.

CHAP. VII.

blasphemous words against Moses, & God. * Thus 12
 they moued the people and the Elders, & the
 scribes: & running vpon him, caught him, and
 brought him to the Couñtil, * And set forth false 13
 witnesses, which saide, This man ceaseth not to
 speake blasphemous wordes against this holy
 place, & the Law. * For we haue heard him say, 14
 that this Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this
 place, & shal change the ordinances which Mo-
 ses gaue vs. * And as all that sate in the Coun- 15
 cill, looked stedfastly on him, they saw his face
 as it had bene the face of an Angell.

CHAP. VII.

Then said the hie Prielt, Are these things so? 1
 * And he said, Ye men, brethre, & fathers har- 2
 re. That God of glory appeared vnto our father
 Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before
 he dwelt in Charran, * And said vnto him, Come 3
 out of thy cuntry, & fro thy kintred, & come into
 the land which I shal shew thee. * Then came he 4
 out of the land of the Caldeas, & dwelt in Char-
 ran. And after that his father was dead, God
 brought him fro thence, into this land, wherein
 I now dwell, * And he gaue him none inheri- 5
 tance in it, no, not the breadth of a foote: yet he
 testified that he wold giue it to him for a pos-
 session, & to his seede after him, when as yet he
 had no child. * But God spake thus, that his seed 6
 should be a sojourner in a strange land, & that
 they should keep it in bondage, & intreat it euil
 for hundreth yeres. * But the nation to whom 7
 they shal be in bondage, will I iudge saith God:

THE ACTES.

- and after that, they shall come forth, & serue me
 8 in this place. * He gaue him also the couenant
 of circumcision: & so *Abraham* begate *Isaac*, &
 9 circumcised him the eight day: and *Isaac* begate
Jacob, and *Jacob* the twelue Patriarkes. * And
 the Patriarkes mooued with enuie sold *Ioseph*
 10 into Egypt: but God was with him. * And deli-
 uered him out of all his afflictions, & gaue him
 fauour & wisdom in the sight of *Pharao* king
 of Egypt, who made him gouernour ouer Egypt,
 11 & ouer his whole house. * Then came there a fa-
 mine ouer al the land of Egypt and Canaan, &
 great affliction, that our fathers found no suste-
 12 nance. * But when *Jacob* heard that there was
 13 corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first: * And
 at the second time, *Ioseph* was knowen of his
 brethren, & *Iosephs* kinred was made known
 14 vnto *Pharao*. * The sent *Ioseph* & caused his fa-
 ther to be brought, & all his kinred euen three
 15 score & fiftene soules. * So *Jacob* went downe
 16 into Egypt, & he died, and our fathers, * And
 were remooued into *Sychem*, & were put in the
 sepulchre, that *Abraham* had bought for money
 17 of the sonnes of *Euor*, *scilicet* of *Sychem*. * But
 when the time of the promes drew nere, which
 God had sworne to *Abraham*, the people grew
 18 & multiplied in Egypt. * Till another king
 19 rose, which knew not *Ioseph*. * The same dealt
 subtilly with our kinred, & euill intreated our
 fathers, & made them to cast out their young
 20 childre, that they should not remain a line. * The
 same time was *Moses* borne, and was accept-

C H A P. VII.

ble vnto God, which was nourished vp in his
 fathers house three moneths. * And when he 21
 was cast out, Pharaos daughter tooke him vp,
 & nourished him for her own sonne. * And Mo- 22
 ses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egip-
 tians, & was mighty in words & in deeds. * Now 23
 when he was full fourtie yere old, it came into
 his heart to visite his brethren, the children of
 Israel. * And when he sawe one of *them* suffer 24
 wrong, he defended, & auenged his quarrel that
 had the harme done to him, & smote the Egip-
 tian. * For he supposed his brethren would haue 25
 vnderstand, that God by his hand should giue
 them deliverance: but they vnderstood it not.
 * And the next day, he shewed himselfe vnto 26
 them as they stroue, & would haue set them at
 one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why
 do ye wrong one to another? * But he that did 27
 his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying,
 Who made thee a prince, & a iudge ouer vs?
 * Wilt thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian 28
 yesterday? * Then fled Moses at that saying, and 29
 was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he
 begat two sonnes. * And when forty yeres 30
 were expired, there appeared to him in the wil-
 dernes of mount Sina, an Angell of the Lord in
 a flame of fire, in a bush. * And when Moses saw 31
 it, he wondred at the sight: & as he drew neere
 to consider it, the voice of the Lord came vnto
 him, saying, * I am the God of thy fathers, the 32
 God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the
 God of Iacob, Then Moses trembled, and durst

THE ACTES.

- 33 not behold it. *Then the Lord said to him, Put
 off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where
 34 thou standest, is holy ground. *I haue seene, I
 haue seene the affliction of my people, which is
 in Egypt, & I haue heard their groning, & am
 come downe to deliuer them: & now come. &
 35 I will send thee into Egypt. *This Moses who
 they forsooke, saying. Who made thee a prince
 and a iudge? the same God sent for a prince, &
 a deliuerer by the hand of the Angel, which ap-
 36 peared to him in the bush. *He brought them
 out, doing wonders, & miracles, in the land of
 Egypt, & in the red sea, & in the wilderness forty
 37 yeeres. *This is that Moses, which saide vnto
 the children of Israel, A Prophet shall the Lord
 your God raise vp vnto you; *even* of your bre-
 38 thren, like vnto me: him shall ye heare. *This is
 he that was in the Congregation, in the wilder-
 nes with the Angell, which spake to him in
 mount Sina, & with our fathers, who receiued
 39 the linely oracles to giue vnto vs. *To whom
 our Fathers would not obey, but refused, &
 in their hearts turned back againe into Egypt.
 40 *Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs Gods that may
 go before vs: for we know not what is become
 of this Moses that brought vs out of the land
 41 of Egypt. *And they made a calfe in those daies,
 and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, & reioyced
 42 in the workes of their owne hands. *Then God
 turned himselfe away, & gaue them vp to the
 the host of heauen, as it is written in the booke
 of the Prophets, O house of Israel, haue ye

CHAP. VII.

And to me slaine beastes and sacrifices by the
 space of fourtie yeres in the wilderness? * And ye
 tookt vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the
 statute of your God Remphan, figures, which ye
 made to worship them: therefore I wil carry you
 away beyond Babylon. * Our fathers had the
 tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had
 appointed, speaking vnto Moses that he should
 make it according to the fashion that he had
 seene. * Which tabernacle also our fathers recei-
 ued, & brought in with Iesus into the possesi-
 on of the Gentils, which God draue out before
 our fathers, vnto the daies of David: * Who
 found fauour before God, & desired that hee
 might find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. *
 But Solomon built him an house. * Howbeit
 the most High dwelleth not in Temples made
 with hands, as saith the Prophet, * Heauen is my
 throne, and earth is my footstool: what house
 will ye build for me, saith the Lord? or what
 place is it that I should rest in? * Hath not mine
 hand made all these things? * Ye stiffnecked and
 of vncircumcised hearts & eares, ye haue alwaies
 resisted the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so
 do you. * Which of the Prophets haue not your
 fathers persecuted? and they haue slaine them,
 which shewed before of the comming of that
 Son, of whome yee are now the betrayers and
 murderers, * Which haue received the Law by
 the ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it.
 But when they heard these things, their hearts
 were full of anger, and they gnashed at him with
 their

THE ACTES.

35 *their teeth.* * But he being full of the holy ghost
 looked stedfastly into heauen, & saw the glory
 of God, and Iesus standing at the right hand of
 36 God. * And said, Behold, I see the heauens open,
 and the Sonne of man standing at the right hand
 37 of God. * Then they gaue a shout with a loud
 voice, & stopped their eares, & ranne vpon him
 38 violently all at once. * And cast him out of the
 citie, & stoned him: and the witnesses laid down
 their clothes at a young mans feet, named Saul.
 39 * And they stoned Steuen, who called on God,
 40 and said, Lord Iesus, receiue my spirit. * And he
 kneeled downe, and cried with a loud voice,
 Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And
 when he had thus spoken he slept.

C H A P. VIII.

1 **A** Nd Saul consented to his death, and at that
 time, there was a great persecution against
 the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they
 were all scattered abroad through the regions
 of Iudea and of Samaria, except the Apostles.
 2 * Then *certaine* men fearing God, caried Steuen
 amongs them, to be buried, and made great le-
 mentation for him. * But Saul made hauock of
 the Church, & entred into euery house, & drew
 out both men and women, and put them into
 3 prison. * Therefore they that were scattered
 4 broad went to & fro preaching the word. * Then
 5 came Philip into the citie of Samaria, & pre-
 6 ched Christ vnto them. * And the people gave
 heede vnto those things which Philip spake,
 with one accord, hearing and seeing the mira-
 cle

CHAP. VIII.

which he did. * For vncleane spirits crying 7
 with a loud voice came out of many that were
 possessed of them: and many taken with palsies,
 and that halted, were healed. * And there was 8
 great ioy in that citie. * And there was before 9
 in the citie a certaine man called Simon, which
 vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of
 Samaria, saying that he himselfe was some great
 man. * To whom they gaue heed from the least 10
 to the greatest, saying. This man is that great
 power of God. * And they gaue heed vnto him, 11
 because that of long time he had bewitched
 them with sorceries. * But as soone as they beleue- 12
 ned Philip, which preached the things that con-
 cerned the kingdome of God, & the Name of
 Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men and
 women. * Then Simon himselfe beleueued also, 13
 & was baptized, and continued with Philip, &
 wondred, when hee sawe the signes and great
 miracles which were done. * Now when the A- 14
 postles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say,
 that Samaria had receiued the worde of God,
 they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn. * Which 15
 when they were come down, prayed for them,
 that they might receiue the holy Ghost. * (For 16
 as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them,
 but they were baptized onely in the Name of
 the Lord Iesus.) * Then laid they their hands on 17
 them & they receiued the holy Ghost. * And 18
 when Simon saw, that through laying on of the
 Apostles hands the holy Ghost was giuen, hee
 offered them money. * Saying, Giue me also this 19

THE ACTES.

power, that on whomsoever I lay my hands, he
 20 may receiue the holy Ghost. * Then said Peter
 vnto him, Thy money perish with thee, because
 thou thinkest that the gift of God may be ob-
 21 teined with money. * Thou hast neither part nor
 fellowship in this busines: for thine heart is not
 22 right in the sight of God. * Repent therefore of
 this thy wickednesse, & pray God, that if it be
 possible, the thought of thine heart may be for-
 23 ginen thee. * For I see that thou art in the gall
 24 of bitternes, & in the bond of iniquitie. * Then
 answered Simon & said, Pray ye to the Lorde
 for me, that none of these things which ye have
 25 spoken come vpon me. * So they when they had
 testified, and preached the word of the Lord, re-
 turned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospel
 26 in many towns of the Samaritans. * The the An-
 gel of the Lord spake vnto Philip, saying, Arise,
 & go toward the South vnto the way that go-
 eth down from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is
 27 waste. * And he arose and went on: & behold,
 a certaine Eunuch of Ethiopia, Candaces the
 Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe Gouverneur,
 who had the rule of all her treasure, & came to
 28 Hierusalem to worship. * And as he returned sit-
 ting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet.
 29 * Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Go nere and
 ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet. * And Philip
 ran thither, & heard him read the Prophet Esai-
 as, & said, But vnderstandest thou what thou rea-
 30 dest? * And he said, How can I, except I had a
 guide? And he desired Philip, that hee would
 come

come

C H A P. I E.

came vp & sit with him. * Now the place of the 32
 Scripture which he read, was this. He was led as
 a sheep to the slaughter: & like a lambe dumme
 before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.
 * In his humilitie his iudgement hath bene exal- 33
 ted: but who shall declare his generatiō? for his
 life is taken from the earth. * Then the Eunuch 34
 answered Philip, & said, I pray thee of whō spea-
 keth the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some
 other man? * Then Philip opened his mouth, & 35
 began at the same Scripture. & preached vnto
 him Iesus. * And as they went on their way, they 36
 came vnto a certaine water, & the Eunuch said,
 See, here is water: what doth let me to be bap-
 tized? * And Philip said vnto him, If thou beleue- 37
 st with all thine heart, thou mayest. Then he
 answered & saide, I beleuee that Iesus Christ is
 that Sonne of God. * Then he commanded the 38
 chariot to stand still: & they went downe both
 into the water, both Philip & the Eunuch, & he
 baptized him. * And as soone as they were come 39
 vp out of the water, the spirit of the Lord caught
 away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more:
 so he went on his way reioycing. * But Philip 40
 was found at Azotus, & he walked to and fro
 preaching in all the cities, till he came to Ce-
 sarea.

C H A P. I X.

And Saul yet breathing out threatnings and 1
 slaughter against the disciples of the Lorde,
 went vnto the hie Priest, * And desired of him 2
 letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if
 he found any that were of that way (either men

THE ACTES.

- or women) he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem, *Now as he journeyed, it came to passe that as hee was come neere to Demascul, suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen. *And he fell to the earth, & heard a voice, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? *And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against pricks. *He then both trembling and astonied, saide, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the citie, & it shall bee tolde thee what thou shalt doe. *The men also which journeyed with him, stood amazed, hearing *his* voice, but seeing no man. *And Saul arose from the ground, & opened his eyes, *but* saw no mā. Then led they him by the hand, & brought him into Damascus, *Where he was three daies without sight, and neither ate nor dranke. *And there was a certain disciple at Damascus named Ananias. And to him saide the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold I am *here*, Lord. *Then the Lord said vnto him, Arise, & go into the street which is called Straight, & seek in the house of Judas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold he praieth * (And he saw in a vision a man named Ananias coming, in *him*, & putting his hands on him, that he might receiue his sight) *Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euil he hath done to thy Saintes at Hierusalem. *4 *Moreover, here hee hath authoritie of the high Priests

CHAP. IX.

15 **Must, to bind all that call on thy Name. * The**
 the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is
 a chosen veilel vnto me, to beare my Name be-
 fore the Gentiles, & Kings, & the children of Is-
 16 **rael. * For I wil shew him, how many things he**
 must suffer for my Names sake. * Then Ananias 17
 went his way, & entred into that house, & put
 his hands on him, & said, Brother Saul, the Lord
 hath sent me (even Iesus that appeared vnto thee
 in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest
 receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy
 Ghost. * And immediately there fell from his 18
 eyes as it had bene scales, & suddenly he recei-
 ued sight, & arose, & was baptized, * And recei- 19
 ued meat, & was strengthened. So was Saul cer-
 tain daies with the disciples which were at Da-
 mascus. * And it straightway he preached Christ 20
 in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of
 God. * So all that heard him, were amased, and 21
 said, Is not this he, that made haucke of them
 which called on this Name in Hierusalem, and
 came hither for that intēt, that he should bring
 them bound vnto the hie Priettes? * But Saul 22
 increased the more in strength and confound-
 ed the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, con-
 firming, that this was that Christ. * And after 23
 this many dyes were fulfilled, the Iewes
 took counsell together, to kill him, * But their 24
 laying await was knowen of Saul: nowe they
 watched the gates day & night, that they might
 kill him. * The the disciples took him by night, 25
 & put him through the wal, & let him down by
 a rope

THE ACTES.

- 26** a rope in a basket. * And when Saul was come
 to Hierusalem, he assaied to ioyn himselfe with
 the disciples: but they were all afraid of him,
27 beleeued not that he was a disciple. * But Bar-
 nabas tooke him, & brought him to the Apo-
 stles, & declared to them how he had seene the
 Lorde in the way, & that hee had spoken vnto
 him, & how he had spoken boldly at Damascus
28 in the Name of Iesus. * And he was conuer-
29 sed with them at Hierusalem. * And spake boldly
 in the Name of the Lorde Iesus, & spake & dis-
 puted against the Grecians: but they wēt about
30 to slay him. * But when the brethren knew it,
 they brought him to Cesarea, & sent him forth
31 to Tarsus. * I he had the Churches rest through-
 out all Iudea, & Galile, & Samaria, and were edified
 & walked in the feare of the Lord, & were mul-
32 tiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghost. * And
 it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all
 quarters, hee came also to the Saintes which
33 dwelt at Lydda. * And there he found a certain
 man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch
34 eight yeeres, & was sicke of the palsie. * Then
 said Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ make
 thee whole: arise & trusse thy couch together. And
35 he arose immediately. * And all that dwelt at
 Lydda & Saron, saw him, & turned to the Lord.
36 * There was also at Ioppa a certaine woman,
 a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpreta-
 tion is called Dorcas) she was full of good works
37 & almes which she did. * And it came to passe
 in those daies, that shee was sicke & dyed: and
 when she was layd out, her friends and kinsfolke
 bewailed her.

C H A P. IX

when they had washed her, they laied her in an
upper chamber. * Now forasmuch as Lydda was
near to Ioppa, & the disciples had heard that
Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men,
desiring that he would not delay to come vnto
them. * Then Peter arose & came with them: &
when he was come, they brought him into the
upper chamber, where all the widowes stood
by him weeping, & shewing the coates & gar-
ments which Dorcas made, while she was with
them. * But Peter put them al soorth, & kneeled
downe, & praied, & turned him to the bodie, &
said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and
when she saw Peter, sate vp. * Then he gaue her
the hand & lift her vp, & called the Saints and
widowes, and restored her aliuē. * And it was
knowne throughout al Ioppa, & many beleued
in the Lord. * And it came to passe that he tari-
ed many daies in Ioppa with one Simon a tan-
ner.

C H A P. X.

Furthermore there was a certaine man in Ce-
sarea called Cornelius, a captain of the band
called the Italian *band*, * A deuout man, & one
that feared God with all his householde, which
gave much almes to the people, & praied God
continually. * He saw in a visio euidently (about
the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God
comming in to him, & saying vnto him, Corne-
lius. * But when he looked on him, hee was
fraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said vn-
to him, Thy praiers & thine almes are come vp in-
to remembrance before God. * Now therefore
send

THE ACTES.

- send men to Ioppa, & cal for Simon, whose
 6 name is Peter. * He lodgeth with one Simon a
 tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shewed
 7 thee what thou oughtest to do. * And when the
 Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was depa-
 ted, hee called two of his servants, & a souldier
 that feared God, one of them that waited on
 8 him, * And told them all things, and sent them
 9 to Ioppa. * On the morowe as they went on
 their iourney, & drew nere vnto the citie, Peter
 went vp vpon the house to pray, about the fixe
 10 houre. * Then waxed he an hungred, and would
 haue eaten: but while they made *some thing* re-
 11 die, he fell into a trance. * And he saw heauen o-
 pened, & a certain vessel come down vnto him,
 as it *had beene* a great sheete, knit at the foure
 12 corners, & was let down to the earth: * When
 in were al maner of foure footed beastes of the
 earth, & wild beasts & creeping things, & foules
 13 of the heauē. * And there came a voice to him,
 14 Arise, Peter: kil & eate. * But Peter said, Not so,
 Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is
 15 polluted, or vncleane. * And the voice spake vnto
 to him againe the second time, The things
 16 that God hath purified, pollute thou not. * This
 was so done thrise: and the vessel was drawn
 17 againe into heauen. * Now while Peter doub-
 ted in himselfe what this vision which he had
 scene meant, behold, the men which were sent
 from Cornelius, had enquired for Simon
 18 house, and stood at the gate, * And called and
 asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Pe-

CHAP. X.

were lodged there. * And while Peter 19
 thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto him,
 Behold, three men seeke thee. * Arise therefore, 20
 and get thee downe, and goe with them, and
 doubt nothing: for I haue sent them. * Then 21
 Peter went downe to the men, which were sent
 vnto him from Cornelius, and saide, Behold, I
 am he whom ye seeke: what is the cause where-
 fore ye are come? * And they saide, Cornelius 22
 the captaine, a iust man, and one that feareth
 God, and of good report among all the nation
 of the Iewes, was warned from heaven by an
 holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and
 to heare thy wordes. * Then called he them in, 23
 and lodged them, and the next day, Peter went
 forth with them, & certain brethren from Iop-
 pa accompanied him. * And the day after, they 24
 entred into Cesarea. Now Cornelius waited
 for them, and had called together his kinsmen,
 and speciall friendes. * And it came to passe, as 25
 Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell
 downe at his feete, and worshipped him. * But 26
 Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euen
 I my selfe am a man. * And as he talked with 27
 him, he came in, & found many that were come
 together. * And he saide vnto them, Ye knowe 28
 that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a
 Jew, to cōpanie, or come vnto one of another
 nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should
 not call any man polluted, or vncleane. * Ther- 29
 fore came I vnto you without saying nay, when
 I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent
 haue

THE ACTES.

- 30** haue ye sent for me? * Then Cornelius
 Foure daies agoe, about this houre I fasted,
 at the ninth houre I praied in mine house,
 beholde, a man stood before me in bright
31 thing, * And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard,
 & thine almes are had in remembrance in the
32 sight of God. * Send therefore to Ioppa, & call
 for Simon whose surname is Peter: (he is lod-
 ged in the house of Simon a tanner by the se-
 side) who when he commeth, shall speake vnto
33 thee. * Then sent I for thee immediately, & thou
 hast well done to come. Now therefore are we
 all here present before God, to heare all things
34 that are commaunded thee of God. * Then Pe-
 ter opened *his* mouth, & said, Of a tructh I per-
35 ceive, that God is no accepter of persons. * But
 in euery natiō hee that seareth him, & worketh
36 righteousnesse is accepted with him. * Ye know
 the word which God hath sent to the children
 of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ, which
37 is Lord of all. * *Euery* the worde which came
 through all Indea, beginning in Galile, after the
38 baptisme which Iohn preached, * *To wit,* how
 God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy
 Ghost, and with power: who went about doing
 good, and healing all that were oppressed of
39 the denill: for God was with him. * And we
 are witnesses of all things which he did both
 in the lande of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem
 whome they slewe, hanging him on a tree.
40 * Him God raised vp the third day, and euen
41 that hee was shewed openely. * Not to all
 people

C H A P. X.

people, but vnto the witnesses chosen before
of God, *men* to vs which did eate & drink with
him, after he rose from the dead. * And he com- 42
manded vs to preach vnto the people, and to
testifie, that it is hee that is ordeined of God a
Iudge of quicke & dead. * To him also, giue all 43
the Prophets witnesse, that through his Name
all that beleue in him, shall receiue remissio of
sins. * While Peter yet spake these words, the 44
holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the
word. * So they of the circumcision which be- 45
lieued, were astonied, as many as came with
Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was
poured out the gift of the holy Ghost. * For 46
they heard them speake with tongues, & mag-
nifie God. Then answered Peter, * Can any man 47
forbid water that these shold not be baptized,
which haue receiued the holy Ghost, as well as
we? * So he commanded them to be baptized 48
in the Name of the Lord. Then praied they him
to tane certaine daies.

C H A P. XI.

NOW the Apostles & the brethren that were
in Iudea, heard, that the Gentiles had also
received the word of God. * And when Peter 2
was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circū-
cision contended against him. * Saying, Thou 3
wasest in to men vncircumcised, & hast eaten
with them. * Then Peter began, & expounded 4
~~nothing~~ in order to them, saying, * I was in the
city of Ioppa praying, & in a trance I saw, *this* 5
vision. A certaine vessel comming downe, as it

THE ACTES,

- had bene a great sheete, let down from heauen*
 6 by the foure corners, & it came to me. * Toward
 the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I
 considered, and saw foure footed beastes of the
 earth, and wilde beastes and creeping things,
 7 & foules of the heauen. * And I hearde a voice,
 8 saying vnto me, Arise, Peter: slay & eate. * And I
 said, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or
 vncleane hath at any time entred into my
 9 mouth. * But the voice answered me the second
 time from heauen, The things that God hath
 10 purified, pollute thou not. * And this was done
 three times, & al were taken vp again into hea-
 11 uen. * The behold, immediately there were three
 men alreadie come vnto the house, where I
 12 was, sent from Cesarea vnto me. * And the Spi-
 rit said vnto mee, that I should goe with them,
 without doubting: moreouer these sixe brethren
 came with mee, & we entred into the māns house.
 13 * And he shewed vs, how he had seene an Angel
 in his house, which stooode & sayd to him, Send
 men to ioppa & call for Simou, whose surname
 14 is Peter. * He shall speake wordes vnto thee,
 whereby both thou & all thine house shalbe li-
 15 ued. * And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost
 fell on them, even as vpon vs at the beginning.
 16 * Then I remembered the worde of the Lord,
 how hee said, Iohn baptized with water, but ye
 17 shaloe baptized with the holy Ghost. * Foras-
 much then as God gaue the like gift, as he did
 vnto vs, when we beleueed in the Lorde Iesus
 18 Christ, who was I, that I could let God? * When

CHAP. XI.

they heard these things, they held their peace, & glorified God, saying, Then hath god also to the Gentiles grated repentance vnto life. * And they 19
which were scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose about Steuen, went through out till they came vnto Phenice & Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the worde to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely. * Now some of the were 20
men of Cyprus & of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Grecians, & preached the Lord Iesus. * And the had 21
of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleueed & turned vnto the Lorde. * Then 22
tidings of these things came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem, & they sent forth Barnabas, that he should goe vnto Antiochia. * Who when he was come & had seen the 23
grace of God, was glad, & exhorted al, that with purpose of hart, they would continue in the lord. * For he was a good man, and full of the holy 24
Ghost, & faith, & much people ioyned themselves vnto the Lord. * The departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul: * And when he had found him, 25
he brought him vnto Antiochia, & it came to passe that a whole yeere they were conuersant with the Church, & taught much people, insomuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia. * In those daies also came prophets 27
from Hierusalem vnto Antiochia. * And 28
there stood vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout all the worlde, which also

THE ACTES.

29 came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar. * Then the
disciples, euery man according to his habilitie,
purposed, to sende succour vnto the brethren
30 which dwelt in Iudea. * Which things they al-
so did, & sent it to the Elders, by the hãd of Bar-
nabas & Saul. C H A P. XII.

1 **N**OW about that time, Herod the King stretch-
ed forth *his* hands to vexee certain of the
2 Church. * And hee killed Iames the brother of
3 Iohn with the sword. * And whẽ he saw that it
pleased the Iewes, he proceeded further, to take
Peter also: (then were the daies of vnleavened
4 bread.) * And when hee had caught him, he put
him in prison, & deliuered him to 4. quaternions
of soldiers to be kept, intending after the Pass-
5 over to bring him forth to the people. * So Pe-
ter was kept in prison, but earnest praier was
6 made of the Church vnto God for him. * And
when Herod would haue brought him out vnto
the people, the same night (slept Peter, bound
with two chaines, and the keepers before the
7 doore, kept the prison. * And behold, the Angel
of the Lord came vpon them, & a light shined
in the house, & hee smote Peter on the side, &
8 raised him vp. saying, Arise quickly. And his
chaines fell off from *his* hands. * And the Angel
said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, & binde on thy
sandales. And so he did. Then he said vnto him,
Cast thy garment about thee, and follow mee.
9 * So Peter came out and followed him, and
knewe not that it was true, which was done
by the Angel, but thought he had seen a vision.

* Now

C H A P. XII.

Now when they were past the first and second watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne accord, & they went out, & passed thorow one street, & by & by the Angell departed from him. * And when Peter was come to him selfe, he said, Now I know for a trveth, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, & hath deliuered me out of the hand of Herod, & from all the waiting for of the people of the Iewes. * And as he considered *the thing*, he came to the house of Marie, the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together, & prayed. * And when Peter knocked at the entrie doore, a maide came forth to hearken, named Rhode. * But when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the entrie *doore* for gladnes, but to min, & told, how Peter stood before the entrie. * But they said vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet she affirmed it constantly that it was so. Then said they, It is his Angel. * But Peter continued knocking, & when they had opened it, and saw him, they were astonied. * And he beckened vnto them with the hand, to hold their peace, and told them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things vnto Iames & to the brethren, and he departed & went into another place. * Now as soone as it was day, there was no small trouble among the souldiers, what was become of Peter. * And when Herod had sought for him, & found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded them

THE ACTES.

them to be led to be punished. And he went
 downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and *there* about
 20 * Then Herod was angrie with them of Tyre
 and Sidon, but they came all with one accorde
 vnto him, & perswaded Blattus the kings cham-
 berlaine, and they desired peace, because their
 21 countrey was nourished by the Kings *land*. * And
 vpon a day appointed, Herod arayed him selfe
 in royal apparel, & sate on the iudgement seate,
 22 & made an oration vnto them. * And the peo-
 ple gaue a shout, *saying*, The voyce of God is
 23 not of man. * But immediatly the Angel of the
 Lord smote him, because he gaue not glorie
 to God, so that he was eaten of wormes, and
 24 gaue vp the ghost. * And the word of god grew
 25 and multiplied. * So Barnabas & Saul returned
 from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their
 office, and tooke with them Iohn, whose
 name was Marke.

C H A P. XIII.

1 **T**Here were also in the Church that was in
 Antiochia, certaine Prophets & teachers, as
 Barnabas, & Simeon called Niger, & Lucius of
 Cyrene, & Manahen (which had bene brought
 2 vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul. * Now
 as they ministered to the Lord, & fasted, the holy
 Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for
 3 the worke whereunto I haue called them. * Then
 fasted they and prayed, and laid their hands on
 4 them, & let them go. * And they, after they were
 sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe to
 Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to

C H A P. XIII.

* And when they were at Salamis, they
 preached the worde of God in the Synagogues
 of the Iewes : and they had also Iohn to *their*
 minister. * So when they had gone throughout
 the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sor-
 cerer, a false prophet, being a Iew, named Barie-
 mas. * Which was with the Deputie Sergius
 Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Bar-
 mas & Saul, and desired to heare the word of
 God. * But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his
 name by interpretation) withstoode them, and
 sought to turne away the Deputie from the
 faith. * Then Saul (which also is called Paul) be-
 ing full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,
 * And said, O full of all subtiltie & al mitchiefe,
 the child of the deuill *and* enemye of all righte-
 mousnes, wilt thou not cease to pervert the strait
 wayes of the Lord ? * Nowe therefore behold,
 the hand of the Lord is vpon thee & thou shalt
 be blind. & not see the sunne for a season. And
 immediatly there fell on him a mist & a darke-
 nesse, and he went about, seeking some to leade
 him by the hand. * Then the Deputie when he
 saw what was done, beleeued, and was astonied
 at the doctrine of the Lord. * Now when Paul
 and they that were with him, were departed by
 ship from Paphus, they came to Perga a citie of
 Pamphylia : then Iohn departed from them, &
 returned to Hierusalem. * But when they depar-
 ted from Perga, they came to Antiochia a citie
 of Pisidia and went into the Synagogue on the
 Sabbath day, & sate downe. * And after the lo-

THE ACTES.

- Aure of the Lawe & Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethre, if ye haue any word of exhortation for the people, say on. * Then Paul stood vp, and beckened with the hand, & said, Men of Israel,
- 16 ye that feare God, hearken. * The God of the people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of Egypt, and with an high arme brought them out thereof. * And about the time of fourtie yeeres
- 17 suffred he their manners in the wildernes. * And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Canaan, & deuided their land to them by lot. * The
- 18 afterwarde he gaue vnto them Iudges, about foure hundredth & fiftie yeeres, vnto the time of
- 19 Samuel the Prophet. * So after that, they desired a King, and God gaue vnto them Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin
- 20 the space of fourtie yeeres. * And after he had taken him away, he raised vp Dauid to be their king, of whom he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid the scime of lesse, a man after mine owne
- 21 heart, which will do all things that I will. * Of this mans seede hath God according to his promise raised vp to Israel, the Saviour Iesus.
- 22 * When Iohn had first preached before his coming the baptisme of repentance to al the people of Israel. * And when Iohn had fulfilled his
- 23 course, he said, Whom ye thinke that I am, I am not he: but beholde, there commeth one after me, whose shoe of his feet I am not worthy to
- 24 looke. * Ye men & brethren, children of the
- netales

C H A P. XII.

generation of Abraham & whosoever among you
 searcheth God, to you is the word of this saluati-
 on sent * For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, & 27
 their rulers, because they knewe him not, nor
 yet the wordes of the Prophets which are read
 every Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in
 condemning him. * And though they found no 28
 cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate to
 kill him. * And whē they had fulfilled al things 29
 that were writtē of him, they tooke him down
 from the tice, and put him in a sepulchre. * But 30
 God raised him vp frō the dead. * And he was 31
 seene many daies of them which came vp with
 him from Galile to Hierusalem, which are his
 witnessēs vnto the people. * And we declare 32
 vnto you, that touching the promise made vn-
 to the fathers, * God hath fulfilled it vnto vs 33
 their childrē, in that he raised vp Iesus, euē as it
 is written in the second Psalme, Thou art my
 Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee. * Nowe 34
 as concerning that he raised him vp from the
 dead, no more to returne to corruptiō, he hath
 said thus, I wil giue you the holy things of Da-
 uid, which are faithfull. * Wherefore he saith 35
 also in another place, Thou wilt not suffer thine
 holy one to see corruption. * Howbeit, Dauid 36
 after he had serued his time by the counsell of
 God, he slept, & was laid with his fathers, & saw
 corruption. * But he whom God raised vp, saw 37
 no corruption. * Be it knowen vnto you there- 38
 fore, men & brethren, that through this man is
 preached vnto you forgiveness of sinnes. * And 39
 from

THE ACTES.

- From all thinges, from which ye could not be
 iustified by the law of Moses, by him enery one
 40 that beleeueth, is iustified. * Beware therefore
 lest that come vpon you, which is spoken of in
 41 the Prophets, * Behold, ye despisers & wonder,
 and vanish away: for I worke a worke in your
 dayes, a worke which ye shall not beleue, if a
 42 man would declare it you. * And when they
 were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes,
 the Gentiles besought, that they would preach
 these wordes to them the next Sabbath day.
 43 * Nowe when the congregation was dissolved,
 many of the Iewes, and Profelytes that feared
 God, followed Paul and Barnabas, which spake
 to them, and exhorted them to continue in the
 44 grace of God. * And the next Sabbath day came
 almost the whole citie together, to heare the
 45 word of God. * But when the Iewes sawe the
 people, they were full of enuie, & spake against
 those thinges, which were spoken of Paul, con-
 46 trarying *them*, and railing on *them*. * Then Paul
 & Barnabas spake boldly, & said, It was neces-
 sarie that the word of God should first haue bin
 spoken vnto you: but seeing ye put it from
 you, and iudge your selues vnworthy of eternall
 47 ling life, lo, we turne to the Gentiles. * For so
 hath the Lorde commaunded vs, saying, I haue
 made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou
 shouldest be the saluation vnto the ende of the
 48 worlde. * And when the Gentiles heard it, they
 were glad, & glorified the word of the Lorde:
 as many as were ordeined vnto eternall life.

C H A P. XIII.

sted. * Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey. * But the Iewes stirred certaine deuout & honourable women, & the chiefe men of the citie, & raysed persecution against Paul & Barnabas, & expelled them out of their coastes. * But they shook off the dust of their feete against them, & came vnto Iconium. * And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

C H A P. XIII.

And it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes & of the Grecians beleued. * And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp, and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren. * So therefore they abode there a long time, & spake boldly in the Lorde, which gave testimonie vnto the word of his grace, and caused signes & wonders to be done by their handes. * But the multitude of the citie was diuided: & some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles. * And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe them violence, & to stone them, * They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, & Derbe cities of Lycaonia, & vnto the region round about, * And there preached the Gospel. * Now there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked. * He heard Paul speake: who beholding him,

THE ACTES.

- him, & perceining that he had faith to be healed, * Said with a loud voyce, Stand vpright on thy feet. And he leaped vp, & walked. * Then when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likeness of men. * And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: & Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker. * The Iupiters Priest, which was before their citie, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, and would haue sacrificed with the people. * But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their cloches, & ran in among the people, crying, * And saying, O men, why doe ye these things? We are euen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, & preach vnto you, that ye should turne from these vain things vnto the liuing God, which made heauen & earth, & the sea, & al things that in them are. * Who in times past suffered all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes. * Neuertheless, he left not him selfe without witnes, in that he did good and gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food & gladnesse. * And speaking these things, scarce appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto the. * Then there came certain Iewes from Antiochia & Iconium, which when they had perswaded the people, stoned Paul & drew him out of the citie, supposing he had been dead. * Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he arose vp, & came into the citie.

C H A P. XV. R T

the next day he departed with Barnabas to
 Derbe. * And after they had preached the glad
 tidings of the Gospell to that citie, and had
 taught many, they returned to Lystra, & to Ico-
 nium, and to Antiochia, * Confirming the disci-
 ples hearts, and exhorting them to continue in
 the faith, *affirming* that we must through many
 afflictions enter into the kingdom of God. * And
 when they had ordained the Elders by election
 in every Church, & prayed, & fasted, they com-
 mended them to the Lord in whome they be-
 lieved. * Thus they went throughout Pisidia, &
 came to Paphlagonia. * And when they had prea-
 ched the worde in Perga, they came downe to
 Antalia. * And thence sailed to Antiochia, from
 whence they had bene commended vnto the
 grace of God, to the worke which they had
 fulfilled. * And when they were come and had
 gathered the Church together, they rehearsed
 all the things that God had done by them, and
 how he had opened the doore of faith vnto
 the Gentiles. * So there they abode a long time
 with the disciples.

C H A P. XV.

Then came downe certaine from Iudea, and
 taught the brethren, *saying*, Except ye be cir-
 cumcised after the manner of Moses, ye can not
 be saved. * And when there was great dissensi-
 on & disputation by Paul & Barnabas against
 them, they ordained that Paul & Barnabas, and
 some other of them, should go vp to Hieru-
 salem vnto the Apostles, and Elders about this
 question.

THE ACTES.

- 3 question. * Thus being brought soorth by the Church, they passed through Phenice & Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles, & they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren.
- 4 * And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, & of the Apostles & Elders, & they declared what things God had done by them. * But *said they*, certain of the sect of the Pharisees, which did beleue, rose vp, saying, that it was needful to circumcise them, & to command *them* to keepe the Law of Moses.
- 6 * Then the Apostles and Elders came together to looke to this matter. * And when there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp, & said vnto them, Ye men *and* brethren, ye knowe that a good while ago among vs, God chose out me, that the Gētiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, & beleue. * And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnes, in giuing vnto them the holy Ghost, euen as *he did vnto* vs. * And he put no difference betweene vs & them, after that by faith he had purified their hearts. * Now therefore, why tempt ye God, to lay a yoke on the disciples necks, which neither our fathers, nor we were able to beare? * But we beleue, through the grace of the Lorde Iesus Christ to be saued, euen as they *doe*. * Then all the multitude kept silence, & heard Barnabas & Paul, which tolde what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them.
- 23 * And when they helde their peace, James answered, saying, Men *and* brethren, hearken vnto me.

* Simeon hath declared, howe God first
 visite the Gentiles, to take of *them* a people
 vnto his Name. * And to this agree the words
 of the Prophets, as it is written, * After this I
 will returne, & will build againe the tabernacle
 of David, which is fallen downe, and the ruines
 thereof will I build againe, and I will set it vp,
 That the residue of men might seeke after the
 Lord, & all the Gentiles vpon whom my name
 is called, saith the Lorde, which doeth all these
 things. * From the beginning of the worlde,
 God knoweth all his workes. * Wherefore my
 sentence is, that we trouble not them of the
 Gentiles that are turned to God, * But that we
 require vnto them, that they abstaine them selues
 from filthinesse of idoles, & fornication, and that
 that is strangled, & from blood. * For Moles of
 euery time hath in euery citie them that preach
 him, seeing he is read in the Synagogue euery
 Sabbath day. * Then it seemed good to the A-
 postles & Elders with the whole church, to send
 chosen men of their owne company to Antio-
 chia with Paul & Barnabas: *to wit*, Iudas whose
 surname was Barsabas, and Silas, which were
 chiefe men among the brethren, * And wrote
 letters by them after this manner, T H E A-
 P O S T L E S, and the Elders, & the brethren,
 vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in
 Antiochia & in Syria, & in Cilicia, send greeting.
 * Forasmuch as we haue heard, that certaine
 which went out from vs, haue troubled you
 with wordes, & cumbred your mindes, saying,
 Ye

THE ACTES.

Ye must be circumcised, & keepe the Lawe
 25 whome we gaue no such commandement. * It
 seemed therefore good to vs, when we were
 come together with one accord, to send choise
 men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and
 26 Paul, * Men that haue giuen vp their lines for
 27 the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ. * We haue
 therefore sent Iudas & Silas, which shall also tell
 28 you the same things by mouth. * For it seemed
 good to the holy Ghost, and to vs, to lay no
 more burden vpon you, then these necessarie
 29 things, * That is, that ye abstaine from things
 offered to idoles, & blood, & that which is stru-
 30 gled, & from fornication: fro which if ye keep
 your selues, ye shall do well. Fare ye wel. * Now
 when they were departed, they came to Antio-
 chia, & after they had assembled the multitude,
 31 they deliuered the Epistle. * And when they
 had read it, they reioyced for the consolation.
 32 * And Iudas & Silas bring Prophets, exhorted
 the brethren with many wordes, & strenght-
 33 ned them. * And after they had taryed there a
 space, they were let go in peace of the brethren
 34 vnto the Apostles. * Notwithstanding Silas
 35 thought good to abide there still. * Paul also
 & Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching &
 preaching with many other, the worde of the
 36 Lord. * But after certaine dayes, Paul said vnto
 Barnabas, Let vs returne, & visite our brethren
 in euery citie, where wee haue preached the
 37 word of the Lord, and see how they do. * And
 Barnabas counsell'd to take with them Iohn
 called

C H A P. XVI.

called Marke. * But Paul thought it not meet to
 take him vnto their company, which departed
 from them from Pamphylia, & went not with
 them to the worke. * Then were they so stirred,
 that they departed asunder one from the other,
 so that Barnabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto
 Cyprus. * And Paul chose Silas & departed, be-
 ing commended of the brethren vnto the grace
 of God. * And he went through Syria & Cilicia,
 stablishing the Churches.

C H A P. XVI.

Then came he to Derbe & to Lystra: & be-
 hold a certain disciple was there named Ti-
 motheus, a womans sonne, which was a Iewesse
 & beleued, but his father was a Grecian, * Of
 whom the brethren which were at Lystra and
 Iconium, reported well. * Therefore Paul would
 that he should go forth with him, & tooke and
 circumcised him, because of the Iewes, which
 were in those quarters: for they knew all, that
 his father was a Grecian. * And as they went
 through the cities, they deliuered them the de-
 crees to keep, ordained of the Apostles & El-
 ders, which were at Hierusalem. * And so were
 the Churches stablished in the faith, & increased
 in number daily. * Now when they had gone
 throughout Phrygia, & the region of Galatia,
 they were forbidde of the holy Ghost to preach
 the word in Asia. * Then came they to Mysia, &
 sought to go into Bythinia: but the Spirit sus-
 tained them not. * Therefore they passed through
 Mysia, and came downe to Troas, * Where a

THE ACTES

- vision appeared to Paul in the night. There
 stood a man of Macedonia, & prayed him, say-
 ing, Come into Macedonia, and help vs. * And
 after he had seene the vision, immediately we
 prepared to goe into Macedonia, being assured
 that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gos-
 pell vnto them. * Then went we forth from
 Troas, and with a straight course came to Sa-
 mothracia, and the next day to Neapolis, * And
 from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe ci-
 tie in the partes of Macedonia, & whose inhabi-
 tants came from Rome to dwell there, and we
 were in that citie abiding certaine daies. * And
 on the Sabbath day, wee went out of the citie,
 besides a Riuer, where they were wont to pray,
 and we sat downe, and spake vnto the women
 which were come together. * And a certain wo-
 man named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city
 of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God,
 heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that
 she attended vnto the things, which Paul spake.
 * And when she was baptized, & her household,
 she besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to
 be faithfull to the Lord, come into mine house,
 and abide there: & she constrained vs. * And it
 came to passe that as we went to prayer, a cer-
 taine mayd hauing a spirit of diuination, met vs,
 which gate her masters much vantage with di-
 uining. * She followed Paul and vs, & cried, say-
 ing, These men are the seruants of the most high
 God, which shew vnto you the way of saluation.
 * And this did shee many daies: but Paul being

C H A P. XVI.

turned about & said to the spirit, I com-
 mand thee in the name of Iesus Christ, that
 thou come out of her. And hee came out the
 same houre. *Now when her masters saw that
 the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught
 Paul & Silas, & drew the into the market place
 vnto the magistrates, *And brought the to the
 governours, laying, These men which are Iewes,
 trouble our citie, *And preach ordināces which
 are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to ob-
 serue, seeing we are Romanes. *The people also
 rose vp together against them, & the gouerners
 rent their clothes. & commaunded them to be
 beaten with rods. *And when they had beaten
 them sore, they cast them into prison, com-
 manding the layler to keep them surely. *Who ha-
 uing receiued such commandement, cast them
 into the inner prison, & made their feet fast in
 the stocks, *Now at midnight Paul and Silas
 prayed, & sung Psalmes vnto God and the pri-
 soners heard them. *And suddenly there was a
 great earthquake, so that the foundation of the
 prison was shaken: and by & by all the doores
 opened, & every mans bands were loosed. *The
 keeper of the prison waked out of his sleep,
 & when he saw the prison doores open, he drew
 out his sword and would haue killed himselfe,
 supposing the prisoners had beene fled. *But
 Paul cried with a loude voice, saying, Doe thy
 selfe no harme: for we are all here. *Then he cal-
 led for a light, and leaped in, and came trem-
 bling, and fell downe before Paul & Silas *And
brought

THE ACTES.

- brought them out, & saide, Syrs, what must
 31 doe to be saued? *And they said, Beleeue in the
 Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and
 32 thine household. *And they preached vnto him
 the word of the Lord, and to all that were in
 33 his house. *Afterward he tooke them the same
 houre of the night, and washed *their* stripes, and
 was baptized with all that belonged vnto him,
 34 straightway. *And when he had brought them
 into his house, he set meate before them, and he
 ioyced that he with all his household beleued
 35 in God. *And when it was day, the gouernour
 sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.
 36 *Then the keeper of the prison tolde *their*
 wordes vnto Paul, *saying*, The gouernours haue
 sent to loose you: now therefore get you hence,
 37 and go in peace. *Then saide Paul vnto them,
 After that they haue beaten vs openly vncou-
 demned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs
 into prison, and now woulde they put vs out
 priuily? nay verely: but let them come & bring
 38 vs out. *And the sergeants told these wordes
 vnto the gouernours, who feared when they
 39 heard that they were Romanes. *Then came
 they and prayed them, and brought them out,
 and desired them to depart out of the citie.
 40 *And they went out of the prison, and entred
 into *the house* of Lydia: and when they had seen
 the brethren, they comforted them, and de-
 parted.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

NOW as they passed through Amphipolis, & 1
 Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where
 was a Synagogue of the Iewes. * And Paul, as 2
 his maner was, went in vnto them, & three Sab-
 bath daies disputed with thē by rhe Scriptures,
 *Opening, & alleadging that Christ must haue 3
 suffered, and risen againe from the dead: and this
 is Iesus Christ, whom, *saith he*, I preach to you.
 *And some of them beleeued, & ioynd in com- 4
 pany with Paul and Silas: also of the Grecians
 that feared God a great multitude, and of the
 chief womē not a few. *But the Iewes which 5
 beleued not, mooued with enuy, tooke vnto
 them certaine vagabonds & wicked fellows,
 & when they had assembled the multitude, they
 made a tumult in the city, and made assault a- 6
 gainst the house of Iason, and sought to bring
 them out to the people. *But when they found 7
 them not, they drew Iason & certaine brethrē
 vnto the heads of the city, crying, These are they
 which haue subuerted the state of the world, &
 here they are, *Whom Iason hath receined, & 8
 these all doe against the decrees of Cesar, say-
 ing, that there is another king, one Iesus. *Then 9
 they troubled the people and the heads of the
 citie when they heard these things. *Notwith-
 standing when they had receiued sufficient as-
 surance of Iason and of the other, they let them
 go. * And the brethren immediatly sent away 10
 Paul & Silas by night vnto Berea, which, when
 they were come thither, entred into the Sy-
 nagogue of the Iewes. *These were also more 11

THE ACTES.

noble men then they which were at Thessa-
 nica, which receiued the word with al readiness,
 and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those
 things were so. * Therefore many of them be-
 lieued, and of honest women, which were Gre-
 cians, and men not a few. * But when the
 Iewes of Thessalonica knew, that the word of
 God was also preached of Paul at Berea, they
 came thither also, & moued the people. * But
 by and by the brethren sent away Paul to goe
 as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus
 abode there still. * And they that did conuince
 Paul, brought him vnto Athens: and when they
 had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and
 Timotheus that they should come to him at
 once, they departed. * Now while Paul waited
 for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him,
 when he saw the city subiect to idolatry. * There-
 fore hee disputed in the Synagogue with the
 Iewes, and with them that were religious, and
 in the market daily with whomsoever he met.
 * Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicurus,
 and of the Stoikes, disputed with him, and some
 saide, What will this babler say? Others said,
 He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods
 (because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the
 resurrection.) * And they tooke him, & brought
 him into Mars street, saying, May we not know,
 what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest,
 is? * For thou bringest certaine strange things
 vnto our eares, we would know therefore, what
 these things meane. * For all the Athenians, and
 strangers

CHAP. XVII.

Angels which dwell there, gaue themselves
 nothing els, but either to tell, or to heare
 newes. * Then Paul stood in the mids of
 the streete, and said; Ye men of Athens, I per-
 ceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.
 For as I passed by, & beheld your deuotions, I
 found an altar wherein was written, V N T O
 THE V N K N O W E N G O D. Whom
 ye then ignorantly worship, him shew I vnto
 you. * God that made the world, and all things
 that are therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaue
 and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with
 hands, * Neither is worshipped with mens
 hands, as though he needed anything, seeing he
 giueth to all life and breath & all things, * And
 hath made of one blood all mankind, to dwell
 in all the face of the earth, & hath assigned the
 seasons which were ordained before, and the
 bounds of their habitation, * That they should
 seek the Lord, if so be they might haue groped
 after him, and found him, though doubtles he
 be not far from euerie one of vs. * For in him
 we liue & mooue, & haue our being, as also cer-
 taine of your owne Poets haue said, For we are
 also his generation. * Forasmuch then, as we
 are the generatiō of god, we ought not to think
 that the Godhead is like vnto gold or silver, or
 stone graven by art and the inuention of man.
 And the time of this ignorance God regard-
 ed not: but now he admonisheth all men eu-
 ery where to repent. * Because he hath appoin-
 ted a day in the which he will iudge the world

THE ACTES

In righteousness, by that man whome he had appointed, ~~whereof~~ he hath given an assurance to all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. * Now when they heard of the resurrection from the dead, some mocked; and others said, We will heare thee againe of this thing. * And so Paul departed from among them. * Howbeit certaine men cleaued vnto Paul, and beleueed: among whom was also Denis Anaxagoras, and a woman named Damaris, & others with them.

C H A P. XVIII.

After these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinthus. * And found a certaine Iewe named Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, and his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them. * And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for their craft was to make tents.) * And he disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath day, and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians. * Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in Spirit, testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the Christ. * And when they resisted and blasphemed, he shooke his raiment, and said vnto them, Your blood be vpon your owne head: I am cleane from henceforth will I go vnto the Gentiles. * So he departed thence, & entred into a certain mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house

joyed

CHAP. XVIII.

8 **W**ent hard to the Synagogue. * And Crispus
 the ruler of the Synagogue, beleueed in
 the Lorde with all his houlhold: and many of
 the Corinthians hearing it, beleueed and were
 baptized. * Then saide the Lorde to Paul in the
 9 night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, & hold
 thy peace. * For I am with thee, and no man
 shall lay hands on thee to hurt thee: for I haue
 much people in this citie. * So hee continued
 there a yere and sixe moneths, and taught the
 wode among them. * Now when Gallio was
 12 Iudic of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one
 accord against Paul, and brought him to the
 iudgement seate, * Saying, This felow perswa-
 13 deth men to worship God otherwise then the
 Law appointeth. * And as Paul was about to
 14 open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If
 it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deede, O
 ye Iewes, I would according to reason main-
 15 taine you. * But if it be a question of words, &
 16 lawes, and of your Lawe, looke ye to it your
 selves: for I will bee no iudge of those thinges.
 17 * And he dratte them from the iudgement seat.
 * He tooke al the Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe
 18 ruler of the Synagogue, & beat him before the
 iudgement seate: but Gallio cared nothing
 for those thinges. * But when Paul had taried
 there yet a good while, he tooke leaue of the
 brethren, & sailed into Syria (& with him Pris-
 19 cilla and Aquila) after that hee had shorne his
 head in Cenchrea: for he had a vowe. * Then
 he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but
 he

THE ACTES.

- hee entred into the Synagogue and disputed
 20 with the Iewes. * Who desired him to tarry
 longer time with them: but he would not
 21 sent, * But bade them farewell, saying, I must
 needes keepe this feast that commeth, in Ie-
 rusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, if
 22 God will. So he sailed from Ephesus. * And
 when he came downe to Cesarea, he went
 to Hierusalem: and when hee had saluted the
 23 Church, he went downe vnto Antiochia. * Now
 when he had taried there a while, he departed
 and went through the countrey of Galatia and
 Phrygia by order, strengthening all the dis-
 24 ciples. * And a certaine Iew named Apollos, who
 at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent
 25 man, and mightie in the Scriptures. * The same
 was instructed in the way of the Lord, and he
 spake feruently in the Spirit, and taught dili-
 gently the things of the Lorde, and knewe but
 26 the baptisme of Iohn onely. * And he began
 to speake boldly in the Synagogue. Whom when
 Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him
 vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way
 27 of God more perfectly. * And when hee was
 minded to go into Achaia, the brethren exhort-
 ing him, wrote to the disciples to receive
 him: and after he was come thither he taught
 them much which had beleueed through gra-
 28 * For mightely he cōfuted publikely the Iewes,
 with great vehemencie, shewing by the Scrip-
 tures, that Iesus was that Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

And it came to passe, while Apollos was at
 Corinthus, that Paul when he passed thro-
 ugh the vpper coastes, came to Ephesus, and
 found certaine disciples, *And said vnto them,
 Hane ye receiued the holy Ghost since ye bele-
 ued? And they said vnto him, We haue not so
 much as heard whether there be an holy ghost.
 *And he said vnto them, Vnto what were ye
 then baptized? And they said, Vnto Iohns bap-
 tisme. *Then saide Paul, Iohn verely baptized
 with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto
 the people, that they shold beleue in him, which
 should come after him, that is, in Christ Iesus.
 *And when they heard it, they were baptized
 in the name of the Lord Iesus. *So Paul laid his
 hands vpon the, & the holy Ghost came on the,
 & they spak the tongues, & prophesied. *And al
 the men were about twelue. *Moreouer he wet
 into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the
 space of three moneths, disputing & exhorting
 to the things that appertaine to the kingdom of
 God. *But when certaine were hardened, & dis-
 obried, speaking euill of the way of God before
 the multitude, hee departed from them, & sepa-
 rated the disciples, and disputed daily in the
 schoole of one Tyrannus. *And this was done
 by the space of two yeres, so that al they which
 dwelt in Asia, heard the worde of the Lord Ie-
 sus, both Iewes & Grecians. *And God wrought
 no smal miracles by the hand of Paul: *So that
 from his body were brought vnto the sick, ker-
 chiefs or handkerchiefs, & the diseases departed
 from

THE ACTES.

- from them, & the euill spirits went out of them.
- 13 *Then certain of the vagabōd Iewes, exorcists tooke in hand to name ouer them, which euill spirits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus, whō Paul preached.
- 14 * (And there were certaine sonnes of Sceurawe, the Priest, *about* seuē, which did this) * And the euill spirit answered, & said, Iesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are yee? * And the man in whome the euill spirit was, ranne on them, & ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house, naked, & wounded.
- 17 *And this was knowne to all the Iewes & Greciās also, which dwelt at Ephesus, & feare came on them al, & the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified, * And many that beleeued came & confessed, & shewed their works. * Many also of thē which vsed curious artes, brought their bookes, & burned them before all men, & they counted the price of them, & found it fiftē thousand *pieces* of siluer. * So the word of God grew mightelie, & preuailed. * Now when these things were accomplished, Paul purposed by the Spirit to passe through Macedonia & Achaia, & to go to Hiernsalem, saying, After I haue bin there, I must also see Rome. * So sent he into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus & Erastus, *but* he remained in Asia for a season. * And the same time there arose no smal trouble about that way. * For a certain mā named Demetrius a siluer smith, which made siluer temples of Diana, brought grieuance

C H A P. XIX.

vnto the craftes men,*Whom he called 29
 together,with the workmen of like things, and
 said, Syrs, yee know that by this craft we haue
 our goods: *Moreouer yee see & heare,that not 30
 I alone at Ephesus,but almost throughout all A-
 sia this Paul hath perswaded, and turned away
 much people, saying, That they be not gods
 which are made with hands. *So that not only 27
 this thing is daungerous vnto vs, that this our
 nation shalbe reprooued, but also that the Tē-
 ple of the great goddesse Diana should be no-
 thing esteemed, & that it would come to passe
 that her magnificence, which all Asia and the
 world worhippeth,should be destroyed.*Now 28
 when they heard it,they were full of wrath,and
 stood out,saying,Great is Diana of the Ephesiā.
 And the whole citie was ful of confusion,and 29
 they rushed into the common place with one
 consent,& caught Gaius, and Aristarchus, men of
 Macedonia,& Pauls companiōs of his iourney.
 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto 30
 the people,the disciples suffered him not.*Cer- 31
 taine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his
 friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that hee
 would not present himself in the cōmon place.
 *Some therefore cried one thing, & some ano- 32
 ther: for the assembly was out of order, & the
 more part knew not wherfore they were come
 together. * And some of the companie drewe 33
 forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him for-
 wards,Alexander then beckened with the hand,
 & wold haue excused the matter to the people.

THE ACTES.

- 34 * But when they knew that he was a Jew, there
arose a shout almost for the space of 2. houres,
of all men, crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.
35 * Then the town clarke when he had staied
the people, laid, Ye men of Ephesus, what man
is it, that knoweth not how that the citie of the
Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess
Diana, & of the *image* which came downe from
36 Iupiter: * Seeing then that no man can speake
against these things, yee ought to be appeased,
37 to doe nothing rashly. * For yee haue brought
hither these me, which haue neither committed
sacriledge, neither do blaspheme your goddess.
38 * Wherefore, if Demetrius & the craftes men
which are with him, haue a matter against any
man, the law is open, & there are Deputies to
39 them accuse one another. * But if ye inquire any
thing concerning other matters, it may be de-
40 termined in a lawfull assemblie. * For we are
men in iepordie to be accused of this daies sedi-
tion, soasmuch as there is no cause, wherby we
may giue a reason of this concourse of people.
41 * And when he had thus spoken, hee let the as-
sembly depart.

C H A P. XX.

- 1 **N**OWE after the tumult was appeased, Paul
called the disciples vnto him, & embraced
them, & departed to goe into Macedonia. * And
2 whē he had gone through those parts, & had ex-
horted the with many words, he came into Grece.
3 And hauing taried there three moneths, be-
4 cause the Iewes laid wait for him, as he was a-
5 boord

CHAP. XX.

went to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne
 through Macedonia. * And there accompanied
 him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them
 of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and
 Gains of Derbe, & Timotheus, and of them of
 Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus. * These went
 before, and taried vs at Troas. * And we sailed
 forth from Philippi, after the daies of vnteaue-
 ned bread, and came vnto them to Troas in
 five daies, where we abode seuen daies. * And
 the first day of the weeke, the disciples beeing
 come together to breake bread, Paul preached
 vnto them, readie to depart on the morowe,
 and continued the preaching vnto midnight.
 * And there were many lights in an vpper cha-
 ber, where they were gathered together. * And
 there late in a window a certaine young man,
 named Eutychus, fallen into a sleepe: and as
 Paul was long preaching, hee ouercome with
 sleepe, fell downe from the third loft, and was
 taken vp dead. * But Paul went downe, & laid
 his selfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying,
 Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him.
 * Then when Paul was come vp again, and had
 broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long
 while till the dawning of the day, he so depar-
 ted. * And they brought the boy aliue, & they
 were not a little comforted. * Then we went
 before to ship, and sailed vnto the ciue Assos,
 that we might receiue Paul there: for so had
 he appointed, and would him selfe
 * Now when he was come vnto

THE ACTES.

and we had receiued him, we came to Miletus. * And we sailed thence, & came the next day
 15 ouer againſt Chios, and the next day we arrived
 at Samos, and taried at Trogyllium: the next
 16 day we came to Miletum. * For Paul had de-
 termined to ſaile by Ephesus, becauſe he would
 not ſpende the time in Aſia: for he haſted to
 be, if hee could poſſible, at Hieruſalem, at the
 17 day of Pentecoſte. * Wherefore from Miletum,
 he ſent to Ephesus, and called the Elders
 18 of the Church. * Who when they were come
 to him, he ſaid vnto them, Ye know from the
 firſt day that I came into Aſia, after what man-
 19 ner I haue bin with you at all ſeaſons, * Seruing
 the Lorde with all modeſtie, and with many
 teares, and tentations, which came to me by the
 20 layings awaite of the Iewes, * And how I kept
 backe nothing that was profitable, but haue
 ſhewed you, and taught you openly and thro-
 21 roughout euery houſe, * Witneſſing both to
 the Iewes, and to the Grecians the repentance
 toward God, and faith toward our Lord Ieſus
 22 Chriſt. * And now behold, I goe bound in the
 Spirit vnto Hieruſalem, and know not what
 23 things ſhall come vnto me there, * Save that
 the holy Ghoſt witneſſeth in euery citie, ſay-
 24 ing, that bonds and afflictions abide me. * But
 I paſſe not at all, neither is my life deare vnto
 my ſelfe, ſo that I may fulfill my courſe with
 ioy, and the miniſtration, which I haue recei-
 25 ued of the Lorde Ieſus, to teſtifie the Goſ-
 pels of the grace of God. * And now behold,
 I know

CHAP. XX.

Know that henceforth ye all, through whom
I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God,
shall see my face no more. * Wherefore I take
you to recorde this day, that I am pure from
the blood of all men. * For I haue kept no-
thing backe, but haue shewed you all the
counsell of God. * Take heede therefore vnto
your selues, and to all the flocke, whereof the
holy Ghost hath made you ouerseers, to feede
the Church of God, which he hath purchased
with that his owne blood. * For I knowe
this, that after my departing shall greivous
wolves enter in among you, not sparing the
flocke. * Moreover of your owne selues shall
men arise, speaking peruerse things, to drawe
disciples after them. * Therefore watch, and
remember that by the space of three yeeres I
ceased not to warne euery one, both night and
day with teares. * And now brethren I com-
mende you to God, and to the worde of his
grace, which is able to builde further, and to
give you an inheritance, among all them
which are sanctified. * I haue coveted no mans
silver, nor gold, nor apparell. * Yea, ye know,
that these handes haue ministered vnto my ne-
cessities, and to them that were with mee. * I
haue shewed you all things, howe that so la-
bouring, yee ought to support the weake, and
to remember the wordes of the Lord Iesus,
howe that hee saide, It is a blessed thing to
give, rather then to receiue. * And when hee
had thus spoken, hee kneeled downe, and

THE ACTES.

37 prayed with them all. * Then they wept all
aboundantlie, and fell on Pauls necke, and
38 kissed him, * Beeing chieflie sorie for the wordes
which he spake, That they should see his face
no more. And they accompanied him vnto the
ship. C H A P. XXI.

1 **A**Nd as we launched forth, and were depar-
ted from them, wee came with a straight
course vnto Coos, and the day following vnto
2 the Rhodes, & from thence vnto Patara. * And
we found a ship that went ouer vnto Phenice,
3 & went aboard, and set forth. * And when we
had discouered Cyprus, wee left it on the left
hand, and sailed toward Syria, & arriued at Ty-
4 rus: for there the ship vnladed the burden. * And
when we had found disciples, we taried there
seuen daies. And they tolde Paul through the
Spirit, that he should not goe vp to Hiemi-
5 lem. * But when the daies were ended, we de-
parted, and went our way: and they all accom-
panied vs with *their* wiues and children, euen
out of the citie: and wee kneeling downe
6 on the shore, prayed. * Then when we had
embraced one another, we tooke ship, and they
7 returned home. * And when we had ended the
course from Tyms, we arriued at Ptolemais, &
saluted the brethren, and abode with them one
8 day. * And the next day, Paul and wee that
were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesa-
rea: and we entred into the house of Philip the
Euangelist, which was one of the seven *Des-*
9 *cons*, and abode with him. * Now he had some
daughters

C H A P. XXI.

daughters virgines, which did prophesie. * And 10
 as we taried there many daies, there came a
 certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.
 * And when hee was come vnto vs, hee tooke 11
 Pauls girdle, and bonnd his owne handes and
 feete, and saide, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So
 shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man
 that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him in
 to the handes of the Gentiles. * And when wee 12
 had heard these things, both we & other of the
 same place besought him that he would not
 goe vp to Hierusalem. * Then Paul answered, 13
 & said, What do ye weeping, & breaking mine
 heart? For I am readie not to be bound onely,
 but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of
 the Lord Iesus. * So when he would not be per- 14
 suaded, we ceased, saying, The Will of the Lord
 be done. * And alter those daies we trusted vp 15
 our sardels, & went vp to Hierusalem. * There 16
 wet with vs also certain of the disciples of Ce-
 sarea, & brought with them one Mnason of Cy-
 prius, an olde disciple, with whome we should
 lodge. * And when we were come to Hierusa- 17
 lem, the brethren receiued vs gladly. * And the 18
 next day Paul went in with vs vnto James, & al-
 the Elders were there assembled. * And when 19
 he had embraced them, hee tolde by order all
 things, that God had wrought among the Gen-
 tiles by his ministratiō. * So when they heard 20
 it, they glorified God, & said vnto him, Thou se-
 est, brother, howe many thousand Iewes there
 are which beleeue, & they are all zealous of the

THE ACTES.

- 21 Law. * Now they are informed of thee, that thou
 teachest all the Jewes which are among the Gi-
 tiles, to forsake Moses, & saiest, that they ought
 not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to keepe
 22 after the customes. * What is then to be done?
 the multitude must needs come together: for
 23 they shall heare that thou art come. * Doe thou
 fore this that we say to thee. We have seene
 24 men, which have made a vow, * Them take, and
 purifie thy selfe with them, & contribute with
 them, that they may shauē their heades: and all
 shal know, that those things, whereof they have
 bene informed concerning thee, are nothing,
 but that thou thy selfe also walkest and keepst
 25 the Law. * For as touching the Gentiles, which
 beleue, we haue written, and determined that
 they observe no such thing, but that they keep
 themselves from things offered to idoles, and
 from blood, and from that that is strangled, &
 26 from fornication. * Then Paul tooke the
 men, and the next day was purified with
 them, and entered into the Temple, desir-
 ing the accomplishment of the daies of the
 purification, untill that an offering should be
 27 offered for every one of them. * And when
 the seven daies were almost ended, the Iewes
 which were of Asia (when they saw him in the
 Temple) moued all the people, and laid hands
 28 on him. * Crying, Men of Israel, helpe: this
 is the man that teacheth all men euery where
 against the people, and the Law, and this place
 moreover, hee hath brought Grecians into the
 Temple.

CHAP. XXI.

Temple, & hath polluted this holy place. * For 19
 they had seene before Trophimus an Ephesian
 with him in the citie, whom they supposed that
 Paul had brought into the Temple. * Then all 30
 the citie was mooued, & the people ran toge-
 ther: & they tooke Paul and drew him out of
 the Temple, & forthwith the doores were shut.
 * But as they went about to kill him, tidings 31
 came vnto the chiefe captaine of the band, that
 all Hierusalem was on an uproare. * Who im- 32
 mediately tooke souldiers & Centurions, & ran
 downe vnto them: & when they saw the chief
 Captaine & the souldiers, they left beating of
 Paul. * Then the chiefe Captaine came nere & 33
 tooke him, & commaunded him to be bounde
 with two chaines, & demanded who he was, &
 what he had done. * And one cryed this, and 34
 ther that, among the people. So when he could
 not knowe the certaintie for the tumult, he com-
 manded him to be led into the castle. * And 35
 when he came vnto the grieces, it was so that
 he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence
 of the people. * For the multitude of the peo- 36
 ple folowed after, crying, Away with him. * And 37
 as Paul should haue bene led into the castle,
 he said vnto the chiefe Captaine, May I speake
 vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou speake greek?
 * Art not thou the Egyptian who before these 38
 dayes raised a sedition, & led out into the wil-
 dernesse foure thousande men that were mur-
 derers? * Then Paul saide, Doubtlesse I am a 39
 man which am a Iewe, & citizen of Tarsus, a fa-

THE ACTES.

40 mous citie of Cilicia, & I beseech thee, suffer me
to speake vnto the people. * And when he had
giuen him licence, Paul stood on the grieces, &
beckened with the hand vnto the people: and
when there was made great silence, he spake
vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

C H A P. XXII.

1 **Y**E men, brethren and Fathers, heare my de-
2 fence now toward you. * (And when they
3 heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to
4 them, they kept the more silence, & he said) * I
5 am verely a man, *which am* a Iewe, borne in
6 Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at
7 the feete of Gamaliel, and instructed according
8 to the perfect maner of the Lawe of the fathers,
9 and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this
day. * And I persecuted this way vnto the
death, binding and delivering into prison both
men & women. * As also the chiefe Priest doeth
beare me witnes, & all the company of the El-
ders: of whom also I receiued letters vnto the
brethren, & went to Damascus to bring them
which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem, that
they might be punished. * And so it was, as I
iourneyed and was come neere vnto Damascus
about noone, that suddenly there shone from
7 heauen a great light round about me. * So I fel
vnto the earth, and heard a voyce saying vnto
8 me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? * Then
I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he saide
to me, I am Iesus of Nazareth, whome thou
9 persecutest. * Moreover they that were with
me,

CHAP. XXII.

indeed a light, & were afraid: but they
 heard not the voyce of him that spake vnto
 me. * Then I said, What shall I do, Lord? And 16
 the Lord said vnto me, Arise, & go into Damas-
 cus: and there it shalbe told thee of all thinges;
 which are appointed for thee to do. * So when 17
 I coulde not see for the glory of that light, I
 was led by the hand of them that were with
 me, & came into Damascus. * And one Anani- 18
 as a godly man, as pertaining to the Lawe, ha-
 ving good report of all the Iewes which dwelt
 there, * Came vnto me, and floode, & said vnto 19
 me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that
 same houre I looked vpon him. * And he said, 20
 The God of our fathers hath appointed thee,
 that thou shouldest know his will, & shouldest
 see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voyce
 of his mouth. * For thou shalt be his witnesse 21
 vnto all men of the thinges which thou hast
 seene and heard. * Nowe therefore why tarest 22
 thou? Arise, & be baptized, and wash away thy
 sinnes, in calling on the Name of the Lorde.
 * And it came to passe, that when I was come 23
 againe to Hierusalem, & prayed in the Temple,
 I was in a trance. * And sawe him, saying vnto 24
 me, Make haste, & get thee quickly out of Hie-
 rusalem: for they will not receiue thy witnesse
 concerning me. * Then I said, Lord, they knowe 25
 that I prisoned, & beat in euery Synagogue the
 that beleued in thee. * And when the blood of 26
 thy martyr Steven was shed, I also stood by, &
 consented vnto his death, & kept the clothes of

THE ACTES.

21 them that slewe him. * Then he said vnto
 Depart: for I will sende thee farre hence vnto
 22 the Gentiles. * And they heard him vnto this
 word, *but* then they lift vp their voyces, & said,
 Away with such a fellowe from the earth: for
 23 it is not meete that he should liue. * And as
 they cryed & cast off their clothes, and threwe
 24 dust into the aire, * The chiefe Captaine com-
 manded him to be led into the castle, & bade
 that he should be scourged, & examined, that
 he might knowe wherefore they cryed so on
 25 him. * And as they bounde him with thongs,
 Paul said vnto the Centurion that stood by, Is
 it lawfull for you to scourge one that is a Ro-
 26 mane, and not condemned? * Nowe when the
 Centurion heard it, he went, and told the chiefe
 27 captaine, saying, Take heed what thou doest for
 this man is a Romane. * Then the chiefe cap-
 28 taine came, and said to him, Tell me, art thou
 Romane? And he said, Yea. * And the chiefe
 captaine answered, With a great summe obtai-
 29 ned I this freedome. Then Paul said, But I was
 so borne. * Then straightway they departed
 from him, which should haue examined him,
 and the chiefe Captaine also was afraid, after he
 knewe that he was a Romane, and that he had
 bound him. * On the next day, because he would
 30 haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was
 accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from his
 bondes, & commanded the hie Priestes and
 their Councill to come together: & he brought
 Paul, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII

And Paul beheld earnestly the Councill, and
 said, Men & brethren, I haue in all good con-
 science serued God vntill this day. * Then the
 high Priest Ananias commaunded them that
 stood by, to smite him on the mouth. * Then
 said Paul to him, God will smite thee, thou
 whitened wall: for thou sittest to iudge me ac-
 cording to the Law, & transgressing the Lawe,
 commaundest thou me to be smitten? * And
 they that stood by, saide, Reuilest thou Gods
 high Priest? * Then said Paul, I knew not, bre-
 thren, that he was the hie Priest? for it is writ-
 ten, Thou shalt not speake euill of the Ruler of
 thy people. * But when Paul perceined that the
 one part were of the Sadduces, & the other of
 the Pharises, he cryed in the Councill, Men
 and brethren, I am a Pharise, the sonne of a Pharise:
 I am accus'd of the hope & resurrection of the
 dead. * And when he had said this, there was a
 division betweene the Pharises & the Saddu-
 ces, so that the multitude was deuided. * For
 the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection,
 neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharises con-
 fesse both. * Then there was a great crye, & the
 Scribes of the Pharises part rose vp, and stood,
 saying, We find none euill in this man: but if a
 spirit or an Angel hath spokē to him, let vs not
 fight against God. * And whē there was a great
 division, the chiefe captaine, feareing lest Paul
 should haue bene pulled in peeces of them, com-
 manded the souldiers to go downe, and to take
 him from among them, and to bring him into
 the

THE ACTES.

- 11 the castle. * Now the night following the Lord stood by him, & said, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Hierusalem,
- 12 so must thou beare witnes also at Rome. * And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an assembly, & bound them selues with a curse, saying, that they would neither eate nor
- 13 drinke, till they had killed Paul. * And they were more then fourtie, which had made this
- 14 conspiracie. * And they came to the chiefe Priestes & Elders, and said, We haue bound our selues with a solemne curse, that we will eate
- 15 nothing, vntill we haue slaine Paul. * Nowe therefore, ye and the Councill signifie to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him foorth vnto you to morowe, as though ye would knowe some thing more perfectly of him, and we, as
- 16 euer he come neere, will be ready to kill him. * But when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying awaite, he went, & entred into the castle,
- 17 & told Paul. * And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, & said, Take this young man hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for he hath
- 18 certaine thing to shew him. * So he tooke him, & brought him to the chiefe captaine, and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, & prayed me to bring this young man vnto thee,
- 19 which hath some thing to say vnto thee. * The chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went apart with him alone, & asked him, What
- 20 hast thou to shewe me? * And he saide, The Iewes haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldst

CHAP. XXIII

wouldest bring forth Paul to morow into the
 Councill, as though they would enquire some-
 what of him more perfectly: *But let them not
 perswade thee: for there lie in waite for him of
 them, more then fourtie men, which haue bound
 them selues with a curse, that they will neither
 eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and
 now are they readie, and waite for thy promes.
 *The chiefe captaine then let the young man
 depart, after he had charged him to vtter it to
 no man, that he had shewed him these thinges.
 *And he called vnto him two certaine Centu-
 rions, saying, Make ready two hundreth souldi-
 ers, that they may go to Cesarea, and horsemen
 three score & ten, & two hundreth with darts,
 at the third houre of the night. *And let them
 make readie an horse, that Paul being set on,
 may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouver-
 nour. *And he wrote an Epistle in this maner:
 *Claudius Lyfias vnto the most noble Go-
 vernour Felix sendeth greeting. *As this man
 was taken of the Iewes, and should haue bene
 killed of them, I came vpon them with the ga-
 rison, & rescued him, perceiuing that he was a
 Romane. *And when I would haue knowen
 the cause, whetfore they accused him, I brought
 him forth into their Councill. *There I per-
 ceined that hee was accused of questions of
 their Lawe, but had no crime worthie of death,
 or of bondes. *And when it was shewed me,
 howe that the Iewes laid waite for the man, I
 sent him straightway to thee, and commanded
 his

THE ACTES.

his accusers to speake before thee the things
that they had against him. Farewell. * Then the
souldiers, as it was commanded them, took
Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.
* And the next day, they left the horsemen to
go with him, & returned vnto the castle. * Now
when they came to Cesarea, they deliuered the
Epistle to the Governour, & presented Paul al-
so vnto him. * So when the Governour had
read it, he asked of what prouince he was: and
when he vnderstood that he was of Cilicia, * I
will heare thee, said he, when thine accusers also
are come, and commaunded him to be kept in
Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

NOWE after five dayes, Ananias the hie Priest
came downe with the Elders, & with Ter-
tullus a certaine oratour. which appeared be-
fore the Governour against Paul. * And when
he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse
him, saying, Seeing that we haue obtained great
quietnesse through thee, & that many worthy
things are done vnto this nation, through thy
prouidence, * We acknowledge it wholly, and
in all places, most noble Felix, with all thanks.
* But that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray
thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy curi-
osities a few wordes. * Certainly we haue found
this man a pestilent fellowe, & a mouer of sedi-
tion among all the Iewes throughout the
worlde, & a chiefe maintainer of the sect of the
Nazarenes: * And hath gone about to pollute

CHAP. XXIII.

the Temple: therefore we tooke him, & would
 haue iudged him according to our Law: * But
 the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and
 with great violence tooke him out of our
 hands, * Commaunding his accusers to come
 to thee: of whome thou mayest (if thou wilt
 inquire) knowe all these things whercof we ac-
 cuse him. * And the Iewes likewise affirmed,
 saying, that it was so. * Then Paul, after that the
 Governour had beckened vnto him that he
 should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly
 answere for my selfe, forasmuch as I know that
 thou hast bene of many yeeres a iudge vnto
 this nation, * Seeing that thou maiest knowe,
 that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp
 to worship in Hierusalem. * And they neither
 found me in the Temple disputing with any
 man, neither making uproare among the peo-
 ple, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the cite.
 * Neither can they proue the things, whercof
 they now accuse me. * But this I confesse vnto
 thee, that after the way (which they call heresie)
 so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing
 all things which are written in the Law & the
 Prophets, * And haue hope towards God that
 the resurrection of the dead, which they them-
 selues looke for also, (shalbe both of iust and vi-
 lous). * And herein I endeavour my selfe to haue
 alway a cleare conscience toward God, and to-
 ward men. * Now after many yeeres, I came &
 brought almes to my nation & offerings. * At
 the same time certain Iewes of Asia found me pu-
 rified

THE ACTES.

18 nified in the Temple, neither with tumult,
 19 nor with tumult. * Who ought to haue bene
 present before thee, and accuse me, if they had
 20 ought against me. * Or let these them selues say,
 21 if they haue founde any vniust thing in me,
 while I stood in the Councill, * Except it befor
 this one voyce, that I cryed standing among
 them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I ac-
 22 cused of you this day. * Nowe when Felix
 heard these thinges, he deferred them, and said,
 When I shall more perfectly knowe the things
 which concerne this way, by the comming of
 Gallus the chiefe Captaine, I wil decide your
 23 matter. * Then he commanded a Centurion to
 keepe Paul, & that he should haue ease, & that
 he should forbid none of his acquaintaunce to vi-
 24 sit him, or to come vnto him. * And after cer-
 taine dayes, came Felix with his wife
 Drusilla, which was a Jewelle, & he called for
 25 Paul, & heard him of the faith in Christ. * And
 when he disputed of iusticesse & temperance,
 & of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled,
 & answered, Goe thy way for this time, & when
 26 I haue conuenient time, I will call for thee.
 He hoped also that money should haue bene
 made of Paul, that he might loose him: where-
 fore he sent for him the oftener, & communed
 27 with him. * When two yeeres were expired,
 Porcius Festus came into Felix roome: & he
 was willing to get saueur of the Jewes, left
 Paul bound.

C H A P. XXV.

When Festus was then come into the pro- 1
 vince, after three dayes he went vp from
 Cesarea vnto Hierusalem. * Then the hie Priest, 2
 and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before
 him against Paul: & they besought him, * And 3
 desired fauour against him, that he would send
 for him to Hierusalem: and they laide waite
 to kill him by the way. * But Festus answered, 4
 that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, & that he
 him selfe would shortly depart *thither*. * Let 5
 them therefore, saide he, which among you are
 able, come downe with vs: and if there be any
 wickednesse in the man, let them accuse him.
 * Nowe when he had taryed among them no 6
 more then ten dayes; he went downe to Cesa-
 rea, & the next day sate in the iudgement seate,
 & commanded Paul to be brought. * And whē 7
 he was come, the Iewes which were come from
 Hierusalem, stood about him, & laid many and
 serious complaints against Paul, whereof they
 could make no plaine prooffe, * Forasmuch as 8
 he answered, that he had neither offended any
 thing against the Lawe of the Iewes, neither a-
 gainst the Temple, nor against Cesar. * Yet Fe- 9
 stus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answe-
 red Paul, & said, Wilt thou goe vp to Hierusa-
 lem, and there be iudged of these things before
 us? * Then said Paul, I stand at Cessars iudge- 10
 ment seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the
 Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well
 knowest. * For if I haue done wrong, or com- 11
 mitted any thing worthy of death, I refuse not

THE ACTES.

to die: but if there be none of these things, whereof they accuse me, no man, to please them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto
22 Cesar. * Then when Festus had spoken with the Comcill, he answered, Hast thou appealed
23 vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe. * And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice
24 came downe to Cesarea to salute Festus. * And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus
declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix,
25 * Of whome when I came to Hierusalem, the hie Priestes and Elders of the Iewes informed me, & desired to haue iudgement against him.
26 * To whom I answered, that it is not the manner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before him, & haue place to defend him selfe, concerning the crime.
27 * Therefore when they were come hither, without delaye the day following I sate on the iudgement seate, & commanded the man to be
28 brought forth. * Against whome when the accusers stood vp, they brought no crime of such
29 things as I supposed: * But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whome Paul
30 affirmed to be aliue. * And because I doubted of such manner of question, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem, and there be
31 iudged of these things. * But because he appealed to be referred to the examination of Augustus,

C H A P. XXVI.

And I commanded him be kept, till I might
 send him to Cesar. * Then Agrippa saide vnto 22
 Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To
 morrow, said he, thou shalt heare him. * And 23
 on the morrow when Agrippa was come and
 Bernice with great pompe, & were entred into
 the Common hall with the chiefe captaines
 and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus comma-
 ndement Paul was brought forth. * And Festus 24
 said, King Agrippa, and all men which are pre-
 sent with vs, ye see this man, about whom all
 the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon
 me, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that
 hee ought not to liue any longer. * Yet haue I 25
 found nothing worthy of death, that hee hath
 committed: reuerthelesse, seeing that he hath
 appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to
 send him. * Of whom I haue no certaine thing 26
 to write vnto my Lorde: wherefore I haue
 brought him forth vnto you, & specially vnto
 thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had,
 I might haue somewhat to write. * For me thin- 27
 keth it vnreasonable to send a prisoner, and not
 to shew the causes which are laide against him.

C H A P. XXVI.

Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art per-
 mitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul first-
 shewed forth the hatred, and answered for himselfe.
 I thinke my selfe happie, King Agrippa, be-
 cause I shall answer this day before thee of all
 the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes.
 Chieffie, because thou hast knowledg of all 3

THE ACTES.

- customes, and questions which are among the
 Iewes: therefore I beseech thee, to heare me pati-
 4 ently. * As touching my life frō my childhood, &
 5 what it was frō the beginning amōg mine own
 nation at Hierusale, know al the Iewes, * Which
 knewe me heretofore, enen from mine elders
 (if they would testifie) that after the most strait
 6 sect of our religion I liued a Pharise. * And now
 I stand and am accused for the hope of the pro-
 7 mes made of God vnto our fathers. * Where-
 to our twelue tribes instantly seruing God day
 and night, hope to come: for the which hope
 sake, O King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.
 8 * Why should it be thought a thing vncredible
 vnto you, that God should raise again the dead?
 9 * I also verely thought in my selfe, that I ought
 to do many contrary things against the Name
 10 of I E S V S of Nazareth. * Which thing I al-
 so did in Hierusalem: for many of the Saints I
 shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie of
 the hie Priests, & when they were put to death,
 11 I gaue my sentence. * And I punished them thro-
 roughout all the Sinagogues, and compelled
 them to blaspheme, & being more mad against
 them, I persecuted them euen vnto strange
 12 cities. * At which time, euen as I went to Da-
 mascus with authoritie, and commission from
 13 the hie Priests, * At midday, O King, I saw in
 the way a light from heauē passing the bright-
 nes of the sunne, shine round about me & then
 14 which went with me. * So when we were all
 fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking

C H A P. XXVL

to me, and laying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul,
 Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is harde for
 thee to kick against pricks. * Then I said, Who
 art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Ieſus whom
 thou persecutest. * But rise and stand vp on thy
 feet: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this
 purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a wit-
 nes, both of the things which thou hast seene,
 & of the things in the which I will appeare vn-
 to thee, * Delivering thee from this people, &
 from the Gentiles, vnto whome now I sende
 thee, * To open their eyes, that they may come
 from darkenes to light, and from the power of
 Satan vnto God, that they may receive forgive-
 nes of finnes, & inheritance among them, which
 are sanctified by faith in me. * Wherefore, King
 Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the hea-
 venly vision, * But shewed first vnto them of
 Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and throughout
 all the coastes of Iudea, & then to the Gentiles,
 that they should repent, and turne to God, and
 doe workes worthy amendment of life. * For
 this cause the Iewes caught me in the Temple,
 and went about to kill me. * Neuerthelesse I
 obtained help of God, and continue vnto this
 day, witnessing both to small and to great, say-
 ing none other things, then those which the
 Prophets and Moses did say should come. * To
 wit, that Christ should suffer, & that he should
 be the first that should rise from the dead, and
 should shew light vnto this people, and to the
 Gentiles. * And as he thus answered for him-
 selfe,

THE ACTES.

selfe, Festus saide with a loud voice, Paul, thou
 art besides thy selfe: much learning doth make
 25 the mad. * But he said, I am not mad, O noble
 Festus, but I speake the words of truth, and so-
 26 berne. * For the King knoweth of these things,
 before whome also I speake boldly: for I am
 perswaded that none of these things are hid fro
 him for this thing was not done in a corner.
 27 * O King Agrippa, beleueest thou the Prophets?
 28 I know that thou beleuest. * Then Agrippa
 said vnto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to
 29 become a Christian. * Then Paul said, I would
 to God that not onely thou, but also all that
 heare me to day, were both almost, and altoge-
 30 ther such as I am, except these bondes. * And
 when he had thus spoken, the King rose vp, and
 the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sit
 31 with them. * And when they were gone apart,
 they talked betweene themselves, saying, This
 man doeth nothing worthy of death, nor of
 32 bondes. * Then saide Agrippa vnto Festus, This
 man might haue bene loosed, if he had not ap-
 pealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 **N**OW when it was concluded, that we should
 saile into Italie, they deliuered both Paul
 and certaine other prisoners vnto a Centurion
 2 named Iulius, of the band of Augustus. * And
 we entred into a shippe of Adramyttium, pro-
 posing to saile by the coastes of Asia, and la-
 ched forth, and had Aristarchus of Macedonia,
 3 a Thessalonian, with vs. * And the next day we

arrived

CHAP. XXVII.

landed at Sidon: and Iulius curteouslie intrea-
 ted Paul, and gaue him libertie to go vnto his
 friends, that they might refresh him. * And from
 thence we lanchted, and sailed hard by Cyprus,
 because the winds were contrarie. * Then sailed
 we ouer the sea by Cilicia, & Paimphylia, & came
 to Myra, a citie in Lycia. * And there the centu-
 rion found a ship of Alexandria, sayling into I-
 talie, & put vs therein. * And when we had sail-
 ed slowly many daies, & scarce were come a-
 gainst Gnidum, because the winde suffered vs
 not, wee sailed hard by Candie, neere to Sal-
 mon: * And with much a doe sailed beyond it,
 and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire
 hauens, neere vnto the which was the citie La-
 tea. * So when much time was spent, & sayling
 was now ieopardous, because also the Fast was
 now past, Paul exhorted *them*, * And said vnto
 them, Syrs, I see that this viage will be with
 hurt & much dammage, not of the lading and
 ship onely, but also of our liues. * Nevertheless
 the Centurion beleeued rather the Gouverneur
 & master of the ship, then those things which
 were spoken of Paul. * And because the haven
 was not commodious to winter in, many took
 counsell to depart thence, if by any meanes
 they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter,
 which is an haven of Candy, & lieth toward the
 Southwest, & by West, and Northwest, and by
 West. * And when the Southerne wind blewe
 softly, they supposing to obtaine their purpose,
 loosed anchor, & sailed by Candie. * But anon

B b, 3.

after

THE ACTES.

after, there arose by it a stormie winde called
 Euroclydon. *And whē the ship was caught, &
 could not resist the wind, we let her go, & were
 caried away. *And we ran vnder a litle yle na-
 med Claudia, & had much a do to get the boord
 *Which they tooke vp & vsed all help, vnder-
 girding the ship, fearing least they should haue
 fallen into Syrtes, and they strake saile, and so
 were caried. *The next day when we were tof-
 sed with an exceeding tempest, they lightened
 the ship. *And the third day we cast out with
 our owne hands the tackling of the ship. *And
 when neither sunne nor starres in many daies
 appeared, & no small tempest lay vp on vs, all
 hope that we should be saued, was then taken
 away. *But after long abstinence, Paul stood
 forth in the middes of them, and said, Sirs, ye
 should haue hearkened to me, & not haue los-
 sed from Caudie: so should ye haue gained this
 hurt and losse. *But now I exhort you to be of
 good courage: for there shalbe no losse of any
 mans life among you, saue of the shippe onely.
 *For there stood by me this night the Angel
 of God, whose I am, & whom I serue, *Saying,
 Feare not, Paul: for thou must be brought be-
 fore Cesar: and loe, God hath giuen vnto thee
 freely all that saile with thee. *Wherefore, sin-
 be of good courage: for I beleue God, that it
 shall be so as it hath bene told me. *Howbeit
 we must be cast into a certaine Iland. *And when
 the fourteenth night was come, as we were
 tied to & fro in the Adriaticall sea about mid-

CHAP. XXVII.

night the shipmen deemed that some countrey
 approached vnto them, * And sounded, & found 28
 it 20. fathoms: and when they had gone a litle
 further, they sounded again, & found 15. fathoms.
 * Then fearing least they should haue falle into 29
 some rough places, they cast 4. ancrs out of the
 sterne, & wished that the day were come. * Now 30
 as the mariners were about to flee out of the
 ship, & had let down the boat into the sea vn-
 der a colour as though they would haue cast
 ancrs out of the foreship, * Paul said vnto the 31
 Centurion & the souldiers, Except these abide
 in the ship, ye can not be safe. * The soldiers 32
 cut off the ropes of the boat, & let it fall away.
 * And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted 33
 them all to take meate, saying, This is the four-
 tenth day that ye haue taried, & continued fa-
 sting, receiuing nothing: * Wherefore I exhort 34
 you to take meate: for this is for your safegard:
 for there shal not an haire fall from the head of
 any of you. * And when he had thus spoken, he 35
 took bread, & gaue thanks to God, in presence
 of them all, & brake it, & began to eate. * Then 36
 were they al of good courage, & they also took
 meate. * Now we were in the ship in al two hun- 37
 deth three score & sixteen soules. * And when 38
 they had eaten ynough, they lightned the ship,
 & cast out the wheat into the sea. * And when it 39
 was day, they knew not the countrey, but they
 spied a certain creek with a bāk, into the which
 they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust
 in the ship. * So when they had taken vp the an- 40

THE ACTES.

11 enes, they committed *the ship* vnto the sea, and
 loosed the rudder bonds, & hoised vp the main
 12 saile to the winde, & drew to the shore. * And
 when they fel into a place, where two seas meet,
 they thru't in the ship: & the forepart stuck fast,
 & could not be mooued, but the hinder parte
 was broken with the violence of the waues,
 13 * Then the souldiers counsel was to kil the pri-
 soners, lest any of them, when he had swomme
 14 out, should flee away. * But the Centurion wil-
 ling to saue Paul, staid them from *this* counsel,
 & commaunded that they that could swimme,
 should cast themselves first into the sea, and go
 15 out to land: * And the other, some on boardes,
 & some on certaine *pieces* of the ship: and so it
 came to passe that they came all safe to land.

C H A P. XXVIII.

A ND when they were come safe, then they
 knew that the yle was called Melita. * And
 the Barbarians shewed vs no litle kindnes: for
 they kindled a fire, & receiued vs every one, be-
 cause of the present showre, & because of the
 cold. * And when Paul had gathered a number
 of stickes, & laid them on the fire, there came
 a viper out of the heate, & leapt on his hand.
 * Now when the Barbarians sawe the worme
 hang on his hand they said among themselves,
 This man surely is a murtherer, whom, though
 he hath escap'd the sea, yet Vengeance hath not
 suffered to liue. * But he shooke off the worme
 into the fire, & felt no harme. * Howbeit they
 waited when he should haue swolne, or fallen
 downe

CHAP. XXVIII.

down dead suddenly: but after they had looked
a great while, & saw no inconuenience come to
him, they changed their mindes & said, That he
was a God. *In the same quarters, the chiefe mā
of the yle (whose name was Publius) had pos-
sessions: the same receiued vs, & lodged vs three
daies courteously. *And so it was, that the fa-
ther of Publius lay sicke of the feuer, and of a
bloody fluxe: to whom Paul entred in, & when
he prayed, he layed *his* handes on him, & healed
him. *When this then was done, other also in
the yle, which had diseases, came to him and
were healed, *Which also did vs great honour:
& when we departed, they laded vs with things
necessary. *Now after three moneths we depart-
ed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered
in the yle, whose badge was Castor & Pollux.
*And when we arrived at Syracuse, we taried
there 3. dayes. *And frō thence we fet a cōpasse,
& came to Rhegium: & after one day, the South
winde blew, & the second day we came to Pu-
toli. *Where we found brethren, & were de-
sired to tarie with them 7. daies, & so we went
toward Rome. *And frō thence, when the bre-
thren heard of vs, they came to meet vs at the
Market of Appius, & at the three turnes, whom
when Paul saw, he thanked God, & waxed bold.
*So when we came to Rome, the Centurio de-
livered the prisoners to the generall captaine:
but Paul was suffered to dwel by himselfe with
a souldier that kept him. *And the third day af-
ter Paul called the chiefe of the lawyers together

THE ACTES.

and when they were come, he said vnto them,
 Men & brethren, though I haue committed so-
 thing against the people, or lawes of the fa-
 thers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusa-
 lem into the handes of the Romanes. * Who
 when they had examined me, would haue let
 me go because there was no cause of death in
 me. * But when the Iewes spake contrary, I was
 constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not because
 I had ought to accuse my nation of. * For this
 cause therefore haue I called for you, to see you,
 and to speake with you for that hope of Israels
 sake, I am bound with this chaine. * Then they
 said vnto him, We neither receiued letters out
 of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of
 the brethren that shewed or spake any euill of
 thee. * But we wil heare of thee what thou thin-
 kest: for as concerning this sect, we know that
 euery where it is spoken against. * And when
 they had appointed him a day, there came ma-
 ny vnto him into his lodging, to whom he ex-
 pounded & testified the kingdome of God, &
 perswading them those things that concerne
 Iesus, both out of the lawe of Moses, & out of
 the Prophets, from morning to night. * And
 some were perswaded with the things which
 were spoken, & some beleeued not. * Therefore
 when they agreed not among themselves, they
 departed, after that Paul had spoken one word,
 I will, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias
 the Prophet vnto our Fathers, * Saying, Goe
 vnto this people, and say, By hearing you
 shall

C H A P. I.

shall heare, & shall not vnderstand, & seeing ye
 shall see, & not perceine. *For the heart of this
 people is waxed fatte, & their eares are dull of
 hearing, & with their eies haue they winked, lest
 they should see with *their* eyes, and heare with
their eares, & vnderstand with *their* hearts, and
 should returne that I might heale them. *Be it
 knowne therefore vnto you, that this saluation
 of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shall
 heare it. * And when he had said these things,
 the Iewes departed, and had reasoning among
 themselves. *And Paul remained two yerres full
 in an house hired for himselfe, & receiued al that
 came in vnto him, * Preaching the kingdome
 of God, and teaching those things, which con-
 cernethe Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldnesse
 of speech, without let.

THE EPISTLE OF the Apostle Paul to the *Romans.*

C H A P. I.

PAUL a seruant of I E S V S
 CHRIST, called *to be* an Apo-
 stle, put apart *to preach* the Gos-
 pel of God, *(Which he had pro-
 mised afore by his Prophets in
 the holy Scriptures.) * Concerning his Sonne
 Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the
 seed of Dauid, according to the flesh, *And de-
 clared mightilie *to be* the Sonne of God, touch-
 ing the Spirit of sanctification by the resurrecti-
 on of the dead.) *By whome we haue receiued
 grace

TO THE ROMANES.

grace & Apottleſhip (that obedience might be
 giuen vnto the faith) for his name among all the
 Gentiles,* Among whom ye be alſo the called
 of Ieſus Chriſt: * To all *you* that be at Rome be-
 loued of God, called *to be* Saints: Grace be with
 you, & peace from God our Father, & *from* the
 Lord Ieſus Chriſt. * Firſt I thanke my God thro-
 rough Ieſus Chriſt for you all, becauſe your
 faith is publiſhed throughout the whole world.
 * For God is my witneſs, (whome I ſerue in my
 ſpirit in the Goſpel of his Sonne) that without
 ceaſing I make mention of you, * Alwaies in
 my prayers, beſeeching that by ſome meanes,
 one time or other, I might haue a prosperous
 iourney, by the wil of God, to come vnto you.
 * For I long to ſee you, that I might beſtow a-
 mong you ſome ſpirituall gift, that you might
 be ſtrengthened: * That is, that I might be com-
 forted together with you, through *our* mutuall
 faith, both yours & mine. * Now my brethren, I
 would that ye ſhould not be ignorant, how that
 I haue oftentimes purpoſed to come vnto you,
 (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue
 ſome fruit alſo among you, as *I haue* among
 the other Gentiles. * I am detter both to the
 Grecians, & to the Barbarians, both to the wiſe
 men & vnto the vnwiſe. * Therefore, as much as
 in me is, I am readie to preach the Goſpel to
 you alſo that are at Rome. * For I am not aſha-
 med of the Goſpel of Chriſt: for it is the power
 of God vnto ſaluation to euery one that bele-
 ueth, to the Iew firſt, & alſo to the Grecia. * For

C H A P. I.

by it the righteousness of God is revealed from
 faith to faith: as it is written, The iust shall live
 by faith. * For the wrath of God is revealed frō
 heauen against all vngodlinesse, & vnrighteous-
 nes of men, which withhold the truth in vn-
 righteousness, * Forasmuch as that, which may
 be knowen of God, is manifest in them: for god
 hath shewed it vnto them. * For the inuisible
 things of him, that is, his eternal power & God-
 head, are seene by the creation of the world, be-
 ing considered in *his* workes, to the intent that
 they should be without excuse: * Because that
 when they knew God, they glorified him not as
 God, neither were thankful, but became vain in
 their thoughts, & their foolish heart was full of
 darknes. * When they professed theselues to be
 wise, they became fooles. * For they turned the
 glory of the incorruptible god to the similitude
 of the image of a corruptible man, & of birds,
 & foure footed beasts, and of creeping things.
 * Wherefore also God gaue them vp to their
 heartes lustes, vnto vncleannes, to defile their
 owne hodies betweene theselues. * Which tur-
 ned the truth of God vnto a lie, & worshipped
 and serued the creature, forsaking the Creator,
 which is blessed for euer, Amen. * For this cause
 God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euē
 their women did chaunge the naturall vse into
 that which is against nature. * And likewise also
 the men left the natural vse of the woman, and
 turned in their lust one toward another, & mā
 with man wrought filthines, & receiued in the-
 selues

TO THE ROMANES

felues such recōpēre of their error, as was said.
 28 * For as they regarded not to acknowledge
 God, *men so* God deliuered them vp vnto a re-
 probate minde, to doe those things which are
 29 not conuenient, * Being full of all vnrightheous-
 nes, fornication, wickednes, couetousnes, maliti-
 ousnes, full of enuie, of murder, of debate, of de-
 ceit, taking all things in the euill part, whisper-
 30 ers, * Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong,
 proude, boasters, inventers of euil things, disobe-
 dient to parents, without vnderstanding, con-
 nant breakers, without natural affection, such as
 31 can neuer be appeased, mercilesse. * Which me,
 though they knew the Law of God, how that
 they which commit such things, are worthy of
 death. yet not onely do the same, but also sūcti-
 the that do the. CHAP. II.

1 **T** Herefore thou art inexcusable, O man, who-
 soeuer thou art that condemnest: for in that
 that thou condemnest another, thou condemnest
 thy selfe: for thou that condemnest, doest the
 2 same things. * But we knew that the iudgement
 of God is according to truth, against the which
 3 we commit such things. * And thinkest thou this, O
 thou man, that condemnest them which do such
 things, & doest the same, that thou shalt escape
 4 the iudgement of God? * Or despisest thou the
 riches of his bountifullnes, & patience, and long
 5 sufferance, not knowing that the bountifullnes
 of God leadeth thee to repentance? * But thou
 alter thine hardnes, & heart that cannot re-
 pe, heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe with-
 gain

C H A P. II.

against the day of wrath, & of the declaration of
 the iust iudgement of God, * Who will reward
 euery man according to his workes: * *That is, to*
 the which through patience in wel doing, seeke
 glorie, & honour, and immortalitie, euertlasting
 life: * But vnto them that are contentious & dis-
 obey the trueth, & obey vnrighteousnes, *shalbe*
 indignation & wrath. * Tribulation & anguish
shalbe vpon the soule of euery man that doeth
 euill: of the Iewe first, & *also* of the Grecian. * But
 to euery man that doeth good, *shalbe* glorie, &
 honour, & peace, to the Iewe first, & *also* to the
 Grecian. * For there is no respect of persons
 with God. * For as many as haue sinned with-
 out the Law, shall perish also without the Law
 and as many as haue sinned in the Law, shall be
 iudged by the Lawe, * (For the hearers of the
 Lawe are not righteous before God: but the
 doers of the Lawe shall be iustified. * For
 when the Gentiles which haue not the Law, do
 by nature the things *contained* in the Law, they
 haue not the Law, are a Law vnto themselves,
 * Which shew the effect of the Law written in
 their hearts, their conscience also bearing wit-
 nes, & their thoughts accusing one another, or
 excusing.) * At the day whē God shall iudge the
 secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my
 Gospel. * Behold, thou art called a Iewe, & restest
 in the Law, & gloriest in God. * And knowest
 his will, & triest the things that dissent from
 it: that thou art instructed by the Law: * And
 persuadedst thy selfe that thou art a guide of

TO THE ROMANES.

- the blind, a light of them which *are* in darkness.
- 20 * An instructor of them which lacke discretion, a teacher of the vnlearned, which haue the forme of knowledge, & of truth in the Law.
- 21 * Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest, a man should not steale, dost thou steale? * Thou that saiest, A man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorrest idoles, committest thou sacriledge? * Thou that gloriest in the Law, through breaking the Law, dishonourest thou God? * For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written. * For circumcision verely is profitable, if thou doe the Law: but if thou be a transgressor of the Law, thy circumcision is made vncircumcision. * Therefore if the vncircumcisiō keep the ordinances of the Law, shall not his vncircumcisiō be counted for circumcision? * And shall not vncircumcisiō which is by nature (if it keepe the Law) condēne him which by the letter & circumcision *are* a transgressor of the Law? * For he is not a Jew, which is one outward: neither is that circūcisiō, which is outward in the flesh. * But hee is a Jew which is one within, and the circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit, not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

C H A P. I I I.

- 1 **W**Hat is then the preferment of the Jew? what is the profite of circumcision? * Marvellous manner of way: for chiefly, because

CHAP. IIL

them were of credit committed the oracles of
 God. * For what though some did not beleue? 3
 shal their vnbeliefe make the faith of god with-
 out effect? * God forbid: yea, let God be true, & 4
 every man a lyar, as it is written, That thou
 mightest be iustified in thy words. & ouercome,
 when thou art iudged. * Now if our vnrighte- 5
 onnes cōmēd the righteousness of god. what shal
 we say? Is God vnrighteous which punisheth?
 (I speak as a mā.) * God forbid: els how shal god 6
 iudge the world? * For if the verity of God hath 7
 more abounded through my lie vnto his glorie,
 why am I yet cōdēned as a sinner? * And (as we 8
 are blamed, & as some affirme that we say) why
 doe we not euill, that good may come thereof?
 whose damnation is iust. * What then? are we 9
 more excellent? No, in no wise: for we haue
 already proued, that all, both Iewes & Gen-
 tiles are vnder sinne. * As it is written, There is 10
 none righteous, no not one. * There is none that 11
 vnderstandeth: there is none that seeketh God.
 * They haue all gone out of the way: they haue 12
 bin made altogether vnprofitable: there is none
 that doth good, no not one. * Their throte is an 13
 open sepulchre: they haue vsed their tongues to
 deuite: the poyson of aspes is vnder their lips.
 * Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitter- 14
 ness. * Their feete are swift to shedde blood. 15
 * Destruction and calamitie are in their waies, 16
 And the way of peace they haue not known 17
 * The feare of God is not before their eyes. 18
 * Nowe wee knowe that whatsoever the Law 19

TO THE ROMANES

- saith, it saith it to the which are vnder the Law,
that euery mouth may be stopped, and all the
worlde be subiect to the iudgement of God.
- 20 * Therefore by the workes of the Law shall no
flesh be iustified in his sight: for by the law com-
meth the knowledge of sinne. * But now is the
righteousnes of God made manifest without
the Law, hauing witnes of the Law and of the
21 Prophets, * To wit, the righteousnes of God by
the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all
22 that beleue. * For there is no difference for all
haue sinned, & are deprived of the glory of god.
23 * And are iustified freely by his grace, through
24 the redemption that is in Christ Iesus, * When
god hath set forth to be a reconciliatio through
faith in his blood to declare his righteousnes,
by the forgiveness of the sinnes that are past,
25 * Through the patience of God, to shew at the
time his righteousnes, that he might be iust, &
a iustifier of him which is of the faith of Iesu.
26 * Where is then the reioicing? It is ex-
ceeded: By what Law? of works? Nay, but by the
27 Law of faith. * Therefore we conclude, that
man is iustified by faith without the workes of
28 the Law. * God, is hee the God of the Iewes
onely, & not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euen of
29 the Gentiles also. * For it is one God who shal
iustifie circumcision of faith, and vncircumci-
30 on through faith. * Doe we then make the law
of none effect through faith? God forbid: for
we establish the Law.

CHAP. IIII.

What shall wee say then, that Abraham our
 father hath sounde concerning the flesh?
 For if Abraham were iustified by works, he hath
 wherein to reioyce, but not with God. * For
 what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleued
 God, & it was counted to him for righteousness.
 * Now to him that worketh, the wages is not
 counted by fauour, but by dette: * But to him
 that worketh not, but beleueth in him that iu-
 stifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for
 righteousness. * Euē as Dauid declareth the bles-
 sines of the man, vnto whome God imputeth
 righteousness without works, saying, * Blessed are
 they, whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose
 sinnes are couered. * Blessed is the man, to whom
 the Lord imputeth not sinne, * *Come* this bles-
 sines then vpon the circumcision *only*, or vpon
 the vncircumcision also? For we say, that faith
 was imputed to Abraham for righteousness.
 * How was it then imputed? when he was cir-
 cumcised, or vncircumcised? not when hee was
 circumcised but when hee was vncircumcised.
 * After he receiued the signe of circūcisiō, in the
 state of the righteousness of the faith which he
 had whē he was vncircūcised that he should be
 the father of all the that beleue, not being cir-
 cumcised, that righteousness might be imputed to
 the also. * And the father of circūcisiō, not vnto
 the only which are of the circūcisiō, but vnto
 them also that walke in the steps of the faith of
 our father Abraham, *which he had* when hee
 was vncircumcised. * For the promise, that hee
 should

TO THE ROMANES.

should be the heire of the world, was not given
 to Abraham or to his seede, through the Law,
 14 but through the righteousness of faith. * For if
 they which are of the Lawe, be heires, faith is
 made voide, & the promise is made of none ef-
 15 fect. * For the Law causeth wrath: for where no
 16 Law is, there is no transgression. * Therefore it
 is by faith, that *it might come* by grace, and the
 promise might be sure to all the seede, not to
 that onely which is of the Law: but also to that
 which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the fa-
 17 ther of vs all, * (As it is writtē, I haue made thee
 a father of many nations) *euē* before God, who
 he beleeued, who quickneth the dead & calleth
 those things which be not, as though they were.
 18 * Which *Abraham* aboue hope, beleued vnder
 hope, that he should be the father of many na-
 19 ons: according to that which was spokē to him,
 So shall thy seede be. * And he not weak in the
 faith, considered not his owne body, which was
 20 now deade, beeing almost an hundreth yeres
 old, neither the deadnes of Saras womb. * Nei-
 ther did he doubt of the promise of God thro-
 21 rough vnbeliefe, but was strengthened in the
 faith, & gaue glory to God, * Being fully assured
 that he which had promised, was also able to
 22 doe it. * And therefore it was imputed to him,
 23 for righteousness, * Now it is not written for
 him onely, that it was imputed to him for
 24 righteousness, * But also for vs, to whom it shal
 be imputed for *righteousnes*, which beleue in
 him that raised vp Iesus our Lord frō the dead.
 * Wh

C H A P. V.

Who was deliuered to death for our finnes, 25
and is risen againe for our iustification.

C H A P. V.

Then being iustified by faith, we haue peace 1
toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ.
* By whome also through faith, we haue had 2
this accessse into this grace, wherein we stand, &
reioyce vnder the hope of the glorie of God.
* Neither *that* only, but also we reioyce in tri- 3
bulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth
forth patience, * And patience experience, and 4
experience hope, * And hope maketh not asha- 5
med, because the loue of God is shed in our
hearts by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto
vs. * For Christ, whē we were yet of no strength, 6
at his time dyed for the vngodly. * Doubtlesse, 7
we will scarce die for a righteous man: but
yet for a good mā it may be that one dare die.
* But God setteth out his loue toward vs, see- 8
ing that while we were yet sinners Christ died
for vs. * Much more then, being now iustified 9
by his blood, we shall bee saved from wrath
through him. * For if when we were enemies, 10
we were reconciled to God by the death of
his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we
shall be saved by his life, * And not onely so, but 11
we also reioyce in God through our Lorde Ie-
sus Christ, by whom we haue now receiued the
monement. * Wherefore, as by one man sinne 12
entered into the world, & death by sinne, and so
death went ouer al men: forasmuch as all men
haue sinned. * For vnto the time of the Lawe 13

TO THE ROMANES.

- was sinne in the worlde, but sinne is not imputed, while there is no Law. * But death reigned from Adam to Moles, euen ouer them also that sinned not after the like manner of the transgression of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come. * But yet the gift is not so, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.
- 34 * Neither is the gift so, as that which entered in by one that sinned: for the fault came of one offence vnto condemnation: but the gift is of many offences to iustification. * For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more shall they which receiue that abundance of grace, & of that gift of that righteousness, reigne in life through one, that is, Iesus Christ. * Likewise then as by the offence of one, the fault came on all men to condemnation, so by the iustifying of one, the benefit abounded vnto ward all men to the iustification of life. * For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many also be made righteous. * Moreover the Law entred thereupon that the offence should abound: neuertheless, where sinne abounded, there grace abounded much more: * That is sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousness vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

C H A P.

CHAP. VI

What shall we say then? Shall we continue
 still in sinne, that grace may abound? God
 forbid. * Howe shall we, that are dead to sinne,
 live yet therein? * Knowe ye not, that all we
 which haue bene baptized into Iesus Christ,
 haue bene baptized into his death? * We are
 buried then with him by baptisme into his
 death, that like as Christ was raised vp from
 the dead to the glorie of the Father, so we also
 should walke in newnes of life. * For if we be
 plated with him to the similitude of his death,
 even so shall we be *to the similitude* of his resur-
 rection, * Knowing this, that our olde man is
 crucified with him, that the body of sinne
 might be destroyed, that henceforth we should
 not serue sinne. * For he that is dead, is freed
 from sinne. * Wherefore, if we be dead with
 Christ, we belecue that we shall line also with
 him, * Knowing that Christ being raised from
 the dead, dieth no more: death hath no more
 dominion over him. * For in that he dyed, he
 died once to sinne: but in that he liueth, he li-
 ueth to God. * Likewise thinke ye also, that ye
 are dead to sinne, but are alieue to God in Iesus
 Christ our Lorde. * Let not sinne raigne there-
 fore in your mortall bodie, that ye should obey
 it in the lustes thereof. * Neither giue ye your
 members *as* weapons of vnrighteousnesse vnto
 sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they
 that are alieue from the dead, & *giue* your mem-
 bers *as* weapons of righteousness vnto God.
 * For sinne shal not haue dominion over you:

TO THE ROMANES.

- for ye are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.
- 15 * What then,shal we sinne,because we are
vnder the Lawe, but vnder grace? God forbid.
- 16 * Knowe ye not, that to whomsoever ye
your selues as seruants to obey, his seruants
are to whome ye obey, whether it be of sinne
vnto death,or of obedience vnto righteousness.
- 17 * But God be thanked, that ye haue bene
seruants of sinne, but ye haue obeyed from the
heart vnto the forme of the doctrine,whereunto
to ye were deliuered. * Being then made free
from sinne, ye are made the seruants of righte-
ousnesse. * I speake after the manner of man, be-
cause of the infirmitie of your flesh: for ye
haue giuen your members seruants to vnclean-
nesse,& to iniquitie,to *common* iniquitie, so now
giue your members seruants vnto righteousness
in holinesse. * For when ye were the seruants
of sinne,ye were freed from righteousness. * What
fruite had ye then in those thinges, whereof
ye are now ashamed? For the end of those thinges
is death. * But now being freed from sinne, and
made seruants vnto God,ye haue your fruite in
holinesse,and the end,eueralasting life. * For the
wages of sinne is death: but the gift of Gods
eternall life,through Iesus Christ our Lord.

C H A P. VII.

NOW ye not,brethren. (for I speake to them
that know the Law) that the Law hath do-
minion ouer a man as long as he liueth? * For
the woman which is in subiection to a man,
is bound by the Law to the man,while he liueth

C H A P. VII.

1 If the man be dead, she is deliuered from
 the Law of the man. * So then, if while the man
 2 liue, she take another man, she shalbe called
 adulteresse: but if the man be dead, she is free
 from the Law, so that she is not an adulteresse,
 though she take another man. * So ye, my bre-
 3 thren, are dead also to the Lawe by the body of
 Christ, that ye should be vnto another *euen vn-*
 4 *to him* that is raised vp from the dead, that we
 should bring forth fruit vnto God. * For when
 5 we were in the flesh, the affections of sinne,
 which were by the Law, had force in our mem-
 6 bers, to bring forth fruit vnto death. * But now
 we are deliuered from the Lawe, he being dead
 from whom we were holden, that we should serue
 7 in newnes of Spirit, & not in the oldnes of the
 letter. * What shall we say then? *Js* the Lawe
 8 sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knewe not sinne, but
 by the Law: for I had not knowen lust, except
 the Lawe had tolde, Thou shalt not lust. * But
 9 sinne tooke an occasion by the cōmandement,
 & brought in me all maner of concupiscence:
 10 for without the Law sinne is dead. * For I once
 was alive, without the Law: but when the com-
 mandement came, sinne reuiued, * But I died: &
 11 the same commandement which was *ordained*
 vnto life, was found to be vnto me vnto death.
 12 * For sinne tooke occasion by the commande-
 ment, and deceiued me, and thereby slewe me.
 13 * Wherefore the Law is holy, & that comman-
 14 dement is holy, & iust, & good. * Was that then
 good, made death vnto me? God for-
 bids

TO THE ROMANES.

bid: but sinne, that it might appeare faste
 wrought death in me by that which is good,
 that sinne might be out of measure sinfull by
 24 the commandement. * For we knowe that the
 Lawe is spirituall, but I am carnall, solde vnder
 25 sinne. * For I allowe not that which I do: for
 what I would, that doe I not: but what I hate,
 26 that doe I. * If I doe then that which I would
 27 not, I consent to the law, that *it is* good. * Now
 then, it is no more I, that doe it, but sinne that
 28 dwelleth in me. * For I knowe that in me, that
 is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to
 will is present with me: but I find no means
 29 to performe that which is good. * For I doe
 not the good thing, which I would, but the euill
 30 which I would not, that do I. * Nowe if I doe
 that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but
 31 the sinne that dwelleth in me. * I find then that
 when I would do good, I am thus yoked, that
 32 euill is present with me. * For I delight in the
 33 Law of God, concerning the inner man: * But
 I see another Law in my members, rebelling
 against the Law of my mind, & leading me cap-
 tive vnto the Lawe of sinne, which is in my
 34 members. * O wretched man, that I am, who
 shall deliuer me from the body of this death
 35 * I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord.
 Then I my selfe in my minde serue the Lawe of
 God, but in my flesh the Law of sinne.

C H A P. VIII.

1 **N**OW then there is no cōdemnation to them
 that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not

CHAP. VIII.

the flesh, but after the Spirit. * For the Law
 of the Spirit of life, which is in Christ Iesus, hath
 freed me from the Lawe of sinne & of death.
 * For (that that was impossible to the Lawe, in
 as much as it was weake, because of the flesh)
 God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude
 of sinfull flesh, & for sinne, condemned sinne in
 the flesh, * That that righteousness of the Lawe
 might be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after
 the flesh, but after the Spirit. * For they that are
 after the flesh, saour the things of the flesh: but
 they that are after the Spirit, the things of the
 Spirit. * For the wisdom of the flesh is death:
 but the wisdom of the Spirit is life and peace,
 because the wisdom of the flesh is enimitie
 against God: for it is not subiect to the Law of
 God, neither indeede can be. * So then they
 that are in the flesh, can not please God. * Now
 we are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because
 the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any
 man hath not the Spirit of Christ, the same is
 not his. * And if Christ be in you, the body is
 dead because of sinne: but the Spirit is life for
 righteousness sake. * But if the Spirit of him
 that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwel in you,
 he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall al-
 so quicken your mortall bodyes, by his spirit
 that dwelleth in you. * Therefore brethren, we
 are debtors not to the flesh, to liue after the
 flesh: * For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die:
 but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by
 the Spirit, ye shall liue. * For as many as are led
 by

TO THE ROMANES.

by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes
 25 God. * For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of
 bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued
 the Spirit of adoption, whereby we crie Abba
 26 Father. * The same Spirit beareth witnesse with
 27 our Spirit, that we are the children of God. *
 we be children, we are also heires, euen the
 heires of God, & heires annexed with Christ
 so be that we suffer with him, that we may
 28 be glorified with him. * For I count that the
 afflictions of this present time are not worthy
 of the glorie, which shalbe shewed vnto
 29 * For the seruent desire of the creature waiteth
 when the sonnes of God shall be reuel-
 30 led, * Because the creature is subiect to vanitie,
 not of it owne will, but by reason of him, who
 31 hath subdued it vnder hope, * Because the crea-
 ture also shall be deliuered from the bondage
 of corruption into the glorious libertie of the
 32 sonnes of God. * For we know that euery crea-
 ture groaneth with vs also, & travaileth in paine
 33 together vnto this present. * And not only the
 creature, but we also which haue the first fruits
 of the Spirite, euen we doe sigh in our selves,
 waiting for the adoption, euen the redemption
 34 of our bodie. * For we are saved by hope: but
 hope that is seene, is no hope: for howe can
 35 man hope for that which he seeth? * But if we
 hope for that we see not, we doe with patience
 36 abide for it. * Likewise the Spirit also helpe-
 our infirmities, for we knowe not what to pray
 as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh

CHAP. VIII.

27 *quest for vs with sighes, which can not be ex-*
*pressed. *But he that searcheth the hearts, know-*
 28 *eth what is the meaning of the Spirite: for he*
maketh request for the Saintes, according to
*the will of God. *Also we know that all things*
 29 *work together for the best vnto them that*
loue God, euen to them that are called of his
*purpose. *For those which he knewe before, he*
 30 *also predestinate to be made like to the image*
of his Sonne, that he might be the first borne
 31 *among many brethren. *Moreouer whome he*
predestinate, them also he called, and whom he
 32 *called them also he iustified, & whom he iustifi-*
 33 *ed them he also glorified. *What shall we then*
 34 *say to these things? If God be on our side, who*
 35 *shall be against vs? *Who spared not his owne*
 36 *sonne, but gaue him for vs all to death, howe*
 37 *shall he not with him, giue vs all things also?*
 38 *Who shall lay any thing to the charge of*
 39 *Gods chosen? it is God that iustificeth, *Who*
 40 *shall condemne? it is Christ which is dead, yea*
 41 *rather, which is risen againe, who is also at*
 42 *the right hand of God, and maketh request also*
 43 *for vs. *Who shall separate vs from the loue*
 44 *of Christ? shall tribulation, or anguish, or perse-*
 45 *cution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or*
 46 *sword? *As it is written, For thy sake are we*
 47 *counted all day long: we are counted as sheepe*
 48 *for the slaughter. *Neuerthelesse, in all things*
 49 *we are more then conquerours through him*
 50 *that loued vs. *For I am perswaded that nei-*
 51 *ther death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities*
 52 *nor*

TO THE ROMANES.

nor powers, nor thinges present, nor thinges
 39 come, * Nor height, nor deapth, nor any other
 creature shalbe able to separate vs fro the
 of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

C H A P. I X.

1 I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my con-
 science bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,
 2 * That I haue great heauinesse, & continuall
 3 row in mine heart. * For I would wish my self
 to be separate from Christ, for my brethren
 4 are my kinsmen according to the flesh, * Which
 are the Iudaues, to whom *pertaineth* the ad-
 option, & the glorie, & the covenants, & the gift
 of the Law, and the seruice of God, and the pro-
 5 mises. * Of whome *are* the fathers, & of whom
 concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is
 6 ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen. * Notwith-
 standing it cannot be that the word of God should
 take none effect: for all they are not Iudaues,
 7 which are of Israel: * Neither *are they* all
 8 children, because they are the seede of Abraham
 but, In Isaac shall thy seede be called: * That is,
 they which are the children of the flesh, are not
 the children of God: but the children of the
 9 promises, are counted for the seede. * For thus
 a worde of promises, In this same time will
 10 come, and Sara shall haue a sonne. * Neither
 only *is this*, but also Rebecca when she had
 11 conceived by one, *even* by our father Isaac. * For
 yet *the children* were borne and when they had
 neither done good nor euill (that the purpose
 of God might remaine according to election)

CHAP. IX.

me by works, but by him that calleth) *It was 12
said vnto her, The elder shall serue the yonger.
*As it is written, I haue loned Iacob, and haue 13
hated Esau. *What shall we say then? Is there 14
vnrightheousnes with God: God forbid. *For he 15
saith to Moses, I will haue mercie on him, to
whom I will shew mercie: & wil haue compas- 16
sion him, on whom I wil haue compassion. *So 17
he is not in him that willeth, nor in him that
runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie. * For
the Scripture saith vnto Pharao, For this same
purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might
shew my power in thee, & that my name might
be declared throughout all the earth. *Therefore 18
hath mercy on whō he wil, & whom he wil,
he hardeneth. *Thou wilt say then vnto me, 19
Why doeth he yet complaine? for who hath
 resisted his wil? *But, O man, who art thou that 20
redest against God? shal the thing formed say
to him that formed it, Why hast thou made
me thus? *Hath not the potter power of the clay 21
to make of the same lump one vessel to honor,
& another vnto dishonour? *What & if God 22
would, to shew his wrath, & to make his pow-
er known, suffer with long patience the vessels
of wrath, prepared to destruction? *And that 23
he might declare the riches of his glorie vpon
the vessels of mercie, which he hath prepared
vnto glorie? *Euen vs, whome he hath called, 24
out of the sewes only, but also of the Gentiles,
*As he saith also in Osee, I will call them, My 25
people, which were not my people: & her, Be-
loved.

TO THE ROMANES.

- 26 loved, which was not beloved. * And it shall be in the place where it was said vnto them, Ye are not my people, that there they shall be called, The children of the living God. * Also Esaias crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, yet shall *but* a remnant be saved.
- 28 * For he will make his accompt, and gather it into a short summe with righteousness: for the Lord will make a short count in the ear.
- 29 * And as Esaias saide before, Except the Lord of hostes had left vs a seede, wee had bene as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrah.
- 30 * What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousness, have attained vnto righteousness, euen the righteousness which is of faith. * But Israel which followed the Law of righteousness, could not attaine to the Law of righteousness. * Wherefore? Because *they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the Law: for they have stumbled at the stumbling stone,* * As it is written, Behold, I lay in a Sion a stumbling stone, and a rocke to make men fall: and every one that belieueth in him, shall not be ashamed.

C H A P. X.

- 1 **B**rethren mine heartes desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.
- 2 * For I beare them recorde, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.
- 3 * For they, being ignorant of the righteousness of God, and going about to stablish their own

CHAP. X.

righteousnes, haue not submitted themselves to
 the righteousnes of God. * For Christ is the end
 of the Lawe for righteousnes vnto euery one
 that beleueth. * For Moses thus describeth the
 righteousnes which is of the Lawe, That the
 man which doth these things, shal liue thereby.
 But the righteousnes which is of faith, speaketh
 on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall
 ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ frō
 above) * Or, who shall descend into the deepe?
 (that is to bring Christ againe from the dead.)
 But what saith it? The word is nere thee, *euē*
 in thy mouth. & in thine heart This is the word
 of faith which we preach. * For if thou shalt co-
 fesse with thy mouth the Lord Iesus, and shalt
 beleeue in thine heart, that God raised him vp
 from the dead, thou shalt be saued: * For with
 the heart man beleeneth vnto righteousnes, and
 with the mouth man confesseth to saluation.
 For the Scripture saith, Whosoever beleeneth
 in him, shall not be ashamed. * For there is no
 difference between the Jew & the Grecia: for he
 that is Lord ouer all, is rich vnto all, that cal on
 him. * For whosoever shal call vpon the Name
 of the Lord shall be saued. * But how shal they
 call on him, in whom they haue not beleeued?
 and how shal they beleeue in him, of whome
 they haue not heard? and how shal they heare
 without a preacher? And howe shal they
 receiue? except they be sent: as it is written, How
 beautiful are the feete of them which bring
 the good tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings

TO THE ROMANES.

16 of good things! * But they haue not all obeyed
 the Gospell: for Esaias saith, Lorde, who hath
 17 belceued our report? * Then saith it by hearing,
 18 and hearing by the word of God. * But I de-
 maund, Haue they not heard? No doubt their
 sound went out through all the earth, & their
 19 wordes into the endes of the world. * But I de-
 mand, Did not Israell know God? First Moyses
 saith, I will prouoke you to enuie by a nation
 that is not *my* nation, and by a foolish nation I
 20 will anger you. * And Esaias is bold, & saith, I
 was found of them that sought me not, & haue
 beene made manifest to them that asked not
 21 after me. * And vnto Israell he sayeth, All the
 day long haue I stretched forth mine handes
 to a disobedient, & gainsayng people.

CH A P. XI.

1 I Demand then, Hath God cast away his pe-
 ple? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of
 the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Ben-
 2 min. * God hath not cast away his people
 which he knew before. Know ye not what the
 Scripture saith of Elias, how he communeth
 3 with God againt Israell saying, * Lord, they haue
 killed thy Prophets, & digged downe thine al-
 tars: and I am left alone, and they seek my
 4 life? * But what saith the answer of God to him?
 I haue reserved vnto my selfe seven thousand
 men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal.
 5 * Euen so then at this present time is there
 remnant according to the election of grace.
 6 * And if it be of grace, it is no more of works:

CHAP. XI.

or else were grace no more grace: but if it be of
 worke, it is no more grace: or els were worke,
 no more worke. *What then? Israel hath not
 obeyned that he sought: but the election hath
 obeyned it, & the rest haue bene hardened.
 *According as it is written, God hath given
 them the spirit of slumber, eies that they should
 not see, & eares that they should not heare vn-
 to this day. *And David saith, Let their table
 be made a snare, and a nette, and a stumbling
 block, even for a recompence vnto them. *Let
 their eyes be darkened that they see not, and
 bow downe their backe alwaies. *I demaunde
 then, Haue they stumbled, that they should fall?
 God forbid: but through their fall, saluation
 cometh vnto the Gentiles, to prouoke them
 to follow them. *Wherfore if the fall of them
 be the riches of the world, and the diminishing
 of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much
 more shall their aboundance be? *For in that I
 speak to you Gentils, in as much as I am the Ap-
 ostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office,
 *To trie if by any means I might prouoke them
 of my flesh to follow them, & might saue some
 of them. *For if the casting away of them be
 the reconciling of the world, what shall the re-
 turning be, but life from the dead? *For if the
 first frutes be holy, so is the whole lump: and
 if the roote be holy, so are the branches. *And
 though some of the branches be broken off, &
 thou being a wilde Olive tree, was graft in for
 them, and made partaker of the roote, and

TO THE ROMANES.

- 18 fatnes of the Olive tree: *Boast not thy selfe
 gainst the branches: and if thou boast thy selfe,
 thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.
 19 *Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken
 20 off, that I might be grafted in. * Well: through
 vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou standest
 by faith: be not high minded, but feare.
 21 *For if God spared not the naturall branches,
 22 take heed, least he also spare not thee. *Behold
 therefore the bountifulnes & seueritie of God
 toward them which haue fallen, seueritie: but
 toward thee, bountifulnes, if thou continue in
 his bountifulnes: or else thou shalt also be cut
 23 off. *And they also, if they abide not still in vn-
 beliefe, shall be grafted in: for God is able to
 24 graffe them in againe. * For if thou wast cut
 out of the Olive tree, which was wilde by na-
 25 ture, and wast grafted contrary to nature in a
 right Olive tree; how much more shall they
 that are by nature, be grafted in their owne O-
 26 live tree? *For I would not, brethren, that ye
 should be ignorant of this secret (lest ye should
 be arrogant in your selues) that partly obsti-
 nacie is come to Israel, vntill the fulnes of
 27 the Gentiles bee come in. *And so all Israel
 shall be saued, as it is written, The deliuerer
 shall come out of Sion, and shall turne away
 28 the vngodlines from Iacob. * And this is my
 covenant to them, When I shall take away
 their finnes. *As concerning the Gospell, they
 are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the
 election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes.

C H A P. XII.

For the giftes and callings of God are without repentance. * For euen as yee in time past haue not beleued God, yet haue now obteyned mercy through their vnbeliefe: * Euen so nowe haue they not beleued by the mercie shewed vnto you, that they also may receiue mercie. * For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that he might haue mercie on all. * O the deepnes of the riches, both of the wisdom, and knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his waies past finding out! * For who hath knowen the mind of the Lord? or who was his counseller? * Or who hath giuen vnto him first, and hee shall be recompensed. * For of him, and through him, and for him are all things: to him be glory forever. Amen.

C H A P. XII.

Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, which is your reasonable seruing of God. * And fashion not your selues like vnto this worlde, but be ye changed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may proue what that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God is. * For I say through the grace that is giuen vnto me, to euery one that is among you, that no man presume to vnderstand above that which is meet to vnderstand, but that ye vnderstand according to sobrietie, as God hath dealt to euery man the measure of faith. * For as we

TO THE ROMANES.

1 **As** many members in one body, and all mem-
 2 **bers** haue not one office, * So we being many
 3 **are** one bodie in Chrillt, & euery one, one
 4 **members** members. * Seeing then that wee haue
 5 **giftes** that are diuers, according to the grace
 6 **that** is giuen vnto vs, whether we haue proph-
 7 **ecie**, *let vs prophecie* according to the propo-
 8 **sition** of faith: * Or an office, *let vs wait* on the
 9 **office**: or he that teacheth, on teaching: * Or he
 10 **that** exhorteth, on exhortation: he that dis-
 11 **tributeth**, *let him doe it* with simplicitie: he that
 12 **ruleth**, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy,
 13 **with** chearefulnes. * *Let loue be* without dis-
 14 **simulation**. Abhorre that which is euill, and
 15 **cleaue** vnto that which is good. * Be affectionate
 16 **to** loue one another with brotherly loue, in gi-
 17 **uing** honour, goe one before another, * Not
 18 **slouthful** to do seruice: seruant in spirit: seruing
 19 **the** Lorde, * Reioycing in hope, patient in tri-
 20 **bulation**, continuing in prayer: * Distributing
 21 **vnto** the necessitie of the Saints: giuing your
 22 **selues** to hospitality. * Bless them which perse-
 23 **cute** you blest, *for* & curse not. * Reioice with
 24 **them** that reioyce, and weepe with them that
 25 **weepe**. * Be of like affection one towards ano-
 26 **ther**, be not hie minded: but make your selues
 27 **equal** to them of the lower sort: be not wise in
 28 **your** selues. * Recourence to no man euill for euill:
 29 **prosecute** things honestly in the sight of all men.
 30 **If** it be possible, as much as in you is, liue
 31 **peaceably** with all men. * Dearely beloved, avenge
 32 **not** your selues, but giue place vnto wrath:

CHAP. XIII.

Reuerten, Vengeance is mine: I will repay,
saith the Lord. * Therefore, if thine enemy hun- 20
grede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for
so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on
his head. * Be not overcome of euill, but over- 25
come euill with goodnes.

C H A P. XIII.

Let every soule be subiect to the higher pow 1
ers: for there is no power but of God: and
the powers that be, are ordeined of god. * Who 2
soever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the
ordnance of God: and they that resist, shall re-
ceive to themselves condemnation. * For Ma- 3
gistrates are not to be feared for good workes,
but for euill. Wilt thou then be without feare
of the power? doe well: so shalt thou haue
praise of the same. * For he is the minister of 4
God for thy wealth, but if thou doe euill, feare:
for he beareth not the sworde for nought: for
he is the minister of God to take vengeance on
him that doth euill. * Wherefore ye must be 5
subiect, not because of wrath onely, but also for
conscience sake. * For, for this cause ye pay also 6
tribute: for they are Gods ministers, applying
themselves for the same things. * Giue to all 7
men therefore their duties: tribute, to whom
ye owe tribute: custome, to whom custome, feare,
to whome feare: honour to whom ye owe ho-
nour. * Owe nothing to any man, but to loue 8
one another: for he that loueth another, hath
fulfilled the Lawe. * For this, Thou shalt not 9
commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou

TO THE ROMANES.

Not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witness, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commandement, it is brieflie comprehended in this saying, *even in this*, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe. * Loue doeth not euill to his neighbour: therefore is loue the fulfilling of the Lawe. * And that, considering the season, that *it is now* time that we should arise from sleepe: for nowe is our saluation neerer, then when we beleued it. * The night is past, & the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast away the workes of darkenes, & let vs put on the armour of light, * So that we walke honestly, as in the day: not in gluttonie & drunkennesse, neither in chambering and wantonnes, nor in strife and enauing. * But put ye on the Lorde IESVS CHRIST; and take no thought for the flesh, *to fulfill* the lusts of it.

CHAP. XIII.

Him that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you, *but not* for controuersies of disputations. * One beleueth that he may eate of all things: and another which is weake, eateth herbes. * Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him. * Who art thou that condemnest another mans seruant? he standeth or falleth to his owne master: yea, he shalbe established: for God is able to make him stand. * This man

other

CHAP. XIII.

Every man counteth every day alike: let every
 man be fully perswaded in his minde. * He that
 observeth the day, observeth it to the Lorde:
 and he that observeth not the day, observeth
 it not to the Lorde. He that eateth, eateth to
 the Lorde: for he giueth God thanks: and he
 that eateth not, eateth not to the Lorde, and
 giueth God thanks. * For none of vs liueth to
 himselfe, neither doth any die to himselfe. * For
 whether we live, we live vnto the Lorde: or
 whether we die, we die vnto the Lorde: whe-
 ther we live therefore, or die, we are the Lorde.
 * For Christ therefore died and rose againe, and
 is now, that he might be Lorde both of the
 dead and the quick. * But why dost thou
 condemne thy brother? or why dost thou
 despise thy brother? for we shall all appeare be-
 fore the iudgement seate of Christ. * For it is
 written, I live, saith the Lorde, and every knee
 shall bow to mee, and all tongues shall con-
 fesse vnto God. * So then every one of vs shall
 give accounts of him selfe to God. * Let vs
 therefore iudge one another any more: but
 let vs iudge rather in this, that no man
 put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke
 before his brother. * I know, and am perswa-
 ded through the Lorde Iesus, that there is no-
 thing vncleane of it selfe: but vnto him that
 iudgeth any thing to be vncleane, to him it is
 vncleane. * But if thy brother be grieved for the
 meate, now walkest thou not charitably: de-
 lay not him with thy meate, for whom
 Christ

TO THE ROMANES.

- 26 Christ died. * Cause not your commodities
 27 be euill spoken of. * For the kingdome of God
 is not meate nor drinke, but righteousness
 28 peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost. * For whome-
 euer in these things serueth Christ, is accept-
 29 ble vnto God, and is approued of men. * Let
 vs then followe those things which concerne
 peace, and wherewith one may edifie another.
 30 * Destroy not the worke of God for mens
 sake: all things indeed are pure: but *it is* euill for
 31 the man which eateth with offence. * *It is* good
 neither to eat flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor
 any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or
 32 is offended, or made weake: * Hast thou faith,
 haue it with thy selfe before God: blessed is he
 that condemneth not him selfe in that thing
 33 which he alloweth. * For he that doubteth, is
 condemned if he eate, because *he eateth not* in
 faith: and whatsoever is not of faith, is sinne.

C H A P. XV.

- 1 **W**E which are strong ought to beare the
 infirmities of the weake, and not to please
 2 our selues. * Therefore let euery man please his
 neighbour in that that is good to edification.
 3 * For Christ also would not please himselfe
 but as it is written, The rebukes of them which
 4 rebuke thee, sell on me. * For whatsoever things
 are written aforetime, are written for our lea-
 5 ning, that we through patience, and comfort
 of the Scriptures might haue hope. * Nowe
 the God of patience and consolation giue you
 that ye be like minded one towards another,

accto

CHAP. XV.

According to Christ Iesus, * That yee with one
 voice, & with one mouth, may praise God, e-
 specially the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ. * Where-
 fore receiue ye one another, as Christ also recei-
 ued vs to the glory of God. * Now I say, that
 Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision,
 for the truth of God, to confirme the promi-
 ses made vnto the fathers. * And let the Gentiles
 praise God for *his* mercy, as it is written, For
 this cause I will confesse thee among the Gen-
 tiles, and sing vnto thy Name. * And againe he
 saith, Reioyce, yee Gentiles with his people.
 * And againe, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles,
 & laud ye him, all people together. * And again
 Iudas saith, There shalbe a roote of Iesse, & hee
 that shal rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him
 shal the Gentiles trust. * Now the god of hope fill
 you with all ioy, & peace in beleeuing, that ye
 may abound in hope through the power of the
 holy Ghost. * And I my selfe also am perswaded
 of you, my brethre, that ye also are full of good-
 nesse, & filled with all knowledge, & are able
 to admonish one another. * Neuertheless, bre-
 thren, I haue somewhat boldly after a sort
 written vnto you, as one that putteth you in
 remembrance, through the grace that is given
 me of God, * That I should be the minister of
 Iesus Christ toward the Gentiles, ministring
 the Gospel of God, that the offering vp of the
 Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified
 by the holy Ghost. * I haue therefore where-
 of I may reioyce in Christ Iesus in those things
 which

TO THE ROMANES.

28 which pertain to God. * For I dare not speak
 any thing, which Christ hath not wrought by
 me, to make the Gentiles obedient in word &
 29 deed. * With the power of signes & wonders
 by the power of the spirit of God: so that from
 Hierusalem & round about to Illyricum, I have
 30 caused to abound the Gospel of Christ. * Yea
 I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, in
 where Christ was named, least I should have
 31 built on another mans foundation. * But as
 is written, To whome hee was not spoken of,
 they shall see him and they that heard not, shall
 32 vnderstand him. * Therefore also I have beene
 oft let to come vnto you: * But now seeing I
 33 have no more place in these quarters, and also
 have bene desirous many yeres agoe to come
 34 vnto you, * When I shall take my journey
 to Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see
 you in my journey, and to be brought on my
 way thitherward by you, after that I have bene
 35 somewhat filled with your *companie*. * But now
 goe I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.
 36 * For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and
 Achaia, to make a certain distribution vnto the
 37 poore Saints which are at Hierusalem. * For
 it hath pleased them, & their debtors are they: for
 38 the Gentiles be made partakers of their spiritual
 things, their duty is also to minister vnto them
 in carnall thinges. * When I have therefore
 39 performed this, and have sealed them with
 fruit, I will passe by you into Spaine. * And I
 know when I come, that I shall come to you

C H A P. XVI.

with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel
of Christ. * Also brethren, I beseech you for our
Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the
Spirit, that ye would strine with me by prayers
to God for me, * That I may be deliuered from
them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that
my seruice which I haue to doe at Hierusalem,
may be accepted of the Saintes, * That I may
come vnto you with ioy by the will of God,
and may with you be refreshed. * Thus the
God of peace be with you all, Amen.

C H A P. XVI.

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which
is a seruāt of the Church of Cenchrea: * That
ye receiue her in the Lord, as it becommeth
Saints, and that ye assise her in whatsoeuer bu-
sines she needeth of your ayde: for she hath gi-
uen hospitalitie vnto many, and to me also.
* Greete Priscilla, and Aquila my fellow hel-
pers in Christ Iesus, * (Which haue for my life
laid downe their owne necke. Vnto whome
not I only giue thanks, but also al the Churches
of the Gentiles.) * Likewise greete the Church
that is in their house. Salute my beloued Epe-
netus, which is the first frutes of Achaia in
Christ. * Greete Marie which bestowed much
labour on vs. * Salute Andronicus and Iunia my
cousins and fellow prisoners, which are notable
among the Apostles, and were in Christ before
me. * Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.
* Salute Vrbanus our fellow helper in Christ, &
Stachys my beloued. * Salute Appelles appro-
ued

TO THE ROMANES.

ned in Christ. Salute them which are of An-
 21 bulus *friends*. * Salute Herodian my kinsman.
 Greeete them which are of the *friends* of Nardo-
 22 sus which are in the Lord. * Salute Tryphena &
 Tryphota, which *women* labour in the Lord. Sa-
 lute the beloved Persis, which *woman* hath la-
 23 boured much in the Lord. * Salute Rufus cho-
 24 sen in the Lord, & his mother & mine. * Greeete
 Afynceritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercu-
 25 rius, & the brethren which are with them. * Sa-
 lute Philologus, & Iulias, Nereas, and his siller,
 and Olympas, & all the Saints which are with
 26 them. * Salute one another with an holy kisse.
 27 The Churches of Christ salute you. * Nowe I
 beseech you brethren, marke them dilligently
 which cause diuision and offences, contrary to
 the doctrine which ye haue learned, and auoide
 28 the. * For they that are such, serue not the Lord
 Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies, & with false
 speeche and flattering deceiue the hearts of the
 29 simple. * For your obedience is come abroad
 among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet
 I would haue you wise, vnto that which is
 30 good, & simple concerning euill. * The God of
 peace shall tread Satan vnder your feet shortly.
 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with
 31 you. * Timotheus my helper, & Lucius, & Iason,
 32 & Sosipater my kinsmen, salute you. * I Tertius,
 which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the
 33 Lord. * Gaius mine host, & of the whole Church
 saluteth you. Erastus the stewarde of the city
 34 saluteth you, & Quartus a brother. * The

CHAP. I.

of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.
 * To him nowe that is of power to establish
 you according to my Gospel, and preaching of
 Iesus Christ, by the reuelation of the myserie,
 which was kept secret since the world began:
 * (But now is opened, & published among all
 nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the
 comāndement of the euerlasting God for the
 obedience of faith.) * To God, *I say*, onely wise,
 be praise through Iesus Christ for euer. Amen.
 ¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus,
 and sent by Phebe, seruant of the Church,
 which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE of Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

PAUL called to be an Apostle of
 IESVS CHRIST, through
 the will of God, and our brother
 Sosthenes, * Vnto the Church of
 God which is at Corinthus, to
 them that are sanctified in Christ Iesus, Saintes
 by calling, with all that call on the Name of
 our Lord Iesus Christ, in every place, both their
 Lord, & ours: * Grace be with you, & peace from
 God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ.
 ¶ I thanke my God alwaies on your behalfe
 for the grace of God, which is given you in Je-
 sus Christ. * That in all things ye are made rich
 in all kinde of speech, and in all know-
 ledge. * As the testimonie of Iesus Christ hath
 borne

I. CORINTHIANS.

- 7 beene confirmed in you: * So that ye are not
 8 destitute of any gift: waiting for the appearing
 9 of our Lord Iesus Christ. * Who shall also con-
 10 firme you vnto the end, that ye may be blame-
 11 lesse in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ. * God
 12 is faithfull, by whome ye are called vnto the
 13 fellowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.
 14 * Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Name
 15 of our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye all speake one
 16 thing, and that there be no dissensions among
 17 you: but be ye knit together in one minde, and
 18 in one judgement. * For it hath bene declared
 19 vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are
 20 of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions
 21 among you. * Now this I say, that every one
 22 of you saith, I am Pauls, & I am Apollos, & I am
 23 Cephas, and I am Christes. * Is Christ deuoted
 24 was Paul crucified for you? either were ye bap-
 25 tized into the Name of Paul? * I thank God, that
 26 I baptized none of you, but Crispus, & Gaius.
 27 * Least any should say, that I had baptized in
 28 to mine own name. * I baptized also the house
 29 of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whe-
 30 ther I baptized any other. * For Christ com-
 31 me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel:
 32 not with wisdom of wordes, least the troth
 33 of Christ should be made of none effect. * For
 34 that preaching of the crosse is to them that
 35 perish, foolishnes: but vnto vs, which are saved,
 36 it is the power of God. * For it is written,
 37 we will destroy the wisdom of the wise,
 38 and will cast away the vnderstanding of the

dent. *
 where i
 God i
 filthnes
 knewe
 pleased
 sane th
 Iewes
 after w
 fed: v
 and v
 them v
 Grecia
 and th
 hes of
 nefe o
 thers,
 wife p
 many
 the loe
 the w
 of the
 * I
 wh
 m
 p
 f
 Go
 m
 m

CHAP. I.

10 **dent.** * Where is the wise? where is the Scribe?
 where is the disputer of this worlde? hath not
 God made the wisdom of this worlde fool-
 11 **ishnes?** * For seeing the world by wisdom
 knewe not God in the wisdom of God, it
 pleased God by the foolishnes of preaching to
 12 **save** them that beleue: * Seeing also that the
 Jewes require a signe, and the Grecians seeke
 13 **after** wisdom: * But we preach Christ cruci-
 fied vnto the Jewes, euen a stumbling blocke,
 14 **and** vnto the Greeians, foolishnes: * But vnto
 them which are called both of the Jewes and
 15 **Grecians,** we preach Christ, the power of God,
 and the wisdom of God, * For the foolish-
 16 **nes** of God is wiser then men, and the weak-
 ness of God is stronger then men. * For bre-
 17 **ther,** you see your calling, how that not many
 wise men after the flesh, not many mightie, nor
 18 **many** noble are called. * But God hath chosen
 the foolish things of the world to confounde
 the wise, and God hath chosen the weak things
 19 **of** the world, to confound the mightie things.
 * And vile thinges of the worlde and thinges
 20 **which** are despised, hath God chosen, & thinges
 which are not, to bring to nought things that
 are. * That no flesh should reioyce in his pre-
 21 **sence.** * But yee are of him in Christ Iesus, who
 22 **of** God is made vnto vs wisdom and righte-
 ousnes, and sanctification, & redemption. * That,
 23 **as** it is written, He that reioyceth, let
 24 **him** reioyce in the Lord.

I CORINTHIANS.
CHAP. II.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, came
 not with excellencie of wordes, or of wis-
 dome, shewing vnto you the testimony of god.
 * For I esteemed not to know any thing among
 you, saue Iesus Christ, & him crucified. * And I
 was among you in weakenes, & in feare, and in
 much trembling. * Neither *stode* my word and
 my preaching in the intising speech of man-
 wise, but in plaine euidence of the Spirit &
 of power. * That your faith should not be in the
 wisdom of men, but in the power of God. * And
 we speake wisdom among them that are per-
 fect: not the wisdom of this world, neither of
 the princes of this worlde, which come to
 nought. * But wee speake the wisdom of God
 in a myserie, *euen* the hidde *wisdom*; which
 God had determined before the world, vnto
 our glorie. * Which none of the princes of this
 world hath knowen: for had they knowen,
 they would not haue crucified the Lord of glo-
 rie. * But as it is written, The things which
 hath not seene, neither eare hath heard, neither
 came into mans heart, *ne*, which God hath pre-
 pared for them that loue him. * But God hath
 reueiled them vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spi-
 rit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things
 of God. * For what man knoweth the things of
 man, saue the spirit of man, which is in him: so
 the things of God knoweth no man, but the
 Spirit of God. * Now we haue receiued the
 spirit of the worlde, but the Spirit, which

CHAP. II.

God, that we might knowe the things that are
 given to vs of God. * Which things also wee
 speake, not in the words which mans wisdom
 teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth,
 comparing spirituall thinges with spirituall
 thinges. * But the naturall man perceiveth
 not the things of the Spirit of God: for they
 are foolishnes vnto him: neither can he knowe
 them, because they are spiritually discerned. * But
 he that is spirituall discerneth all things: yet he
 himselfe is iudged of no man. * For who hath
 knowen the minde of the Lord, that he might
 instruct him? But we haue the minde of Christ.

CHAP. III.

And I could not speake vnto you, brethren,
 as vnto spiritual men, but as vnto carnall,
 as vnto babes in Christ. * I gaue you milke
 to drinke, & not meat: for ye were not yet able
 to receiue it, neither yet now are ye able. * For ye
 are yet carnall: for whereas *there is* among you
 envying, & strife, & diuisions, are ye not carnall,
 & walk as men? * For whē one saith, I am Pauls,
 & another, I am Apollos, are yee not carnall?
 Who is Paul then? & who is Apollos, but the
 ministers by whom ye beleued, & as the Lord
 wille to every man? * I haue plāted, Apollos wa-
 tered, but God gaue the increase. * So then, nei-
 ther is he that planteth, any thing, neither hee
 that watereth, but God that giveth the increase.
 Hee that planteth, & he that watereth, are
 one: & every man shal receiue his wages accord-
 ing to his labour. * For wee together are

I. CORINTHIANS.

Gods labourers: yee are Gods husbandry
 10 and Gods building. *According to the grace of
 God giuen to me, as a skilfull master builder,
 haue laid the foundation, and another buildeth
 thereon: but let euery man take heed how he
 11 buildeth vpon it. * For other foundation can
 no man lay, then that which is laid, which is Ie-
 12 sus Christ. * And if any man build on this foun-
 dation, gold, siluer, precious stones, timber, hay,
 13 or stubble, * Euery mans worke shall be made
 manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it
 shall be reueiled by the fire: & the fire shall try
 14 euery mans worke of what sort it is. * If any
 mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, he
 15 shall receiue wages. * If any mans worke burne,
 he shall lose, but he shall be saued him selfe: not-
 16 withstanding yet as it were by the fire. * Knowe
 ye not that ye are the Temple of God and that
 17 the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? * If any man
 destroy the Temple of God, him shall God de-
 stroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye
 18 are. * Let no man deceiue him selfe: If any man
 among you seeme to be wise in this world, let
 19 him be a fool, that he may be wise. * For the
 wisdom of this world is foolishnes with God:
 for it is written, He catcheth the wise in their
 20 own craftines. * And again, The Lord knoweth
 that the thoughtes of the wise be vaine. * There-
 21 fore let no man reioyce in men: for all things are
 22 yours. * Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Ce-
 phas, or the world, or life or death: whether it
 be things present, or things to come,

CHAP. IIIL

in yours, *And ye Chriffes, and Chrif Gods. 23

CHAP. IIIL

¶ Et a man fo thinke on vs. as of the minifters
of Chrif, & difposers of the secrets of God:
*And as for the reft, it is required of the difpo-
fer, that every man be found faithfull. *As tou-
ching me, I paffe very little to be iudged of you,
or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine
owne felfe. * For I know nothing by my felfe,
yet am I not thereby iuftified: but he that iud-
geth me, is the Lord. * Therefore iudge nothing
before the time, vntill the Lord come, who will
lighten things that are hidde in darkenefle, and
make the counfels of the hearts manifelt: and
then fhall every man haue praife of God. * Now
thele things, brethren, I haue figuratiuely apply-
ed vnto mine owne felfe and Apollos, for your
akes, that ye might learne by vs, that no man
puffe himfelfe aboue that which is written, that one
fhall not againft another for any mans caufe.
* For who feperateth thee? and what haft thou,
that thou haft not receiued? if thou haft recei-
ued it, why reioyceft thou, as though thou had-
deft not receiued it? * Nowe ye are full: now
ye are made rich: ye reigne as Kings without
vs, & would to God ye did reigne, that we alfo
might reigne with you. * For I thinke that God
hath fet forth vs the laft Apoftles, as men ap-
pointed to death: for we are made a gaſping
blocke vnto the world, & to the Angels, and to
men. * We are fooles for Chriffs fake & ye are
foles in Chrif: we are weak, & ye are ftrong:

I CORINTHIANS.

ye are honourable, and we are despised. * Yet
his houre we both hunger, & thirst, & are
ked, & are buffeted, & have no certain dwelling
place. * And labour, working with our own
hands: we are reviled, & yet we blesse: we are
persecuted, & suffer it. * We are evil spoken of,
and we pray: we are made as the filth of the
worlde the ofskowring of all things, vnto this
time. * I write not these things to shame you,
but as my beloved children I admonish you.
* For though ye haue ten thousand instructors
in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: for
Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the
Gospel. * Wherefore, I pray you, be ye follow-
ers of me. * For this cause haue I sent vnto you
Timotheus, which is my beloved sonne, & faith-
full in the Lord, which shall put you in remem-
brance of my wayes in Christ, as I teach euery
where in euery Church. * Some are puffed vp,
though I would not come to you. * But I will
come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will
know, not the words of the which are puffed vp
but the power. * For the kingdō of god is not in
word, but in power. * What will ye? shall I come
vnto you with a rod, or in loue, & in the spirit of
meekenes?

CHAP. V.

IT is heard certainly that there is fornication
among you, & such fornication as is not once
named among the Gentiles, that one should
haue his fathers wife. * And ye are puffed vp,
haue not rather sorrowed, that he which haue
done this deed might be put from among you

C H A P. V.

For I verely as absent in body, but present in
 spirit, haue determined alreadie, as though I
 were present, that he that hath thus dope this
 thing, * When ye are gathered together, and
 my spirit, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ,
 that such one, *I say*, by the power of our Lord
 Christ, * Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the de-
 struction of the flesh, that the spirit may be sa-
 ued in the day of the Lord Iesus. * Your reioy-
 ding is not good. Know ye not that a litle lea-
 uen leaueth the whole lumpe? * Purge out
 therefore the old leauen, that ye may be a new
 lumpe, as ye are vnleauened: for Christ our
 Pasceouer is sacrificed for vs. * Therefore let vs
 keepe the feast, not with olde leauen, neither in
 the leauen of maliciousnes, & wickednesse: but
 with the vnleauened bread of sinceritie and
 truth. * I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye
 should not company together with fornicators.
 * And not altogether with the fornicators of
 this worlde, or with the couetous, or with ex-
 tortioners, or with idolaters: for then ye must
 go out of this world. * But now I haue written
 vnto you, that ye company not together: if a-
 ny that is called a brother, be a fornicatour, or
 couetous, or an idolater, or a rayler, or a drun-
 kard, or an extortioner, with such one eate not.
 * For what haue I to doe, to iudge them also
 which are without? doe ye not iudge them
 which are within? * But God iudgeth them
 that are without. Put away therefore from a-
 mong your selues that wicked man.

C H A P. VI.

1 **D**Are any of you, hauing busines against another, be iudged vnder the vniust, & not under the Saintes? * Doe ye not knowe, that the Saintes shall iudge the world? If the world then shall be iudged by you, are ye vnworthie to iudge the smallest matters? * Know ye not that we shall iudge the Angels? howe much more things that pertaine to this life? * If then ye haue iudgements of thinges pertaining to this life, set vp them which are least esteemed in the Church. * I speake it to your shaine. Is it so that there is not a wise man among you? no not one that can iudge betweene his brethren? * But a brother goeth to law with a brother, & that vnder the infidels. * Nowe therefore there is altogether infirmitie in you, in that ye go to law one with another: why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather sustaine ye not harme? * Nay, ye your selues doe wrong, & do harme, & that to your brethren. * Knowe ye not that the vnrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor buggers, * Nor theeuers, nor conetous, nor drunkards, nor railers, nor extortioners shall inherit the kingdome of God. * And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirite of our God. **22** * All things are lawfull vnto me: but al things are not profitable. I may doe all thinges, but I will not be brought vnder the power of any

C H A P. VII.

Meats are ordeined for the bellie, & the 13
body for the meates : but God shall destroy
 both it, & them. Now the body is not for forni-
 cation, but for the Lord, & the Lord for the bo-
 dy. * And God hath also raised vp the Lord, & 14
 shall raise vs vp by his power. * Know ye not, 15
 that your bodies are the members of Christ?
 shall I then take the members of Christ, and
 make them the members of an harlot? God
 forbid. * Doe ye not know, that he which cou- 16
 neth him selfe with an harlot, is one body? for
 they, saith he, shall be one flesh. * But he that is 17
 joined vnto the Lord, is one spirit. * Flee for- 18
 nication: every sinne that a man doeth, is with-
 out the body: but he that committeth forni-
 cation, sinneth against his owne body. * Know 19
 ye not, that your body is the Temple of the
 holy Ghost, *which is in you,* whome ye haue of
 God? and ye are not your owne, * For ye are 20
 bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in
 your body, & in your spirit: for they are Gods.

C H A P. VII.

NOwe concerning the thinges whereof ye 1
 wrote vnto me, *it were good* for a man
 not to touch a woman. * Neuerthelesse, to a- 2
 void fornication, let every man haue his wife,
 and let every woman haue her owne husband.
 * Let the husband giue vnto the wife due bene- 3
 volence, & likewise also the wife vnto the hus-
 band. * The wife hath not the power of her 4
 owne body, but the husband: & likewise also
 the husband hath not the power of his owne
 body,

I. CORINTHIANS.

- body, but the wife. * Defraud not one another except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selues to fasting & prayer, and agree come together that Satan tempt you not in your incontinencie. * But I speake this by permission not by commandement. * For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe ~~am~~ but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner & another after that. * Therefore I say vnto the vnmarried, & vnto the widowers. It is good for them if they abide even as I. * But if they can not chaine, let them marry: for it is better to marrie then to burne. * And vnto the married I commaund, not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband. * But & if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husband put away *his* wife. * But the remnant I speake, & not the Lord. If any brother haue a wife, that beleeneth not, if he be content to dwell with him, let him not forsake her. * And the woman which hath an husband that beleeneth not, if he be content to dwell with her, let her not forsake him. * For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified to the wife, & the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified to the husband, els were your children vncleane: but now are they holy. * But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in subiection in such things: but God hath called vs in peace. * For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thine husband

C H A P. VII.

what knowest thou, O man, whether thou
 shalt see thy wife? * But as God hath distri-
 buted to euery man, as the Lord hath called e-
 uery one, so let him walke: & so ordaine I in
 the Churches. Is any man called being circum-
 cised? let him not gather *his uncircumcision*: is
 he called vncircumcised? let him not be cir-
 cumcised. * Circumcision is nothing, and vncir-
 cumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the
 commandements of God. * Let euery man abide
 in the same calling wherein he was cal-
 led. * Art thou called being a seruant? care not
 for it: but if thou mayest be free, vse it rather.
 For he that is called in the Lord *being a ser-*
uant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also he that
 is called *being free*, is Christes seruant. * Ye are
 bought with a price: be not the seruants of me-
 men. Brethren, let euery man, wherein he was called,
 therein abide with God. * Nowe concerning
 virgins, I haue no commandement of the Lord:
 but I giue mine aduice, as one that hath ob-
 tained mercie of the Lord to be faithfull. * I sup-
 pose then this to be good for the present ne-
 cessitie: *I meane* that it is good for a man so
 to be. * Art thou bounde vnto a wife? seeke
 not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife?
 seeke not a wife. * But if thou takest a wife, thou
 sinnest not: and if a virgin marrie, she sinneth
 not: neuerthelesse, such shal haue trouble in the
 flesh: but I spare you. * And this I say, brethren,
 because the time is short, hereafter that both
 they which haue wiues, be as though they had

I. CORINTHIANS.

- 6 body, but the wife. * Defraud not one another, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selues to fasting & prayer, and againe come together that Satan tempt you not in your incontinencie. * But I speake this by permission not by commandement. * For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe ~~am~~ but every man hath his proper gift of God, one in this manner & another after that. * Therefore I say vnto the vnmarried, & vnto the widowers, It is good for them if they abide even as I am. * But if they can not containe, let them marrie: for it is better to marrie then to burne. * And vnto the married I commaund, not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband. * But & if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husband put away his wife. * But the remnant I speake, & not the Lord, If a brother haue a wife, that beleueneth not, if he be content to dwell with him, let him not forsake her. * And the woman which hath an husband that beleueneth not, if he be content to dwell with her, let her not forsake him. * For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified to the wife, & the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified to the husband, els were your children vncleane: but now are they holy. * But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in subiection in such things: but God hath called vs in peace. * For what knowest thou of a wife, whether thou shalt save thine husband

C H A P. VII.

What knowest thou, O man, whether thou
 hast saue thy wife? * But as God hath distri-
 buted to euery man, as the Lord hath called e-
 uery one, so let him walke: & so ordaine I in
 all Churches. Is any man called being circum-
 cised? let him not gather *his uncircumcision*: is
 any called vncircumcised? let him not be cir-
 cumcised. * Circumcision is nothing, and vncir-
 cumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the
 commandments of God. * Let euery man a-
 bide in the same, wherein he was cal-
 led. * Art thou called being a seruant? care not
 for it: but if thou mayest be free, vse it rather.
 * For he that is called in the Lorde being a ser-
 uant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also he that
 is called being free, is Christes seruant. * Ye are
 bought with a price: be not the seruants of me.
 * Brethren, let euery man, wherein he was called,
 therein abide with God. * Nowe concerning
 virgins, I haue no commandement of the Lord:
 but I giue mine aduice, as one that hath obtai-
 ned mercie of the Lord to be faithfull. * I sup-
 pose then this to be good for the present ne-
 cessitie: *I meane* that it is good for a man so
 to be. * Art thou bounde vnto a wife? seeke
 not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife?
 seeke not a wife. * But if thou takest a wife, thou
 sinnest not: and if a virgin marrie, she sinneth
 not: neuerthelesse, such shal haue trouble in the
 flesh: but I spare you. * And this I say, brethren,
 because the time is short, hereafter that both
 they which haue wives, be as though they had

I. CORINTHIANS.

- 30 none: * And they that weepe, as though they
wept not: & they that reioyce, as though they
reioyced not: & they that buy, as though they
31 possessed not: * And they that vse this worlde,
as though they vsed it not: for the fashion of
32 this worlde goeth away. * And I would haue
you without care. The vnmarried careth for
the things of the Lorde, how he may please the
33 Lord. * But he that is married careth for the
things of the worlde, howe he may please his
wife. * There is difference betweene a
34 virgin and a wife: the vnmarried woman careth
for the thinges of the Lorde, that she may be
holy both in body and spirite: but she that is
married, careth for the things of the worlde, in
35 she may please her husband. * And this I speake
for your owne commoditie, not to tangle you
in a snare, but that ye *followe* that, which is
best, and that ye may cleane fast vnto the Lorde
36 without separation. * But if any man thinke
that it is vncomely for his virgine, if she be
the flowre of *her* age, & need so require, let him
doe what he will, he sinneth not: let them be
37 married. * Neuerthelesse, he that standeth fast
in his heart, that he hath no neede, but hath
power ouer his owne will & hath so decreed in
his heart, that he will keepe his virgin, he doeth
38 well. * So then he that giueth her to marriage
doeth well, but he that giueth her not to mar-
39 age, doeth better. * The wife is bound by the
Law, as long as her husband liueth: but if her
husband be dead, she is at libertie to

CHAP. VIIL.

whom she will, onely in the Lorde. * But
 she is more blessed, if she so abide, in my iudge-
 ment: & I thinke that I haue also the Spirit of
 God.

CHAP. VIIII.

And as touching thinges sacrificed vnto i-
 doles, we knowe that we all haue know-
 ledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth.
 Now, if any man thinke that he knoweth any
 thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to
 knowe. * But if any man loue God, the same is
 known of him. * Concerning therefore the
 thing of thinges sacrificed vnto idoles, we knowe
 that an Idole is nothing in the world, and that
 there is none other God but one. * For though
 there be that are called gods, whether in heaue,
 or earth, (as there be many gods, and many
 lordes) yet vnto vs there is but one God, which
 is that Father, of whome are all things, & we in
 him: and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom
 are all things, & we by him. * But euery man hath
 not this knowledge: for many hauing consci-
 ence of the idole, vntil this houre, eat as a thing
 offered vnto the idole, & so their conscience
 being weake, is defiled. * But meat maketh not
 man acceptable to God, for neither if we eate,
 haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue
 we the lesse. * But take heed, lest by any means
 the power of yours be an occasion of falling,
 vnto them that are weake. * For if any man see
 you which haue knowledge, sit at table in the
 Temple, shall not the conscience of him

I CORINTHIANS.

- which is weake, be boldned to eat those things
 11 which are sacrificed to idoles? * And through
 thy knowledge shall the weake brother perill
 12 for whom Christ dyed. * Now when ye stand
 so against the brethren, and wound their weak
 13 conscience ye sinne against Christ. * Wherefore
 if meat offend my brother, I will eat no flesh
 while the world standeth, that I may not offend
 my brother.

CHAP. IX.

- 1 **A**M I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I
 not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are ye not
 2 my worke in the Lorde? * If I be not an Apo-
 file vnto other, yet doubtlesse I am vnto you:
 for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the
 3 Lord. * My defence to them that examine me,
 4 is this, * Haue we not power to eate and to
 5 drinke? * Or haue we not power to lead about
 a wife being a sister, as well as the rest of the
 Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord and
 6 Cephas? * Or I only & Barnabas, haue not we
 7 power not to worke? * Who goeth a warfare
 any time at his owne cost? who planteth a
 vineyard, & eateth not of the fruite thereof? or
 who seedeth a flocke, & eateth not of the milke
 8 of the flocke? * Say I these things accord-
 ing to man? saith not the Law the same also?
 9 * For it is written in the Lawe of Moses, Thou
 shalt not muzzle the mouth of the oxe, that
 treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care
 10 for oxen? * Either saith he it not altogether for
 our sakes? For our sakes no doubt it is written

CHAP. IX.

that he which eateth, should eat in hope, & that
 he that thresheth in hope, shoulde be partaker
 of his hope. * If we haue sowed vnto you spiri- 11
 tual things, is it a great thing if we reape your
 carnall things? * If others with you be parta- 12
 kers of *this* power are not we rather? neuerthe-
 lesse, we haue not vsed this power: but suffer
 all things, that we should not hinder the Gos-
 pell of Christ. * Doe ye not knowe, that they 13
 which minister about the holy things, eate of
 the things of the Temple? & they which wait
 at the altar, are partakers with the altar? * So al- 14
 so hath the Lorde ordeined, that they which
 preach the Gospell, should liue of the Gospell.
 * But I haue vsed none of these things: neither 15
 wrote I these things, that it should be so done
 vnto me: for it were better for me to die, then
 that any man should make my reioycing vaine.
 * For though I preach the Gospell, I haue no- 16
 thing to reioyce of: for necessitie is laid vpon
 me, and wo is vnto me, if I preach not the Gos-
 pell. * For if I do it willingly, I haue a rewarde, 17
 but if I do it against my will, *notwithstanding*
 the dispensation is committed vnto me. * What 18
 is my reward then? verely that when I preach
 the Gospell, I make the Gospell of Christ free,
 that I abuse not mine authoritie in the Gospell.
 * For though I be free from all men, yet haue 19
 I made my selfe seruant vnto all men, that I
 might winne the moe. * And vnto the Iewes, I 20
 become as a Iewe, that I may winne the Iewes
 that are vnder the Lawe, as though I
 were

I. CORINTHIANS.

were vnder the Law, that I may win them
 21 are vnder the Law: * To them that are without
 Lawe, as *though I were* without Lawe (which
 I am not without Lawe as pertaining to God,
 but *am* in the Law through Christ) that I may
 22 winne them that are without Lawe: * To the
 weake I become as weake, that I may win the
 weake: I am made all things to all men, that I
 23 might by all meanes saue some. * And thus I
 do for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker
 24 thereof with you. * Know ye not, that they
 which runne in a race, runne all, yet one recei-
 ueth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine
 25 * And every man that prooueth himselfe, as-
 staineth from all things: & they do it to obtaine
 a corruptible crowne: but we for an incor-
 26 ruptible. * I therefore so runne, not as vn-
 certainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the
 27 aire. * But I beate downe my body, & bring it
 into subiection, least by any meanes after that
 I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be
 reprobued.

C H A P. X.

1 **M**oreouer, brethren, I would not that ye
 should be ignorant, that all our fathers
 were vnder that cloude, and all passed through
 2 that sea, * And were all baptized vnto Moses
 in that cloud, & in that sea, * And did all eate the
 3 same spirituall meate, * And did all drinke of the
 4 same spirituall drinke (for they dranke of the
 5 spirituall Rocke that followed them: and the
 6 Rocke was Christ.) * But with many of them

CHAP. X.

was not pleased: for they were overthrown
 in the wilderness. * Now these things are our en- 6
 samples, to the intent that we should not lust
 after evil things as they also lusted. * Neither 7
 be ye idolaters as were some of them, as it is
 written, The people sat downe to eat and
 drinke, and rose vp to play. * Neither let vs 8
 commit fornication, as some of them commit-
 ted fornication, and fell in one day three and
 thowse thousand. * Neither let vs tempt Christ, 9
 as some of them also tempted him, and were
 deuoured of serpents. * Neither murmur ye, as
 some of them also murmured, and were de- 10
 stroyed of the destroyer. * Now all these things
 came vnto them for ensamples, and were writ- 11
 ten to admonish vs, vpon whom the endes of
 the world are come. * Wherefore, let him that 12
 thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.
 * There hath no temptation taken you, but such 13
 as cometh to man: and God is faithfull,
 which will not suffer you to be tempted aboue
 that you be able, but will euen give the issue
 with the temptatiō, that ye may be able to beare
 it. * Wherefore my beloved, flee from idolatry. 14
 * I desire as vnto them which haue vnderstan- 15
 ding, iudge ye what I say. * The cup of blessing
 which we blesse, is it not the cōmunion of the 16
 blood of Christ? The bread which we breake,
 is it not the communiō of the body of Christ?
 For we that are many, are one bread and one 17
 body, because wee all are partakers of one
 bread. * Behold Israel which is after the flesh 18

I. CORINTHIANS.

are not they which eate of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar? *What say I then? that that dole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idols, is any thing? *Nay, but that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not vnto God: and I would not that ye shoulde have fellowship with devils. *Ye can not drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of the devils. Ye can not be partakers of the Lords table and of the table of devils. *Doe we prouoke the Lord to anger? we stronger then he? *All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not. *Let no man seeke his own, but every man anothers wealth. *Whatsoever is solde in the shambles, eate ye, & aske no question for conscience sake. *For the earth is the Lords, and all that therein is. *If any of them which beleue not, call you to a feast & if ye will go, whatsoever is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake. *But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idols, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, and for the conscience (for the earth is the Lords, & all that therein is.) *And the conscience I say, not thine, but of that other: for why shoulde my libertie be condemned of another mans conscience? *For if I through Gods benefite be partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that wherefore I giue thanks? *Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke, or whatsoever ye doe, doe all to the glory of

C H A P. XI.

Let me give none offence, neither to the Iewes, 38
 nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of god:
 as I please all men in all things, not see- 39
 king mine owne profit, but *the profuse* of many,
 that they might be saued.

C H A P. XI.

BE ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ. 1
 Now brethren, I commend you, that yee 2
 remember all my things, and keep the ordinan-
 ces, as I deliuered them to you. *But I wil that 3
 ye know, that Christ is the head of euery man:
 and the man is the womans head: and God is
 Christs head. *Euery man praying or prophe- 4
 cying hauing *any thing* on his head, dishonour-
 eth his head. *But euery woman that praieth 5
 or prophecieth bare headed, dishonoureth her
 head: for it is euen one very thing, as though
 she were shauen. *Therefore if the woman be 6
 not couered, let her also be shorne: and if it be
 shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let 7
 her be couered. *For a man ought not to couer
 his head: forasmuch as he is the image & glo-
 ry of God: but the woman is the glory of the 8
 man. *For the man is not of the woman, but 9
 the woman of the man. *For the man was not
 created for the womans sake: but the woman 10
 for the mans sake. *Therefore ought the womā
 to haue power on *her* head, because of the An- 11
 gels. *Neuertheles neither is the man without 12
 the womā, neither the womā without the man,
 as the Lord. *For as the woman, is of the man, 13
 so is the man also by the woman: but all things

L CORINTHIANS.

23 are of God. *Judge in your selues, is it comely
 24 that a woman pray vnto God vnconuered? *Does
 25 not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue
 26 long haire, it is a shame vnto him? * But if a
 27 woman haue long haire, it is a praise vnto her
 28 for her haire is giuen her for a couering. * But
 29 if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no
 30 such custome, neither the Churches of God.
 31 *Nowe in this that I declare, I praise you not,
 32 that ye come together, not with profite, but
 33 with hurt. *For first of all, when ye come toge-
 34 ther in the Church, I heare that there are dissen-
 35 sions among you: and I beleue it to be true in
 36 some part. * For there must be heresies euery
 37 among you, that they which are approued a-
 38 mong you, might be knowne. * When ye come
 39 together therefore into one place, *this* is not to
 40 eate the Lordes supper. * For euery man when
 41 they should eate, taketh his owne supper a fore,
 42 & one is hungry, & another is drunken. *Have
 43 ye not houses to eate & to drinke in? despise ye
 44 the Church of God, & shame them that haue
 45 not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you
 46 in this? I praise you not. * For I haue receiued
 47 of the Lorde that which I also haue deliuered
 48 vnto you, to wit, That the Lord Iesus in the
 49 night that he was betrayed, tooke bread: * And
 50 when hee had giuen thanks, hee brake it, and
 51 saide, Take, eate, this is my body, which is broken
 52 for you: this doe yee in remembrance of
 53 me. * After the same manner also he tooke the
 54 cuppe, when he had supped, saying, This cuppe

CHAP. XII.

the Newe testament in my blood: this doe as
often as yee thinke it, in remembrance of me.
*For as often as yee shall eate this bread, and
drinke this cuppe, ye shewe the Lordes death
till he come. *Wherefore, whosoever shal eate
this bread, and drinke the cuppe of the Lorde
vnworthely, shall be guiltie of the body and
blood of the Lorde. *Let every man therefore
examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this
bread, and drinke of this cuppe. *For he that
eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and
drinketh his owne damnation, because he dis-
cerneth not the Lordes body. *For this cause
many are weake, and sick among you, and ma-
ny sleepe. *For if we would iudge our selues,
we should not be iudged. *But when we are
iudged, we are chastened of the Lorde, because
we should not be condemned with the world.
*Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come to-
gether to eate, tary one for another. *And if
any man be hungry, let him eate at home, that
ye come not together vnto condemnation. O-
ther things will I set in order when I come.

CHAP. XII.

NOwe concerning spirituall gifts, brethren,
I would not haue you ignorant. *Ye know
that ye were Gentiles, and were caried away
vnto the dumme idoles, as ye were led. *Whe-
fore, I declare vnto you, that no man speaking
by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus execrable:
also no man can say that Iesus is the Lord, but
by the holy Ghost. *Now there are discretions

I. CORINTHIANS.

5 of gistes, but the same Spirit. * And there are
 6 diuersities of administrations, but the same
 7 Lorde. * And there are diuersities of operations,
 8 but God is the same which worketh all in all.
 9 * But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to
 10 euery man, to profite withall. * For to one is
 11 given by the Spirit the word of wisdom: and
 12 to another the worde of knowledge, by the
 13 same Spirit: * And to another is given faith, by
 14 the same Spirit: and to another the gistes of
 15 healing, by the same Spirit: * And to another,
 16 the operations of great workes: and to another,
 17 propheticie: and to another, the discerning
 18 of spirits: and to another, diuersities of tongues:
 19 and to another, the interpretation of tongues.
 20 * And all these things worketh one, and the
 21 selfe same Spirit, distributing to euery man se-
 22 uerally as he will. * For as the bodie is one, and
 23 hath many members, and all the members of
 24 the body, which is one, though they be many,
 25 yet are but one body: euen so is Christ. * For by
 26 one Spirit are we all baptized into one body,
 27 whether we be Iewes, or Grecians, whether we
 28 be bonde, or free, and haue bene all made to
 29 drinke into one Spirit. * For the body also is
 30 not one member but many. * If the foot would
 31 say, because I am not the hande, I am not of
 32 the body, is it therefore not of the body? * And
 33 if the eare would say, Because I am not the
 34 eye, I am not of the bodie, is it therefore not
 35 of the body? * If the whole body were an eye,
 36 where were the hearing? if the whole were hea-

C H A P. XII.

where were the smelling? * But now hath
 God disposed the members euery one of them
 in the body at his owne pleasure. * For if they
 were all one member, where were the body?
 * But now are there many members, yet but
 one body. * And the eye can not say vnto the
 hand, I haue no neede of thee, nor the head a-
 gain to the secte, I haue no need of you. * Yea,
 much rather those members of the bodie,
 which seeme to be more feeble, are necessary.
 * And vpon those *members* of the bodie, which
 wee thinke moste vnhoneft, put we more ho-
 nestie on: and our vncomely *partes* haue more
 comelines on. * For our comely *partes* neede it
 not: but God hath tempered the body toge-
 ther, and hath giuen the more honour to that
 part which lacked. * Lest there should be any
 diuision in the body: but that the members
 shoulde haue the same care one for another.
 * Therefore if one member suffer, all suffer with
 it: if one member bee had in honour, all the
 members reioyce with it. * Nowe yee are the
 body of Christ, and members for *your* parte.
 * And God hath ordeined some in the Church:
 first, Apostles, secondly Prophets, third-
 ly teachers, then them that doe miracles: af-
 ter that, the gistes of healing, helpers, gouer-
 nours, diuersitie of tongues. * Are all Apo-
 stles? are all Prophets? are all teachers? * Are
 all doers of miracles? haue all the gistes of
 healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe

I CORINTHIANS.

31 all interpreter? *But desire you the best gifts, and I will yet shewe you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

THough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels., and haue not loue, I am as sounding brass., or a tinkling cymball.* And though I had the gift of prophecie, and knewe all secrets and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I coulde remooue mountaines, and had not loue, I were nothing. * And though I feede the poore with all my goods, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth mee nothing. *Loue suffereth long: it is bountifull: loue ennieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp: * It doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things: it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euill: * It reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the truth: * It suffereth all things: it beleueth all things: it hopeth all things: it endureth all things. *Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecyings be abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away. * For wee knowe in parte, and wee prophecie in parte. *But when that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shall be abolished. *When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstode as a childe, I thought as a childe but when I became a man, I put away childish things. * For now we see through a glasse darkely:

C H A P. XIII.

dearly: but then *shall we see face to face*.
Now I knowe in partes but then shall I know
even as I am known. * And now abideth faith, 13
hope and loue, even these three: and the chiefest
of these is loue.

C H A P. XIII.

Followe after loue, and conet spirituall 1
giftes, and rather that yee may prophetic.
* For he that speaketh a *strange* tongue, *spea-* 2
ket not vnto men, but vnto God: for no
man heareth *him*: howbeit in the spirit hee 3
speaketh secret things. * But he that prophe- 3
cieth, speaketh vnto men to edifying, and to
exhortation, and to comfort, * Hee that *spea-* 4
ket strange language, edifieth himselfe: but
he that prophecieth, edifieth the Church. * I 5
woulde that yee all spake *strange* languages,
but rather that yee prophecied: for greater is
he that prophecieth, then he that speaketh *di-* 6
uers tongues, except hee expound it, that the
Church may receiue edification. * And now, 6
brethren, if I come vnto you speaking *diuers*
tongues, what shall I profite you, except I
speak to you, either by reuelation, or by know-
ledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine? 7
* Moreover things without life which giue a 7
sounde, whether *it be* a pipe or an harpe, ex-
cept they make a distinction in the soundes,
howe shall it bee knownen what is piped or 8
sounded? * And also, if the trumpette giue an 8
vntaine sounde, who shall prepare him,
to battell? * So likewise you, by the tongue, 9
except

I. CORINTHIANS.

- Except yee vtter wordes that haue signifi-
tion, howe shall it be vnderstand what is
ken? for ye shall speake in the ayre. * There
are so many kindes of voices (as it cometh
to passe) in the worlde, and none of them
dumme. * Except I know then the power of
the voice, I shall be vnto him that speaketh
a Barbarian, and he that speaketh, shall be
Barbarian vnto me. * Euen so, forasmuch
ye conet spirituall gi'tes, seeke that yee may
excl vnto the edifying of the Church. * Where-
fore, let him that speaketh a *strange* tongue
pray, that he may interprete. * For if I pray
a *strange* tongue, my spirit prayeth: but
vnderstanding is without fruite. * What
then? I will pray with the spirit, but I will
pray with the vnderstanding also: I will sing
with the spirit, but I will sing with the vnder-
standing also. * Else, when thou blestest
the spirit, howe shall hee that occupieth the
roome of the vnlearned, say, Amen, at thy
sing of thankes, seeing he knoweth not what
thou saiest? * For thou verely perceivest
well, but the other is not edified. * I thank
my God, I speake languages more then
all. * Yet I had rather in the Church to speake
five wordes with mine vnderstanding, then
might also instruct others, then tenne
sande wordes in a *strange* tongue. * Brethren
bee not children in vnderstanding, but
concerning malicioufnesse bee children,
in vnderstanding bee of a ripe age. *

CHAP. XIII.

Now it is written, By men of other tongues, 21
 and by other languages will I speake vnto
 the people: yet so shall they not heare mee,
 saith the Lord. * Wherefore *strange* tongues are 22
 for a signe, not to them that beleue: but to
 them that beleue not; but prophesying *serueth*
 not for the that beleue not, but for the which
 beleue. * If therefore when the whole Church 23
 come together in one, and all speake *strange*
 tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned,
 or they which beleue not, will they not say,
 that ye are out of your wittes? * But if all pro- 24
 phesie, & there come in one that beleueth not,
 or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, & is
 iudged of all. * And so are the secrets of his 25
 heart made manifest, & so he will fall down on
 his face & worship God, & say plainly that god
 is in you in deede. * What is to be done then, 26
 brethren? when ye come together, according as
 every one of you hath a Psalm, or hath do-
 ctine, or hath a tongue, or hath reuelatio, or hath
 interpretation, let all things be done vnto edi-
 fying. * If any man speake a *strange* tongue, let 27
 it be by two, or at the most, by three, & that by
 course, & let one interpret. * But if there be no 28
 interpreter, let him keep silence in the Church,
 which speaketh languages, & let him speake to
 himselfe, and to God. * Let the Prophets speake 29
 two, or three, and let the other iudge. * And if 30
 any thing be reueiled to another that sitteth
 by, let the first hold his peace. * For ye may all 31
 prophesie one by one, that all may learne, and
 all

I. CORINTHIANS.

- 32 all may haue comfort. * And the spirities of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophetes. * For
 33 God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace, as we see in al the Churches of the saints.
 34 * Let your women keepe silence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto the to speake but *they ought* to be subiect, as also the Law
 35 saith. * And if they will learn any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame
 36 for women to speake in the Church. * Came the word of God out from you? either came it
 37 vnto you onely? * If any thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge, that the things, that I write vnto you, are the
 38 commandements of the Lord. * And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant. * Wherefore brethren, conet to prophecie, and forbid
 40 not to speake languages. * Let all thinges be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. XV.

- 1 **M**oreouer, brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel, which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye continue.
 2 * And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memorie, after what manner I preached it vnto you, except ye haue beleueed in vaine. * For first
 3 of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes, according to the Scriptures, * And that he was buried, and that he rose the third day, according to the Scriptures, * And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue. * After that,

2 COR. II. XV.

was one of more then five hundred brethren
 a part whereof many remaine vnto this pre-
 sent, & some also are a sleep. * After that, he was 7
 seene of Iames: then of all the Apostles. * And 8
 last of all he was seene of me, as of one borne
 out of due time. * For I am the least of the A- 9
 postles, which am not meete to be called an A-
 postle, because I perfected the Church of god.
 * But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and 10
 his grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but
 I laboured more abundantlie then they al: yet
 not I, but the grace of God which is with me.
 * Wherefore, whether it were I, or they, so we 11
 preach, and so haue ye beleeued. * Nowe if it 12
 be preached, that Christ is risen from the dead,
 how say some among you, that there is no re-
 surrection of the dead? * For if there be no re- 13
 surrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen:
 * And if Christ be not risen, then is our prea- 14
 ching in vaine, and your faith is also vain. * And 15
 we are found also false witnesses of God: for
 we haue testified of God, that hee hath raised
 vp Christ: whome he hath not raised vp, if so
 the dead be not raised. * For if the deade 16
 be not raised, then is Christ not raised. * And if 17
 Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine: ye are
 yet in your sinnes, * And so they which are a 18
 sleep in Christ, are perished. * If in this life on- 19
 ly, ye haue hope in Christ, we are of all men
 the most miserable. * But now is Christ risen 20
 from the dead, and was made the first fruits of
 them that slept. * For since by man came 21
 death,

I CORINTHIANS.

- death, by man *came* also the resurrection of
 22 dead. * For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ
 23 shall all be made alive, * But every man in his
 owne order: the first fruites is Christ, afterward
 they that are of Christ, at his comming *shall rise*
 24 *again.* * Then *shall be* the ende, when he hath
 deliuered vp the kingdome to God, even the
 Father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all
 25 authoritie and power. * For he must reigne till
 26 he hath put all his enemies vnder his feet. * The
 27 last enemy that shalbe destroyed, is death. * For
 he hath put downe all things vnder his feet
 (And when he saith that all things are subdued
 to him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which
 28 did put downe all things vnder him.) * And
 when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then
 shall the Sonne also him selfe be subiect vnto
 him, that did subdue all things vnder him, the
 29 God may be all in all. * Else what shall we
 doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead
 rise not at all, why are they then baptized for
 30 dead? * Why are we also in ieopardie every
 31 houre? * By our reioycing which I haue in Christ
 32 Iesus our Lord, I die daily. * If I have fought
 with beastes at Ephesus after the manner of
 men, what aduantage it me, if the dead
 not raised vp? let vs eate and drinke: for
 33 morow we shall die. * Be not deceiued by
 34 speakings corrupt good manners. * Awake
live righteouslie, and sinne not: for some haue
 not the knowledge of God, I speake to
 35 your shame. * But some man will say,

CHAP. XV.

of the deade raised vp? and with what bodie
 come they foorth? * O soole, that which thou 36
 sowest, is not quickened, except it die: * And 37
 that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that
 bodie that shalbe, but bare corne as it falleth, of
 wheate, or of some other. * But God giueth it 38
 a bodie at his pleasure, euen to euery seede his
 owne bodie. * All flesh is not the same flesh, 39
 but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh
 of beastes, and another of fishes, and another of
 birdes. * There are also heavenly bodies, and 40
 earthly bodies: but the glorie of the heauenlie
 is one, and *the glory* of the earthly is another.
 * There is another glorie of the Sunne, and a 41
 another glorie of the Moone, and another glory
 of the starres: for one starre differeth from *another*
 starre in glorie. * So also is the resurrection 42
 of the deade. *The body* is sown in corruption,
 and is raised in incorruption. * It is sown in 43
 dishonour, and is raised in glorie: it is sown in
 weakness, and is raised in power. * It is sown 44
 a naturall bodie, and is raised a spirituall bodie:
 there is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall
 bodie. * As it is also written, The first man A. 45
 was made a liuing soule: and the last A.
 was made a quickning Spirit. * Howbeit 46
 that was not first which is spirituall: but that
 which is naturall, and afterward that which is
 spirituall. * The first man is of the earth, earth- 47
 ly: the second man is of the Lorde from hea-
 uen. * As is the earth, such are they that are 48
 earthly: and as is the heauenlie, such are they
 also

I. CORINTHIANS

47 also that are heavenly. * And as we have borne
 the image of the earthly, so shall we bear
 48 the image of the heavenly. * This say I, brethren,
 that flesh and blood cannot inherite the king-
 dome of God, neither doeth corruption inher-
 49 ite incorruption. * Behold, I shew you a secret
 thing, we shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be
 50 changed. * In a moment, in the twinkling of
 an eye at the last trumpet: for the trumpet shall
 51 blow, and the dead shall be raised vp incorruptible,
 & we shall be changed. * For this corruptible must
 52 put on incorruption, & this mortal must put on
 immortality. * So when this incorruptible hath
 53 put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put
 on immortality, then shall be brought to pass
 the saying that is written, Death is swallowed
 54 vp into victorie. * O death, where is thy sting?
 55 O grave, where is thy victorie? * The sting of
 death is sinne: and the strength of sinne is the
 56 Lawe. * But thanks be vnto God which hath
 57 giuen vs victorie thorough our Lorde Iesus
 58 Christ. * Therefore my beloved brethren, be
 ye stedfast, vnmoueable, abundant alwaies in
 the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know
 that your labour is not in vaine in the
 Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Concerning the gathering for the Saints, as
 I have ordeined in the Churches of Gala-
 2 tia, so doe yee also. * Every first day of the
 weeke, let every one of you put aside by him-
 selfe, and lay vp as God hath prospered him,

CHAP. XVI.

There be no gathering when I come.
 And when I am come, whomeſoeuer ye ſhall
 ſee by letters, them wil I ſend to bring your
 ſoules vnto Hieruſalem. * And if it be meet
 that I goe alſo, they ſhall goe with mee. * Now
 I will come vnto you, after I haue gone thro-
 ugh Macedonia (for I will paſſe through Ma-
 cedonia) * And it may be that I will abide,
 ſome, or winter with you, that ye may bring me
 on my way whitherſoeper I go. * For I wil not
 be you now in my paſſage, but I truſt to abide
 ſomewhat with you, if the lord permit. * And I wil
 tarry at Ephesus vntill Pentecoſt. * For a great
 doore and effectuaſſ is opened vnto mee: and
 there are many aduerſaries. * Now if Timothe-
 ſ come, ſee that hee be without feare with
 you for hee worketh the worke of the Lord,
 even as I doe. * Let no man therefore deſpiſe
 him but conuey him ſooth in peace, that hee
 may come vnto me: for I looke for him with
 the brethren. * As touching our brother Apollos,
 I greatly deſired him, to come vnto you with the
 brethren: but his mind was not at all to come at
 this time: howbeit he will come when he ſhall
 haue conuenient time. * Watch ye: ſtand faſt
 in the faith: quite you like men, and be ſtrong.
 * Let all your thinges be done in loue. * Now
 brethren, I beſeech you (ye know the houſe of
 Stephanas, that it is the firſt fruites of Achaia,
 and that they haue giuen themſelues to mini-
 ſter vnto the Saintes) * That ye be obedient
 vnto ſuch, and to all that helpe with vs

I. CORINTHIANS

17 and labour. * I am glad of the coming of
Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, for
18 they haue supplied the want of you. * For they
haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknow-
19 ledge therefore such men. * The Churches of
Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla, with the
Church that is in their house, salute you gra-
20 ly in the Lord. * All the brethren greet you.
Greete yee one another with an holy kiss.
21 * The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne
22 hande. * If any man loue not the Lord Iesus
Christ, let him be had in execratiō maran-atha.
23 * The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with
24 you. * My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus,
Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, writ-
ten from Philippi, and sent by Stephanas,
and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, & Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPI- STLE OF PAUL TO the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

1 **P**AUL an Apostle of I E S U S
CHRIST, by the wil of God,
and our brother Timotheus, to
the Church of God, which is at
Corinthus with all the Saintes,
2 which are in al Achaia: * Grace *be* with you, and
peace from God our Father, and from the Lord
3 Iesus Christ. * Blessed *be* God, even the Father

CHAPTER I.

of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies,
 & the God of all comfort, * Which comforteth 4
 vs in all our tribulation, that wee may be able
 to comfort them which are in any affliction by
 the comfort wherewith we our selues are com-
 forted of God. * For as the sufferings of Christ 5
 abound in vs, so our consolation aboundeth
 through Christ. * And whether we be afflicted, 6
 is for your consolation and saluation, which
 is wrought in the induring of the same suffer-
 ings, which we also suffer: or whether wee be
 comforted, *it is* for your consolation and sal-
 uation. * And our hope is stedfast concerning 7
 you, in as much as wee knowe that as yee are
 partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be* also of
 the consolation. * For brethren, we would not 8
 haue you ignorant of our affliction, which
 came vnto vs in Asia, howe wee were pressed
 out of measure passing strength so that we al-
 together doubted, euen of life. * Yea, we recei- 9
 ued the sentence of death in our selues, because
 we should not trust in our selues, but in God,
 which raiseth the dead. * Who deliuered 10
 vs from so great a death, and doeth deliuer vs:
 in whome we trust, that yet hereafter hee will
 deliuer vs, * So that yee labour together in 11
 prayer for vs, that for the gift bestowed vpon
 vs for many, thanks may be giuen by many
 persons for vs. * For our reioycing is this, the 12
 testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie
 and godly purenes, *and not* in fleshly wisdom,
 but by the grace of God we haue had our con-

II CORINTHIANS.

- uersation in the worlde, and most of all to you
13 wardes. * For we write none other things vnto
 you, then that ye reade, or else that ye acknow-
 ledge, and I trust yee shall acknowledge vnto
14 the ende. * Euen as ye haue acknowledged in
 partly, that we are your reloycing, euen as ye
15 are ours, in the day of our Lord Iesus. * And in
 this confidence was I minded first to come vnto
 to you, that ye might haue had a double grace,
16 * And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to
 come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and
17 to be led forth to ward Iudea of you. * When
 I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnesse
 or minde I those things which I minde, accord-
 ing to the flesh, that with me should be, Yea,
18 yea, and Nay, nay? * Yea, God is faithfull, that
 our word toward you was not Yea, and Nay.
19 * For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was
 preached among you by vs, *that is* by me, & Ste-
 uanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay
20 but in him it was yea. * For all the promises of
 God in him are Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto
21 to the glorie of God through vs. * And it is
 God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ,
22 and hath anointed vs. * Who hath also sealed
 vs, and hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in
23 our heartes. * Nowe, I call God for a record
 vnto my soule, that to spare you, I came not
24 yet vnto Corinthus. * Not that we haue do-
 minion ouer your faith, but wee are helpers of
 your ioy: for by faith ye stand.

C H A P.

CHAP. II.

I determined thus in my selfe, that I
 would not come againe to you in heaumes.
 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that
 should make me glad, but the same which is
 made sorry by me? * And I wrote this same
 thing vnto you, lest when I came, I should take
 heauinesse of them, of whome I ought to re-
 ioyce: this confidence haue I in you all, that
 my ioy is the ioy of you all. * For in great af-
 fliction, and anguish of heart I wrote vnto you
 with many teares: not that ye should be made
 sorry, but that ye might perceiue the loue which
 I haue, specially vnto you. * And if any hath
 caused sorowe, the same hath not made me so-
 rry, but partly (least I should more charge *him*)
 you all. * It is sufficient vnto the same man, that
 he was rebuked of many. * So that nowe con-
 sidering ye ought rather to forgiue *him*, and
 comfort *him*, least the same should be swallow-
 ed vp with ouermuch heauinesse. * Wherefore,
 I pray you, that you would confirme your loue
 towards him * For this cause also did I write,
 that I might know the prooffe of you, whether
 you would be obedient in all thinges. * To
 whome ye forgiue any thing, I *forgiue* also: for
 truly if I forgave any thing to whō I forgave
 it, for your sakes *forgaue* I it in the sight of
 Christ, * Least Satan should circumvent vs: for
 we are not ignorant of his enterprises. * Fur-
 thermore, when I came to Troas to preach
 Christes Gospell, & a doore was opened vnto
 me of the Lord, * I had no rest in my spirit, be-

II. CORINTHIANS.

cause I founde not Titus my brother, but wrote
my leane of them, & went away into Macedo-
14 nia. * Nowe thanks be vnto God, which al-
wayes maketh vs to triumph in Christ, and ma-
keth manifest the sauour of his knowledge by
15 vs in euery place. * For we are vnto God the
sweete sauour of Christ, in them that are saved,
16 and in them which perill: * To the one we are
the sauour of death vnto death, & to the other
the sauour of life vnto life: & who is sufficient
17 for these thinges? * For we are not as many,
which make merchandise of the word of God:
but as of synceritie, but as of God in the sight
of God, speake we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 D Oe we begin to praise our selues againe?
neede we as some other, Epistles of recom-
mendation vnto you, or letters of recommen-
2 dation from you? * Ye are our epistle, written
in our hearts, which is vnderstande, and read
3 of all men, * In that ye are made manifest, to be
the epistle of Christ, ministred by vs, & written,
not with ynce, but with the spirit of the liuing
God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables
4 of the heart. * And such trust haue we through
5 Christ to God: * Not that we are sufficient of
our selues, to thinke any thing as of our selues,
6 but our sufficiencie is of God, * Who also has
made vs able ministers of the New Testament,
not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the let-
7 ter killeth, but the Spirit giueth life. * If the
the ministration of death written with let-

C H A P. III.

as in stones, was glorious, so that the
 children of Israel could not behold the face of
 Moses, for the glory of his countenance (which
 glory is done away). * How shall not the mini- 8
 stration of the Spirit be more glorious: * For if 9
 the ministerie of condemnation was glorious,
 much more doeth the ministration of righte-
 ousnes exceede in glory. * For euen that which 10
 was glorified, was not glorified in this point,
 as touching the exceeding glorie: * For 11
 if that which should be abolished, was glorious,
 much more shall that which remaineth, be glo-
 rious. * Seeing then that we haue such trust, we 12
 haue great boldnes of speech. * And we are not 13
 as Moses, which put a vaile vpon his face, that
 the children of Israel should not looke vnto
 the ende of that which should be abolished.
 * Therefore their mindes are hardened: for vn- 14
 til this day remaineth the same couering vn-
 taken away in the reading of the old Testa-
 ment, which vaile in Christ is put away. * But 15
 euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the
 vaile is laide ouer their hearts. * Neuerthelesse 16
 when their heart shalbe turned to the Lord, the
 vaile shalbe taken away. * Now the Lord is the 17
 Spirit, & where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is
 libertie. * But we all behold as in a mirrour the 18
 glory of the Lord with open face, & are changed
 into the same image, from glory to glorie,
 by the Spirit of the Lord.

C H A P. IIII.

Therefore, seeing that we haue this ministry, 19

II. CORINTHIANS.

as we haue receiued mercie, we faint not. * We
 haue cast from vs the clokes of shame, & walke
 not in craftinesse, neither handle we the word
 of God deceitfully: but in declaration of the
 truth we approue our selues to euery mans
 conscience in the sight of God. * If our Gospel
 be then hid, it is hid to them that are lost. * In
 whome the God of this worlde hath blinded
 the mindes, *that is* of the infidels, that the light
 of the glorious Gospell of Christ, which is the
 image of God, should not shine vnto the. * For
 we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the
 Lord, & our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.
 * For God that commanded the light to shine
 out of darknes, *is he* which hath shined in our
 heartes, to giue the light of the knowledge of
 the glory of God in the face of Iesus Christ.
 * But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels,
 that the excellencie of that power might be of
 God, and not of vs. * We are afflicted on every
 side, yet *are we* not in distresse: we are in doubt,
 but yet we despaire not. * *We are* persecuted,
 but not forsaken: cast down, but we perish not.
 * Euery where we beare about in our body the
 dying of the Lorde Iesus, that the life of Iesus
 might also be made manifest in our bodies. * For
 we which liue, are alwaies deliuered vnto death
 for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might
 be made manifest in our mortall flesh. * So then
 death worketh in vs, & life in you. * And because
 we haue the same spirit of faith according as it
 is written, I beleued, & therefore haue I spoken.

CHAP. V.

we also beleue, & therefore speake, *Knowing 14
that he which hath raised vp the Lorde Iesus,
shall raise vs vp also by Iesus. and shall set vs
with you. * For all things *are* for your sakes, 15
that that most plenteous grace by the thank-
giving of many, may redound to the praise of
God. * Therefore we faint not, but though our 16
outward man perish, yet the inward man is re-
newed daily. * For our light affliction which is 17
but for a moment, causeth vnto vs a farre most
excellēt & an eternal weight of glory: * While 18
we looke not on the things which are seene,
but on the things which are not seene: for the
things which are seene, *are* temporall but the
things which are not seene, *are* eternall.

CHAP. V.

For we know that if our earthly house of this 1
tabernacle be destroyed, we haue a building
of God, *that is*, an house not made with
hands, *but* eternall in the heauens. * For there- 2
fore we sigh, desiring to be clothed with our
house, which is from heauen: * Because that if 3
we be clothed, we shall not be found naked.
* For indeede we that are in this tabernacle, 4
sigh & are burdened, because we would not be
vnclothed, but would be clothed vpon, that
mortalitie might be swallowed vp of life. * And 5
he that hath created vs for this thing, is God,
who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the
Spirit. * Therefore we are alway bold, though 6
we knowe that whiles we are at home in the
body, we are absent from the Lorde. * For we 7
walke

II. CORINTHIANS.

walke by faith, & not by sight.) * Neuertheless, we are bolde, & lone rather to remoone out of the body, & to dwell with the Lord. * Wherefore also we couet, that both dwelling at home & remoouing frō home, we may be acceptable to him. * For we must all appeare before the iudgemēt seat of Christ, that euery man may receiue the things which are *done* in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or euill. * Knowing therefore that terme of the Lord, we perswade men, & we are made manifest vnto God, and I trust also that we are made manifest in your consciences. * For we praise not our selues againe vnto you, but giue you an occasion to reioyce of vs, that ye may haue *so answere* against them, which reioyce in the face, & not in the heart. * For whether we be out of our wit, *we are it* to God: or whether we be in our right minde, *we are it* vnto you. * For that loue of Christ constraineth vs, * because we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all, then were all dead, and he died for all, that they which liue, should not henceforth liue vnto themselves, but vnto him which died for them, & rose againe. * Wherefore, henceforth knowe we no man after the flesh, yea though we haue knowen Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more. * Therefore if any man be in Christ, let him be a new creature. Old things are passed away: beholde, all things are become new. * And al things are of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto him selfe by his

Christ,
 reuol
 concili
 their fi
 vs the
 as we
 did be
 Christo
 *For h
 knewe
 righte

SO w
 S you,
 vane.

accept
 oured
 behol

no oc
 ministr

all thi
 fers o
 necess

tumult
 by pu
 land

*By r
 by the
 hand,

by eu
 yet tru
 ing ar

C H A P. VI.

Christ, & hath giuen vnto vs the ministerie of
reconciliation. *For God was in Christ, and re- 19
conciled the world to him selfe, not imputing
their sinnes vnto them, and hath committed to
wise worde of reconciliation. * Nowe then 20
as we ambassadours for Christ: as though God
did beseech you through vs, we pray you in
Christes steade, that ye be reconciled to God.
*For he hath made him to be sinne for vs, which 21
knewe no sinne, that we shoulde be made the
righteousnes of God in him.

C H A P. VI.

SO we therefore, as workers together beseech 1
you, that ye receiue not the grace of God in
vaine. *For he saith I haue heard thee in a time 2
accepted, & in the day of saluation haue I suc-
coured thee: beholde now the accepted time,
beholde now the day of saluation. * We giue 3
no occasion of offence in any thing, that our
ministerie should not be reprehended. * But in 4
all things we approue our selues as the mini-
sters of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in
necessities, in distresses, *In stripes, in prisons, in 5
tumults, in labours, *By watchings, by fastings, 6
by puritie, by knowledge, by long suffering, by
kindnesse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,
*By the word of trueth, by the power of God, 7
by the armour of righteousness on the right
hand, & on the left, *By honour, & dishonour, 8
by euill report, and good report, as deceiuers, &
yet true: *As vnknownen, & yet knownen: as dy- 9
ing, and beholde, we liue: as chastened, and yet
not

II. CORINTHIANS.

not killed : * As sorowing, & yet alwayes reioy-
cing : as poore, & yet make many rich : as ha-
ving nothing, and yet possessing all things. * O
Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our
heart is made large. * Ye are not kept strait in
vs, but ye are kept straight in your owne bow-
els. * Nowe for the same recompence, I speake
as to my children, Be you also enlarged. * Be
not vnequally yoked with the infidels : for
what fellowshipp hath righteousness with vn-
righteousnesse? & what communion hath light
with darknes? * And what concord hath Christ
with Belial? or what part hath the beleener
with the infidel? * And what agreement hath
the Temple of God with idoles? for ye are the
Temple of the liuing God: as God hath said, I wil
dwel among them, and walke there: & I will
be their God, and they shall be my people.
* Wherefore come out from among them, and
separate your selues, saith the Lorde: and touch
none vncleane thing, & I wil receiue you. * And
I will be a Father vnto you, and ye shall be my
sonnes & daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

Seeing then we haue these promises, dearly
beloued, let vs cleanse our selues from all fil-
thinesse of the flesh and spirit. & finish our sancti-
fication in the feare of God. * Receiue vs: we
haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrup-
ted no man: we haue defrauded no man. * I
speake it not to your condemnation: for I haue
said before, that ye are in our hearts, to die and

CHAP. VII

met together. * I vse great boldnesse of speech
 toward you : I reioyce greatly in you : I am fil-
 led with comfort. & am exceeding ioyous in al
 our tribulation. * For when we were come in-
 to Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we
 were troubled on euery side, fightings without,
 & terrors within. * But God, that comforteth
 the ablest, comforted vs at the comming of Ti-
 mus : * And not by his comming only, but also
 by the consolation wherewith he was comfort-
 ed of you, when he tolde vs your great desire,
 your mourning, your seruēt mind to me ward,
 so that I reioyced much more. * For though I
 made you sorie with a letter, I repēt not, thogh
 I did repent: for I perceiue that the same epistle
 made you sorie, though *it were* but for a season.
 * I now reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that
 ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorowed god-
 ly, so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs. * For
 godly sorow causeth repentance vnto saluation,
 not to be repented of : but the worldly sorowe
 causeth death. * For behold, this thing that ye
 haue bene godly sorie, what great care it hath
 wrought in you ? yea, what clearing of your
 consciences ? yea, *what* indignation ? yea, *what* feare ?
 yea, *how* great desire ? yea, *what* zeale ? yea, *what*
 reuenge ? in all thinges ye haue shewed your
 consciences, that ye are pure in this matter. * Where-
 fore, though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for
 his cause that had done the wrong, neither for
 his cause that had the iniurie, but that our care
 toward you in the sight of God might appeare
 vnto

II. CORINTHIANS.

- 23 vnto you. * Therefore we were comforted, be-
cause ye were comforted: but rather we reioy-
ced much more for the ioy of Titus, because
24 his spirit was refreshed by you all. * For if that
I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue
not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto
you all things in trueth, euen so our boasting
25 vnto Titus was true, * And his inward affection
is more abundant toward you, whē he remem-
bereth the obedience of you all, & howe with
26 feare and trembling ye receiued him. * I reioyce
therefore that I may put my confidence in you
in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

- 1 **W**E do you also so wit, brethrē, of the grace
of God bestowed vpon the Churches of
2 Macedonia, * Because in great triall of affliction
their ioy abounded, & their most extreme po-
uertie abounded vnto their rich liberalitie. * For
3 to *their* power (I beare record) yea, and beyond
4 their power, they were willing, * And prayed
vs with great instance that we would receiue
the grace and fellowshipp of the ministering
5 which is toward the Saints. * And *this they did*,
not as we looked for: but gaue their owne
selues, first to the Lorde, & *after* vnto vs by the
6 will of God, * That we should exhort Titus,
that as he had begunne, so he would also ac-
7 plish the same grace among you also. * There-
fore, as ye abounde in euery thing, in faith and
word, & knowledge, and in all diligence, and in
your loue towards vs, *euen so* see that ye abound

in this grace also. * This say I not by commandment, but because of the diligence of others: therefore prooue I the naturalnes of your loue. * For ye knowe the grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that he being rich, for your sakes became poore, that ye through his pouertie might be made rich. * And I shewe *my* minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begonne not to do onely, but also to will a yere agoe. * Now therefore persourme to doe it also, that ~~as there was~~ a readinesse to will, euen so ye may persourme it of that which ye haue. * For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, & not according to that he hath not. * Neither ~~is it~~ that other men should be eased, & you grieved: but vpon like condition, at this time your aboundance supply-
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17
 18
 19
 20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100
 101
 102
 103
 104
 105
 106
 107
 108
 109
 110
 111
 112
 113
 114
 115
 116
 117
 118
 119
 120
 121
 122
 123
 124
 125
 126
 127
 128
 129
 130
 131
 132
 133
 134
 135
 136
 137
 138
 139
 140
 141
 142
 143
 144
 145
 146
 147
 148
 149
 150
 151
 152
 153
 154
 155
 156
 157
 158
 159
 160
 161
 162
 163
 164
 165
 166
 167
 168
 169
 170
 171
 172
 173
 174
 175
 176
 177
 178
 179
 180
 181
 182
 183
 184
 185
 186
 187
 188
 189
 190
 191
 192
 193
 194
 195
 196
 197
 198
 199
 200
 201
 202
 203
 204
 205
 206
 207
 208
 209
 210
 211
 212
 213
 214
 215
 216
 217
 218
 219
 220
 221
 222
 223
 224
 225
 226
 227
 228
 229
 230
 231
 232
 233
 234
 235
 236
 237
 238
 239
 240
 241
 242
 243
 244
 245
 246
 247
 248
 249
 250
 251
 252
 253
 254
 255
 256
 257
 258
 259
 260
 261
 262
 263
 264
 265
 266
 267
 268
 269
 270
 271
 272
 273
 274
 275
 276
 277
 278
 279
 280
 281
 282
 283
 284
 285
 286
 287
 288
 289
 290
 291
 292
 293
 294
 295
 296
 297
 298
 299
 300
 301
 302
 303
 304
 305
 306
 307
 308
 309
 310
 311
 312
 313
 314
 315
 316
 317
 318
 319
 320
 321
 322
 323
 324
 325
 326
 327
 328
 329
 330
 331
 332
 333
 334
 335
 336
 337
 338
 339
 340
 341
 342
 343
 344
 345
 346
 347
 348
 349
 350
 351
 352
 353
 354
 355
 356
 357
 358
 359
 360
 361
 362
 363
 364
 365
 366
 367
 368
 369
 370
 371
 372
 373
 374
 375
 376
 377
 378
 379
 380
 381
 382
 383
 384
 385
 386
 387
 388
 389
 390
 391
 392
 393
 394
 395
 396
 397
 398
 399
 400
 401
 402
 403
 404
 405
 406
 407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525
 526
 527
 528
 529
 530
 531
 532
 533
 534
 535
 536
 537
 538
 539
 540
 541
 542
 543
 544
 545
 546
 547
 548
 549
 550
 551
 552
 553
 554
 555
 556
 557
 558
 559
 560
 561
 562
 563
 564
 565
 566
 567
 568
 569
 570
 571
 572
 573
 574
 575
 576
 577
 578
 579
 580
 581
 582
 583
 584
 585
 586
 587
 588
 589
 590
 591
 592
 593
 594
 595
 596
 597
 598
 599
 600
 601
 602
 603
 604
 605
 606
 607
 608
 609
 610
 611
 612
 613
 614
 615
 616
 617
 618
 619
 620
 621
 622
 623
 624
 625
 626
 627
 628
 629
 630
 631
 632
 633
 634
 635
 636
 637
 638
 639
 640
 641
 642
 643
 644
 645
 646
 647
 648
 649
 650
 651
 652
 653
 654
 655
 656
 657
 658
 659
 660
 661
 662
 663
 664
 665
 666
 667
 668
 669
 670
 671
 672
 673
 674
 675
 676
 677
 678
 679
 680
 681
 682
 683
 684
 685
 686
 687
 688
 689
 690
 691
 692
 693
 694
 695
 696
 697
 698
 699
 700
 701
 702
 703
 704
 705
 706
 707
 708
 709
 710
 711
 712
 713
 714
 715
 716
 717
 718
 719
 720
 721
 722
 723
 724
 725
 726
 727
 728
 729
 730
 731
 732
 733
 734
 735
 736
 737
 738
 739
 740
 741
 742
 743
 744
 745
 746
 747
 748
 749
 750
 751
 752
 753
 754
 755
 756
 757
 758
 759
 760
 761
 762
 763
 764
 765
 766
 767
 768
 769
 770
 771
 772
 773
 774
 775
 776
 777
 778
 779
 780
 781
 782
 783
 784
 785
 786
 787
 788
 789
 790
 791
 792
 793
 794
 795
 796
 797
 798
 799
 800
 801
 802
 803
 804
 805
 806
 807
 808
 809
 810
 811
 812
 813
 814
 815
 816
 817
 818
 819
 820
 821
 822
 823
 824
 825
 826
 827
 828
 829
 830
 831
 832
 833
 834
 835
 836
 837
 838
 839
 840
 841
 842
 843
 844
 845
 846
 847
 848
 849
 850
 851
 852
 853
 854
 855
 856
 857
 858
 859
 860
 861
 862
 863
 864
 865
 866
 867
 868
 869
 870
 871
 872
 873
 874
 875
 876
 877
 878
 879
 880
 881
 882
 883
 884
 885
 886
 887
 888
 889
 890
 891
 892
 893
 894
 895
 896
 897
 898
 899
 900
 901
 902
 903
 904
 905
 906
 907
 908
 909
 910
 911
 912
 913
 914
 915
 916
 917
 918
 919
 920
 921
 922
 923
 924
 925
 926
 927
 928
 929
 930
 931
 932
 933
 934
 935
 936
 937
 938
 939
 940
 941
 942
 943
 944
 945
 946
 947
 948
 949
 950
 951
 952
 953
 954
 955
 956
 957
 958
 959
 960
 961
 962
 963
 964
 965
 966
 967
 968
 969
 970
 971
 972
 973
 974
 975
 976
 977
 978
 979
 980
 981
 982
 983
 984
 985
 986
 987
 988
 989
 990
 991
 992
 993
 994
 995
 996
 997
 998
 999
 1000
 1001
 1002
 1003
 1004
 1005
 1006
 1007
 1008
 1009
 1010
 1011
 1012
 1013
 1014
 1015
 1016
 1017
 1018
 1019
 1020
 1021
 1022
 1023
 1024
 1025
 1026
 1027
 1028
 1029
 1030
 1031
 1032
 1033
 1034
 1035
 1036
 1037
 1038
 1039
 1040
 1041
 1042
 1043
 1044
 1045
 1046
 1047
 1048
 1049
 1050
 1051
 1052
 1053
 1054
 1055
 1056
 1057
 1058
 1059
 1060
 1061
 1062
 1063
 1064
 1065
 1066
 1067
 1068
 1069
 1070
 1071
 1072
 1073
 1074
 1075
 1076
 1077
 1078
 1079
 1080
 1081
 1082
 1083
 1084
 1085
 1086
 1087
 1088
 1089
 1090
 1091
 1092
 1093
 1094
 1095
 1096
 1097
 1098
 1099
 1100
 1101
 1102
 1103
 1104
 1105
 1106
 1107
 1108
 1109
 1110
 1111
 1112
 1113
 1114
 1115
 1116
 1117
 1118
 1119
 1120
 1121
 1122
 1123
 1124
 1125
 1126
 1127
 1128
 1129
 1130
 1131
 1132
 1133
 1134
 1135
 1136
 1137
 1138
 1139
 1140
 1141
 1142
 1143
 1144
 1145
 1146
 1147
 1148
 1149
 1150
 1151
 1152
 1153
 1154
 1155
 1156
 1157
 1158
 1159
 1160
 1161
 1162
 1163
 1164
 1165
 1166
 1167
 1168
 1169
 1170
 1171
 1172
 1173
 1174
 1175
 1176
 1177
 1178
 1179
 1180
 1181
 1182
 1183
 1184
 1185
 1186
 1187
 1188
 1189
 1190
 1191
 1192
 1193
 1194
 1195
 1196
 1197
 1198
 1199
 1200
 1201
 1202
 1203
 1204
 1205
 1206
 1207
 1208
 1209
 1210
 1211
 1212
 1213
 1214
 1215
 1216
 1217
 1218
 1219
 1220
 1221
 1222
 1223
 1224
 1225
 1226
 1227
 1228
 1229
 1230
 1231
 1232
 1233
 1234
 1235
 1236
 1237
 1238
 1239
 1240
 1241
 1242
 1243
 1244
 1245
 1246
 1247
 1248
 1249
 1250
 1251
 1252
 1253
 1254
 1255
 1256
 1257
 1258
 1259
 1260
 1261
 1262
 1263
 1264
 1265
 1266
 1267
 1268
 1269
 1270
 1271
 1272
 1273
 1274
 1275
 1276
 1277
 1278
 1279
 1280
 1281
 1282
 1283
 1284
 1285
 1286
 1287
 1288
 1289
 1290
 1291
 1292
 1293
 1294
 1295
 1296
 1297
 1298
 1299
 1300
 1301
 1302
 1303
 1304
 1305
 1306
 1307
 1308
 1309
 1310
 1311
 1312
 1313
 1314
 1315
 1316
 1317
 1318
 1319
 1320
 1321
 1322
 1323
 1324
 1325
 1326
 1327
 1328
 1329
 1330
 1331
 1332
 1333
 1334
 1335
 1336
 1337
 1338
 1339
 1340
 1341
 1342
 1343
 1344
 1345
 1346
 1347
 1348
 1349
 1350
 1351
 1352
 1353
 1354
 1355
 1356
 1357
 1358
 1359
 1360
 1361
 1362
 1363
 1364
 1365
 1366
 1367
 1368
 1369
 1370
 1371
 1372
 1373
 1374
 1375
 1376
 1377
 1378
 1379
 1380
 1381
 1382
 1383
 1384
 1385
 1386
 1387
 1388
 1389
 1390
 1391
 1392
 1393
 1394
 1395
 1396
 1397
 1398
 1399
 1400
 1401
 1402
 1403
 1404
 1405
 1406
 1407
 1408
 1409
 1410
 1411
 1412
 1413
 1414
 1415
 1416
 1417
 1418
 1419
 1420
 1421
 1422
 1423
 1424
 1425
 1426
 1427
 1428
 1429
 1430
 1431
 1432
 1433
 1434
 1435
 1436
 1437
 1438
 1439
 1440
 1441
 1442
 1443
 1444
 1445
 1446
 1447
 1448
 1449
 1450
 1451
 1452
 1453
 1454
 1455
 1456
 1457
 1458
 1459
 1460
 1461
 1462
 1463
 1464
 1465
 1466
 1467
 1468
 1469
 1470
 1471
 1472
 1473

II. CORINTHIANS.

- 20 * Auoyding this that no man should blame vs
in this aboundance that is ministred by vs,
21 *Providing for honest things, not onely before
22 the Lorde, but also before men. * And we haue
sent with them our brother, whome we haue
oft times proued to be diligent in many things,
but now much more diligent, for the great co-
23 fidence, which *I haue* in you. * Whether *any doe*
enquire of Titus, *he is* my fellow and helper to
youward,; or of our brethren, they are messen-
gers of the Churches, *and* the glory of Christ.
24 * Wherefore shew toward them, & before the
Churches the prooffe of your loue, and of the
reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. IX.

- 1 **F**OR as touching the ministring to the Saints,
it is superfluous for me to write vnto you.
2 * For I know your readines of minde, whereof
I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedo-
nia, & say, that Achaia was prepared a yee re-
3 ago, and your zeale hath prouoked many. * Now
haue I sent the brethren lest our reioycing ouer
you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that ye
4 (as I haue said) be readie: *Least if they of Ma-
cedonia come with me & find you vnprepared,
we (that we may not say, you) should be asha-
5 med in this my constant boasting. * Where-
fore, I thought it necessary to exhort the bre-
thren to come before vnto you, and to finish
beneuolence appointed afore, that it might be
6 ready, *and come* as of beneuolence, and not as of
niggardinesse. * This yet remember, that he
which

which soweth sparingly, shall reape also sparingly, and he that soweth liberally, shall reape also liberally. * As euery man wilbeth in his heart, so let him giue, not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheereful giuer. * And 8
 God is able to make all grace to abounde towarde you, that ye alwaies hauing all sufficiency in all things, may abounde in euery good worke, * (As it is written, He hath sparred abroad and hath giuen to the poore: his beneuolence remaineth for euer. * Also he that findeth seed to the sower, will minister likewise bread for soode, and multiply your seed, and increase the frutes of your beneuolence.) * That on all parts ye may be made rich vnto all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thanks giuing vnto God. * For the ministracion of this service not onely supplieth the necessities of the Saintes, but also abundantly causeth many to giue thanks to God, * (Which by the experiment of this ministracion praise God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospell of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men) * And in their prayer for you, so long alter you greatlie, for the abundant grace of God in you. * Thanks therefore be vnto God for his vnspeakeable gift. 19

C H A P. X

NOwe I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenes, and gentlenes of Christ, which when I am present among you, am hafe, but am bolde towarde you being absent: * And 3

II. CORINTHIANS.

- this* I require you, that I neede not to be bolde when I am present, with that same confidence, wherewith I thinke to be bolde against some, which esteeme vs as though we walked according to the flesh. * Nevertheless, though wee walke in the flesh, yet we doe not warte after the flesh, * (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mightie through God, to cast downe holdes) * Casting downe the imaginations, and every high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie every thought to the obedience of Christ. * And hauing readie the vengeance against all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. * Looke ye on things after the appearance? If any man trust in him selfe that hee is Christes, let him consider this againe of himselfe, that as hee is Christes, then so are wee Christes. * For though I shoulde boast somewhat more of our authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction, I shoulde haue no shame.
- 9 * *This I say* that I may not seeme as it were
 10 to feare you with letters. * For the letters, saith hee, are sore and strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speech is of no value. * Let such one thinke this, that such as we are in worde, by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be* also in deede, when we are present. * For we dare not make our selues of the number, or to compare our selues to them, which praise themselves: but they vnder

C H A P. XL.

stand not that they measure themselves with themselves, & compare themselves with themselves. * But wee will not reioyce of things, which are not within *our* measure, but according to the measure of the line, whereof God hath distributed vnto vs a measure to attaine euen vnto you. * For we stretch not our selues beyond *our* measure, as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you alio haue we come *in preaching* the Gospell of Christ, * Not boasting of things which are without *our* measure: *that is*, of other mens labours & we hope, when your faith shall increase, to be magnified by you according to our line abundantly, * And to preach the Gospell in those regions which are beyond you, not to reioice in another mans line, *that is*, in the things that are prepared already. * But let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord. * For he that praiseth himselfe, is not allowed, but he whom the Lord praiseth.

C H A P. XI.

Would to God, ye could suffer a litle my foolishnes, and in deed, ye suffer me. * For I am ielous ouer you, with godly ielousie: for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you as a pure virgin to Christ: * But I feare least as the serpent beguiled Eue through his subtiltie, so your mindes shoulde be corrupt from the simplicitie that is in Christ. * For if he that commeth, preacherh another Iesus whom we haue not preached: or if ye receive another spirit whom ye haue not receiued; either ano-

II. CORINTHIANS.

- ther Gospell which ye haue not receined, yee
5 might well haue suffered *him*. * Verely I sup-
 pose that I was not inferiour to the very chiefe
6 Apostles. * And though *I be* rude in speaking,
 yet *I am* not *so* in knowledge, but among you
 we haue bene made manifest to the vtmost, in
7 all things. * Haue I committed an offence, be-
 cause I abased my selfe, that yee might be exal-
 ted, & because I preached to you the Gospell of
8 God freely? * I robbed other Churches, & took
9 wages of *them* to doe you seruiue. * And when
 I was present with you, & had need, I was not
 slouthful to the hinderance of any man: for that
 which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which
 came from Macedonia, supplied, & in al things
 I kept & will keepe my selfe, that I should not
10 be grienous to you. * The trueth of Christ is in
 mee, that this reioyceing shall not bee shut vp
11 against me in the regions of Achaia: * Where-
 fore? because I loue you not? God knoweth.
12 * But what I doe, that will I do: that I may cut
 away occasion from them which desire occasi-
 on, that they might be found like vnto vs in
 that wherein they reioyce. * For such false Apo-
13 stles are deceitfull workers, & transforme them
 selues into the Apostles of Christ. * And no
14 manell for Satā himself is transformed into an
 Angell of light. * Therefore it is no great thing,
15 though his ministers transforme themselues, as
 though *they were* the ministers of righteousness,
 whose end shall be according to their workes.
16 * I say againe, let no man thinke, that I am soo-

CHAP. XI.

him, or els take me euen as a foole, that I also
 may boast my selfe a litle. * That I speake, I speake 17
 it not after the Lord: but as *it were* foolishly, in
 this *my* great boasting. * Seeing that many re- 18
 ioyce after the flesh, I will reioyce also, * For ye 19
 suffer fooles gladlie, because that yee are wise.
 * For ye suffer, euen if a man bring you into 20
 bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take
 your goods, if a man exalt himselfe, if a man
 smite you on the face. * I speake as concerning 21
 the reproch: as though that we had bene weak:
 but wherein any man is bold (I speake foolishly)
 I am bold also. * They are Hebrewes, so am I: 22
 they are Israelites, so am I: they are the seede
 of Abraham, so am I: * They are the ministers 23
 of Christ (I speake as a foole) I am more: in la-
 bours more abundant: in stripes aboue mea-
 sure: in prison more plenteouslie: in death oft.
 * Of the Iewes 5. times receiued I fourtie stripes 24
 save one. * I was thrise beaten with rods: I was 25
 once stoned: I suffered thrise shipwrack: night &
 day haue I bene in the deepe sea. * In iournyng 26
 I was often, in perils of waters, in perils of rob-
 bers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils
 among the Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in
 perils in wildernes, in perils in the sea, in perils
 among false brethren, * In wearines & painful- 27
 nes, in watching often, in hunger and thirst, in
 fastings often. in cold and nakednes. * Beside 28
 the things which are outward, I am combred
 daily. *and* haue the care of all the Churches.
 * Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is 29

II. CORINTHIANS.

- 20 offended, and I burne not? * If I must needs
 21 ioyce, I will reioyce of mine infirmities. * The
 God, even the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
 which is blessed for euermore, knoweth that
 22 I lie not. * In Damascus the gouernour of the peo-
 ple vnder king Aretas, laid watch in the citie of
 the Damascens, and would haue caught me.
 23 * But at a window was I let downe in a basket
 through the wall and escaped his handles.

CHAP. XII.

- IT is not expedient for me, no doubt, to re-
 ioyce. for I will come to visions and reuel-
 ations of the Lord. * I know a man in Christ a-
 boue fourteene yeres agoe, (whether he was
 in the bodie, I can not tell, or out of the body,
 I can not tell; God knoweth) which was taken
 vp into the third heauen. * And I know such a
 man (whether in the bodie, or out of the body,
 I can not tell: God knoweth) * Howe that he
 was taken vp into paradise, and heard wordes
 which can not be spoken, which are not possi-
 ble for man to vtter. * Of such a man will I re-
 ioyce: of my selfe will I not reioyce, except
 6 be of mine infirmities. * For though I would
 reioyce, I should not be a foole: for I will say
 truth, but I reframe, least any man should think
 of me abuse that he seeth in me, or that he
 7 heareth of me. * And lest I should be exalted
 out of measure through the abundance of reuel-
 ations, there was giuen vnto me a prick in the
 flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, be-
 cause I should not be exalted out of measure.

CHAP. XII.

For this thing I besought the Lord thrise, that
 it might depart from me. * And hee saide vnto
 me, My grace is sufficient for thee; for my power
 is made perfect through weakenes. Very gladlie
 therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmi-
 ties, that the power of Christ may dwell in
 me. * Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in
 reproches in necessities, in persecutions, in an-
 guish for Chistes sake: for when I am weake,
 then am I strong. * I was a foole to boast my
 selfe, ye haue compelled me: for I ought to
 haue bene commended of you: for in nothing
 was I inferiour to the very chiefe Apostles,
 though I be nothing, * The signes of an Apo-
 stle were wrought among you with all pati-
 ence, with signes & wonders, & great works,
 * For what is it wherein ye were inferiours vnto
 other Churches, except that I haue not bene
 slothfull to your hinderance? forgiue me this
 wrong. * Behold, the third time I am ready to
 come vnto you, and yet will I not be slothfull
 to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but
 you: for the children ought not to lay vp for
 the fathers, but the fathers for the children.
 * And I will most gladlie bestow, and will be
 bestowed for your soules: though the more I
 loue you the lesse I am loved. * But be it that I
 charged you not, yet forasmuch as I was crafty,
 I trooke you with guile. * Did I pill you by any
 of them whom I sent vnto you? * I haue desired
 Titus, and with him I haue sent a brother: did
 I thus pill you of any thing? walked we not in

II. CORINTHIANS.

the selfe same spirit ~~walked we not~~ in the same
 19 steppes? *Again, thinke ye that we excuse our
 selues vnto you? we speak before god in Christ.
 But ~~we doe~~ all things, dearely beloved, for your
 20 edifying. *For I feare lest when I come, I shall
 not find you such as I would: & that I shall be
 found vnto you such as ye would not, & least
 there be strife, enuying, wrath, contentions, back-
 21 bitings, whisperings, swellings, & discord. *
 I feare least when I come againe, my God abase
 me among you, and I shall bewaile manie of
 them which haue sinned already, & haue not re-
 22 pented of the vncleannes, and fornication, and
 wantonnes, which they haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 **L**oe this is the thirde time that I come vnto
 you. In the mouth of two or three witnesseth
 that euery word stand. *I told you before, & tel
 2 you before: as though I had bin present the second
 time, so write I now being absent to the which
 heretofore haue sinned, & to all others, that if I
 come againe, I will not spare. *Seeing that yee
 3 seeke experience of Christ, that speaketh in me,
 which toward you is not weake, but is mighty
 in you. *For though he was crucified concern-
 4 ing his infirmitie: yet liueth he through the
 power of God. And we no doubt are weake in
 him, but we shall liue with him, through the
 5 power of God toward you. *Prove your selues
 whether yee are in the faith: examine your
 6 selues: know ye not your owne selues, howe
 that Iesus Christ is in you, except ye be repro-
 7 bated

CHAP. XIII.

But I trust that ye shall know that wee
 are not reprobates. * Now I pray vnto god that
 we do none euill, not that we should seeme ap-
 proved, but that ye should doe that which is
 best: though we be as reprobates. * For we
 do not doe any thing against the truth, but for
 the truth. * For we are glad when we are weak,
 that ye are strong: this also we wish for, *even*
 your perfection. * Therefore write I these things
 being absent, least when I am present, I should
 be sharpest, according to the power which
 the Lorde hath giuen me, to edification, & not
 to destruction. * Finally brethren, fare ye well:
 be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one mind:
 be in peace, & the God of lōue and peace shall
 be with you. * Greet one another with an holy
 kisse. Al the Saints salute you. * The grace of our
 Lord Iesus Christ, & the loue of God, & the co-
 munion of the holy ghost be with you al, Amen.
 * The seconde *Epistle* to the Corinthians,
 written from Philippi, a citie in Macedonia,
 and sent by Titus and Lucas.

THE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAUL TO the Galatians.

CHAP. I.

PAUL an Apostle (not of men, nei-
 ther by man, but by Iesus Christ, &
 God the Father which hath raised
 him from the dead) * And all the
 brethren which are with me, vnto
 the

TO THE GALATIANS.

- 3** the Churches of Galatia. * Grace be with you, and
 peace from God the Father, and from our Lord
4 Iesus Christ, * Which gaue him selfe for our
 sinnes, that he might deliuer vs from this pre-
 sent euill world, according to the will of God
5 even our father, * To whome be glorie for ever
6 and ever, Amen. * I marueile that ye are so soon
 remooued away vnto another Gospell, from
 him that had called you in the grace of Christ,
7 * Which is not another Gospell, saue that there
 be some which trouble you, and intend to per-
8 uert the Gospell of Christ. * But though that we
 or an Angel fro heauen preach vnto you other-
 wise, then that which wee haue preached vnto
9 you, let him be accursed. * As we said before, I
 say I now againe, If any man preach vnto you
 otherwise, then that ye haue receined, let him be
10 accursed. * For now preach I mans doctrine, or
 Gods? or go I about to please men? for if I should
 yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ.
11 * Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospell
 which was preached of me, was not after man.
12 * For neither receined I it of man, neither was
 I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus
13 Christ. * For ye haue heard of my constitution
 in time past, in the Iewish religion, how that
 I persecuted the Church of God extremely,
14 and wasted it. * And profited in the Iewish re-
 ligion aboue many of my companions of
 mine owne nation, and was much more
15 bold of the traditions of my fathers. * But when

CHAP. II.

bleſed God (which had ſeperated me from
 my mothers wombe, & called *me* by his grace).
 * To reuile his ſonne in mee, that I ſhould
 preach him among the Gentiles, immediately I
 communicated not with fleſh & blood: * Nei
 ther came I againe to Hieruſalem to the which
 were Apoſtles before me, but I went into Ara
 bia & turned again into Damafcus. * Then after
 three yerres I came again to Hieruſalem to viſit
 Peter & abode with him ſilteene daies. * And
 none other of the Apoſtles ſaw I, ſaue Iames the
 Lords brother. * Now the things which I write
 vnto you, beholde, *I wittnes* before God, that I
 lie not. * After that I went into the coaſtes of
 Syria & Cilicia: for I was vnknownen by face
 vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in
 Chariſt. * But they had hearde onely *ſome ſay*,
 hee which persecuted vs in time paſt nowe
 preacheth the faith which before hee deſtroi
 ed. * And they glorified God for mee.

CHAP. II.

Then ſourteene yeeres after, I went vp again
 to Hieruſalem with Barnabas, & tooke with
 me Titus alſo. * And I went vp by reuelation,
 and declared vnto them that Goſpel, which I
 preach among the Gentiles, but particularly to
 them that were the chiefe, leaſt by any meanes
 I ſhould runne, or had ruine in vaine. * But nei
 ther yet Titus which was with me, though hee
 were a Grecian, was compelled to be circūciſed,
 * ſo wit for the falſe brethren which were cra
 ſieſent in, & crept in priuillie to ſpie out our
 libe-

TO THE GALATHIANS.

- libertie, which we haue in Christ Iesus, that they
5 might bring vs into bondage. * I o whome we
 gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that
 the truth of the Gospel might continue with
6 you. * But by them which seemed to be great, *I*
was not taught (whatsoever they were in time
 passed, I am nothing the better: God accepteth
 no mans person) for they that are the chiefe, did
7 adde nothing to me *about that I had*. * But con-
 trariwise, when they sawe that the Gospel ouer
 the vncircumcision was committed vnto mee,
 as *the Gospel* ouer the Circumcision, was vnto
8 Peter: * (For he that was mightie by Peter in
 the Apostleship ouer the circumcision, was also
9 mightie by me toward the Gentiles) * And whe
 Iames, & Cephas, and Iohn, knew of the grace
 that was giuen vnto me, which are counted to
 be pillars, they gaue to me and to Barnabas the
 right hands of fellowship that we *shoul'd preach*
 vnto the Gentiles, & they vnto the Circumci-
10 sion, * *Warning* onely that we should remem-
 ber the poore: which thing also I was diligent
11 to doe. * And when Peter was come to Antio-
 chia, I withstood him to his face: for he was
12 to be condemned. * For before that certaine
 came from Iames, he ate with the Gentiles: but
 when they were come, he withdrew and sepa-
 rated him selfe, fearing them which were of the
13 Circumcision. * And the other Iewes plaied
 the hypocrites likewise with him, insomuch
 that Barnabas was led away with them by
14 that their hipocritie. * But when I sawe, that

CHAP. II.

they went not the right way to the truth of the Gospel, I said vnto Peter before all men, If thou being a Iew, liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes? * We *which are Iewes* 15
by nature, & not sinners of the Gentiles, * Know 16
that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we I say haue beleened in Iesus Christ, that wee might be iustified by the faith of Christ, & not by the workes of the Law, because that by the workes of the Lawe no flesh shall be iustified.
* If then while we seeke to be made righteous 17
by Christ, wee our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sinne? God forbid. * For if I build again the things that I haue 18
destroied, I make my selfe a trespasser. * For I 19
through the Law am dead to the Lawe, that I might liue vnto God. * I am crucified with 20
Christ, but I liue, yet not I any more, but Christ lieth in me: and in that that I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, who hath loued me, & giuen himselfe for mee.
* I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if 21
righteousnes be by the Lawe, then Christ died without a cause.

CHAP. III.

O Foolish Galathians, who hath bewitched 1
you, that ye should not obey the trueth, to whome Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, and among you crucified? * This on- 2
ly would I learne of you, Received ye the Spi-
rit

TO THE GALATHIANS.

- rit by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing
3 of faith *preached*? * Are yee so foolish, that after
 ye haue begun in the Spirit, yee would now be
4 made perfect by the flesh? * Have ye suffered so
 many things in vain? if so be it be euen in vain.
5 * He therefore that ministrETH to you the Spi-
 rit, & worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it*
 through the workes of the Lawe, or by the hea-
6 ring of faith *preached*? * Yea rather as Abraham
 beleued god, & it was imputed to him for righ-
7 teousnes. * Know ye therefore, that they which
 are of faith, the same are the children of Abrah-
8 * For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would
 iustifie the Gentiles through faith, preached be-
 fore the Gospel vnto Abraham. *saying*, In thee
9 shall all the Gentiles be blessed. * So then they
 which be of faith, are blessed with faithful A-
10 braham. * For as many as are of the workes of
 the Law, are vnder the curse: for it is written
 Cursed is every man that continueth not in all
 things, which are writtten in the booke of the
11 Law, to doe them. * And that no man is iusti-
 fied by the Law in the sight of God it is euiden-
12 tiall for the iust shall liue by faith. * And the Law
 is not of faith: but the man that shall do
13 those thinges, shall liue in them. * Christ
 redeemed vs from the curse of the Law
 made a curse for vs (for it is written, Cursed
14 is every one that hangeth on tree) * That the ble-
 sing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles
 through Christ Iesus, that we might receive the
15 promise of the Spirit through faith. * For

CHAP. III.

Then, I speake as men doe: Though it be but a
 mans covenants, when it is confirmed, yet no
 man doth abrogate it, or addeth any thing there-
 to. Now to Abraham & his seede were the pro-
 mises made, He saith not, And to the seedes, as
 speaking of many: but, And to thy seede, as of
 one, which is Christ. * And this I say, that the
 covenant that was confirmed afore of God in
 respect of Christ, the Lawe which was foure
 hundredth & thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanul,
 that it should make the promise of none effect.
 * For if the inheritance be of the Lawe, it is no
 more by the promes, but god gaue it freely vn-
 to Abraham by promise. * Wherefore then ser-
 ued the Lawe? It was added because of the tras-
 gressions til the seede came vnto the which the
 promise was made: & it was ordained by An-
 gels in the hand of a Mediatour. * Now a Me-
 diatour is not a Mediatour of one: but God is
 one. * Is the Lawe then against the promise of
 God? God forbid: for if there had beene a Lawe
 giuen which could haue given life, surely right-
 eousnes should haue beene by the Lawe. * But
 the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne,
 that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ
 should be giuen to them that beleue. * But be-
 fore faith came, we were kept vnder the Lawe,
 as vnder a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith,
 which should afterward be reueiled. * Where-
 fore the Lawe was our schoolmaster to bring
 vs to Christ, that wee might be made righte-
 ous by faith. * But after that faith is come,

TO THE GALATHIANS.

26 we are no longer vnder a schoolemaſter. * For
 yee are all the ſonnes of God by faith in Chriſt
 27 Ieſus. * For all ye that are baptized into Chriſt,
 28 haue put on Chriſt. * There is neither Iewe
 nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor free:
 there is neither male nor female: for ye are all
 29 one in Chriſt Ieſus. * And if ye be Chriſtes, then
 are yee Abrahams ſeede, and heires by pro-
 miſe.

C H A P. IIII.

1 **T**HEN I ſay, that the heire as long as hee is a
 childe, diſcereth nothing from a ſervant,
 2 though he be Lord of all, * But is vnder tutours
 & gouernours, vntill the time appointed of the
 3 Father. * Euen ſo, wee when we were children,
 were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the
 4 world. * But whē the fulnes of time was come,
 God ſent forth his Sonne made of a woman,
 5 & made vnder the Lawe, * That hee might re-
 deeme them which were vnder the Lawe, that
 we might receiue the adoption of the ſonnes.
 6 * And became yee are ſonnes, God hath ſent
 forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts,
 7 which cryeth, Abba, Father. * Wherefore, thou
 art no more a ſervant, but a ſonne: now if thou
 be a ſonne, thou art alſo the heire of God thro-
 8 rough Chriſt. * But euen then, when ye knewe
 not God, yee did ſeruiſe vnto them, which by
 9 nature are not gods: * But now ſeeing ye know
 God, yea, rather are known of God, how turne
 ye again vnto impotent & beggerly rudiments,
 whereunto ye from the beginning, ye will be in
 bondage.

C H A P. III.

bondage againe? * Ye obserue daies, & moneths, 10
 & times, & yeeres. * I am in feare of you, least I 11
 be bestowed on you labour in vaine. * Be ye 12
 still: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beseech
 you ye haue not hurt me at all. * And ye know, 13
 how through infirmitie of the flesh I preached
 the Gospel vnto you at the first. * And the triall 14
 of me which was in my flesh, yee despised not,
 neither abhorred: but ye receined me as an An-
 gel of God, yea, as Christ Iesus. * What was the 15
 your ielicitie? for I beare you record, that if it
 had beene possible, ye would haue plucked out
 your owne eyes, & haue giuen them vnto mee.
 * Am I therefore become your enemie, because 16
 I tell you the trueth? * They are zealous ouer 17
 you amisse: yea, they would exclude you, that ye
 should altogether loue them. * But it is a good 18
 thing to loue earnestly alwaies in a good thing,
 & not onely when I am present with you. * My 19
 little children, of whome I trauaile in birth a-
 gaine, vntill Christ be formed in you. * And I 20
 would I were with you now, that I might chage
 my voice: for I am in dout of you. * Tell me, ye 21
 that will be vnder the Law, do ye not heare the
 Law? * For it is written, that Abraham had two 22
 sonnes, one by a seruant, & one by a free womā.
 * But hee which was of the seruant, was borne 23
 after the flesh: & hee which was of the free wo-
 man, was borne by promes. * By the which things 24
 another thing is meant: for these *meaners* are
 the two Testaments, the one which is Agar of
 mount Sina, which gendereth vnto bondage.

TO THE GALATHIANS.

- 25** * (For Agar or Sina is a mountain in Arabia, & it answereth to Hierusalem, which now is) and
26 she is in bondage with her children. * But Hierusalem, which is above, is free: which is the mother of vs all. * For it is written, Reioyce thou barren that bearest no children: break forth, & cry, thou that travailest not; for the desolate hath many more children, then shee which hath
28 an husband. * Therefore, brethren, we are after
29 the maner of Isaac, children of the promise. * But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that was borne after the spirit, even
30 so it is now. * But what saith the Scripture? Put out the servant and her sonnes: for the sonne of the servant shall not be heire with the sonne
31 of the free woman. * Then brethren, wee are not children of the servant, but of the free woman.

CHAP. V.

- 1** Stand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith
 Christ hath made vs free, & be not intangled
2 againe with the yoke of bondage. * Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if yee be circumcised,
3 Christ shall profite you nothing. * For I tell you againe to every man, which is circumcised, that
4 he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe. * Ye are abolished from Christ: whosoever are justified
5 by the Law, ye are fallen from grace. * For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness through faith. * For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, neither
6 circumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

CHAP. V.

* Ye did runne well: who did let you, that yee
 did not obey the trueth? * *It is not the perswa-*
son of him that calleth you. * A little leauen
 doth leauen the whole lumppe. * I haue trust in
 you through the Lord that ye wilbe none other-
 wise minded: but hee that troubleth you, shall
 beare *his* condemnatiō, who soeuer he be. * And
 brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe
 I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of
 the crosse abolished. * Would to God they
 were euen cut off, which doe disquiet you * For
 brethren, ye haue bene called vnto liberty: one-
 ly ye not *y^{ur}* libertie as an occasion vnto the
 flesh, but by loue serue one another. * For al the
 law is fulfilled in one word, which is this, Thou
 shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. * If yee
 bite & deuoure one another, take heede lest ye
 be consumed one of another. * The I say, Walk
 in the Spirit, & ye shall not fulfill the lustes of
 the flesh. * For the flesh lusteth against the Spi-
 rit, & the Spirit against the flesh: & these are cō-
 trarie one to the other, so that ye can not doe
 the same things that ye would. * And if ye be
 led by the Spirit, yee are not vnder the Lawe.
 * Moreouer the works of the flesh are manifest,
 which are adulterie, fornication, vncleannes,
 wantōnes, * idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate,
 emulations, wrath, contentions, seditions, here-
 sies, * Ennie, irurthers, drunkennes, gluttonie, &
 such like, wherof I tel you before, as I also haue
 tolde you before, that they which doe such
 things, shal not inherite the kingdome of God.

TO THE GALATHIANS.

26 we are no longer vnder a schoolemaſter. * For
 yee are all the ſonnes of God by faith in Chriſt
 27 Ieſus. * For all ye that are baptized into Chriſt,
 28 haue put on Chriſt. * There is neither Iewe
 nor Grecian: there is neither bond nor free:
 there is neither male nor female: for ye are all
 29 one in Chriſt Ieſus. * And if ye be Chriſtes, then
 are yee Abrahams ſeede, and heires by pro-
 miſe.

C H A P. IIII.

1 **T**hen I ſay, that the heire as long as hee is a
 2 childe, diſſereth nothing from a ſervant,
 3 though he be Lord of all, * But is vnder tutours
 & gouernours, vntill the time appointed of the
 4 Father. * Euen ſo, wee when we were children,
 5 were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the
 6 world. * But when the fulnes of time was come,
 7 God ſent forth his Sonne made of a woman,
 & made vnder the Lawe, * That hee might re-
 8 deeme them which were vnder the Lawe, that
 we might receiue the adoption of the ſonnes.
 9 * And becauſe yee are ſonnes, God hath ſent
 forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts,
 which cryeth, Abba, Father. * Wherefore, thou
 art no more a ſervant, but a ſonne: now if thou
 be a ſonne, thou art alſo the heire of God through
 Chriſt. * But euen then, when ye knewe
 not God, yee did ſeruiſe vnto them, which by
 nature are not gods: * But now ſeeing ye know
 God, yea, rather are knowne of God, how turne
 ye again vnto impotent & beggerly rudiments,
 whereunto as from the beginning, ye will be in
 bondage.

C H A P. III.

bondage againe? Ye obserue daies, & moneths, 10
 times, & yeeres. * I am in feare of you, least I 11
 have bestowed on you labour in vaine. * Be ye 12
 as I am euen as you: brethren, I beseech
 you ye haue not hurt me at all. * And ye know, 13
 how through infirmities of the flesh I preached
 the Gospel vnto you at the first. * And the triall 14
 of me which was in my flesh, yee despised not,
 neither abhorred: but ye receined me as an An-
 gel of God, yea, as Christ Iesus. * What was the 15
 your felicitie? for I beare you record, that if it
 had beene possible, ye would haue plucked out
 your owne eyes, & haue giuen them vnto mee.
 * Am I therefore become your enemy, because 16
 I tell you the truth? * They are zealous ouer 17
 you amisse: yea, they would exclude you, that ye
 should altogether loue them. * But it is a good 18
 thing to loue earnestly alwaies in a good thing,
 & not onely when I am present with you. * My 19
 little children, of whome I trauaile in birth a-
 gaine, vntill Christ be formed in you. * And I 20
 would I were with you now, that I might chāge
 my voice: for I am in dout of you. * Tell me, ye 21
 that wil be vnder the Law, do ye not heare the
 Law? * For it is written, that Abraham had two 22
 sonnes, one by a seruant, & one by a free womā.
 * But hee which was of the seruant, was borne 23
 after the flesh: & hee which was of the free wo-
 man, was borne by promes. * By the which things 24
 another thing is meant: for these *mothers* are
 the two Testaments, the one which is Agar of
 mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage.

TO THE GALATHIANS.

- 25** * (For Agar or Sina is a mountain in Arabia
 it answereth to Hierusalem which now is) and
26 she is in bondage with her children. * But Hieru-
 rusalem, which is above, is free: which is the mo-
27 ther of vs all. * For it is written, Reioyce thou
 barren that bearest no children: break forth &
 cry, thou that trauest not: for the desolate
 hath many more children, then shee which hath
28 an husband. * Therefore, brethren, we are after
29 the maner of Isaac, children of the promise. * But
 as then he that was borne after the flesh, per-
 secuted him that *was borne* after the spirit, even
30 so it is now. * But what saith the Scripture? Put
 out the seruant and her sonnes: for the sonne of
 the seruant shall not be heire with the sonne
31 of the free woman. * Then brethren, wee are
 not children of the seruant, but of the free wo-
 man.

CHAP. V.

- 1** **S**Tand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith
 Christ hath made vs free, & be not intangled
2 againe with the yoke of bondage. * Behold, I
 Paul say vnto you, that if yee be circumcised,
3 Christ shall profite you nothing. * For I tell
 againe to euery man, which is circumcised, that
4 he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe. * Ye are
 abolished from Christ: whosoener are iustified
5 by the Law, ye are fallen from grace. * For we
 through the Spirit wait for the hope of righte-
6 ousnes through faith. * For in Iesus Christ nei-
 ther circumcision auaieth any thing, neither
 circumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

CHAP. V.

* Ye did runne well: who did let you, that yee
 did not obey the trueth? * *It is not the perswa-*
son of him that calleth you. * A little leauen
 doth leauen the whole lump. * I haue trust in
 you through the Lord that ye wilbe none other-
 wise minded: but hee that troubleth you, shall
 beare *his* condemnatiō, whosoever he be. * And
 brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe
 I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of
 the crosse abolished. * Would to God they
 were euen cut off, which doe disquiet you * For
 brethren, ye haue bene called vnto liberty: one-
 ly ye not *y. ur* libertie as an occasion vnto the
 flesh, but by loue serue one another. * For al the
 law is fulfilled in one word, which is this, Thou
 shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. * If yee
 bite & deuoure one another, take heede lest ye
 be consumed one of another. * The I say, Walk
 in the Spirit, & ye shall not fulfill the lustes of
 the flesh. * For the flesh lusteth against the Spi-
 rit, & the Spirit against the flesh: & these are cō-
 trarie one to the other, so that ye can not doe
 the same things that ye would. * And if ye be
 led by the Spirit, yee are not vnder the Lawe.
 * Moreover the works of the flesh are manifest,
 which are adulterie, fornication, vncleannes,
 wantōnes, * Idolacrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate,
 emulations, wrath, contentions, seditions, here-
 sies, * Ennie, irurthers, drunkennes, gluttonie, &
 such like, wherof I tel you before, as I also haue
 tolde you before, that they which doe such
 things, shal not inherite the kingdome of God.

TO THE GALATHIANS.

- 22 * But the fruit of the Spirit is loue, ioy, peace,
 23 long suffering, gentlenes, goodnes faith, * Meek-
 nes, temperancie: against such there is no Lawe.
 24 * For they that are Christes, haue crucified the
 25 flesh with the affections and the lustes. * If wee
 line in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the
 26 Spirit. * Let vs not be desirous of vaine glorie,
 prouoking one another, enuying one ano-
 ther.

C H A P. VI.

- 1 **B**rethren, if a man be suddenly taken in any
 offence, yee which are spirituall, restore such
 one with the Spirit of meekenesse, considering
 2 thy selfe, least thou also be tempted. * Beare yee
 one anothers burden, and so fulfill the Lawe of
 3 Christ. * For if any man seeme to himselfe, that
 he is somewhat, when he is nothing, hee decei-
 4 ueth himselfe in his imagination. * But let every
 man proue his own worke & then shal he haue
 reioycing in him selfe onely & not in another.
 5 * For every man shall beare his owne burden.
 6 * Let him that is taught in the word, make him
 that hath taught him, partaker of all his goods.
 7 * Be not deceived: god is not mocked: for what-
 soeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.
 8 * For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the
 flesh reape corruption: but hee that soweth to
 the spirit, shal of the spirit reape life everlasting.
 9 * Let vs not therefore be wearie of wel doing:
 for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.
 10 * While we haue therfore time, let vs do good
 vnto all me, but especially vnto the, which are

CHAP. I.

of the household of faith. * Ye see howe large a letter I haue writtē vnto you with mine owne hand. * As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised, only because they would not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ. * For they themselves which are circumcised, keepe not the Lawe, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioyce in your flesh. * But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in the crosse of our Lorde Iesus Christ, whereby the worlde is crucified vnto me, & I vnto the world. * For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaileth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature. * And as many as walke according to this rule, peace shall be vpon them, & mercie, & vpon the Israel of God. * From hencefoorth let no man put me to businesse: for I beare in my bodie the markes of the Lorde Iesus. * Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL

to the Ephesians.

CHAP. I.

PAUL an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, to the Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus: * Grace be with you, and peace from God

TO THE EPHESIANS.

- 3** our Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ. * *That*
 be God, and the Father of our Lorde Ie-
 Christ, which hath blessed vs with all spiritual
4 bleising in heavenly things in Christ, * As he
 hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation
 of the worlde, that we should be holy, & with-
5 out blame before him in loue: * Who hath
 predestinate vs to be adopted through Iesus
 Christ in him selfe according to the good plea-
6 sure of his will, * To the praise of the glorie of
 his grace, wherewith he hath made vs free
7 accepted in *his* beloued, * By whome we
 haue redemption through his blood, *even*
 the forgiveness of sinnes, according to his
8 grace: * Whereby he hath bene abundant to-
9 ward vs in all wisdom & vnderstanding, * And
 hath opened vnto vs the myserie of his wil
 according to his good pleasure, which he
10 purposed in him, * That in the dispensation of
 the fulnesse of the times, he might gather to-
 gether in one all things, both which are in hea-
11 & which are in earth, *even* in Christ: * In whom
 also we are chosen when we were predestinate
 according to the purpose of him which wo-
 keth all things after the counsell of his owne
12 will, * That we, which first trusted in Christ,
13 should be vnto the praise of his glorie: * In
 whom also ye *haue trusted*, after that ye heard
 the worde of trueth, *even* the Gospell of your
 saluation, wherein also after that ye beleued
 ye were sealed with the holy Spirit of promise,
14 * Which is the earnest of our inheritaunce,

CHAP. II.

the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto
the praise of his glorie. * Therefore also after
that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in the
Lord Iesus, and loue toward all the Saints, * I
cease not to giue thanks for you, making men-
tion of you in my prayers, * That the God of
our Lorde Iesus Christ, that father of glorie,
might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisdom, and
reuelation through the acknowledging of him,
* That the eyes of your vnderstanding might
be lightened, that ye may know what the hope
is of his calling, & what the riches of his glori-
ous inheritance is in the Saints, * And what is
the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward
vs, which beleeue according to the working of
his mightie power, * Which he wrought in
Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and
set him at his right hand in the heauenly places,
* Farre aboue all principallitie, and power, and
might, & domination, and euery Name, that is
named, not in this world onely, but also in that
that is to come, * And hath made all thinges
subject vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer
all things to be the head of the church, * Which
is his bodie, *euery* the fulnesse of him that filleth
all in all things.

CHAP. II.

AND you *bath* he quickened, that were dead
in trespasses and sinnes, * Wherein in time
past ye walked, according to the course of this
worlde, and after the prince that ruleth in the
aire, *euery* the spirit, that nowe worketh in the
children

TO THE EPHESIANS.

3 children of disobedience, * Among whom we
 also had our conuersation in time past in the
 lustes of our flesh, in fulfilling the will of the
 flesh, & of the mind, & were by nature the chil-
 4 dren of wrath, as well as others. * But God
 which is rich in mercie, through his great love
 5 wherewith he loued vs, * Euen when we were
 dead by sinnes, hath quickened vs together in
 6 Christ, by whose grace ye are saued, * And hath
 raised vs vp together, & made vs sit together in
 7 the heavenly places in Christ Iesus, * That he
 might shew in the ages to come the exceeding
 riches of his grace, through his kindnesse to-
 8 wards vs in Christ Iesus. * For by grace are ye
 saued through faith, & that not of your felicitie,
 9 it is the gift of God, * Not of workes, least any
 10 man should boast him selfe. * For we are his
 workmanship created in Christ Iesus vnto good
 workes, which God hath ordained, that we
 11 should walke in them. * Wherefore remember,
 that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh,
 & called vncircumcision of them, which are cal-
 led circumcision in the flesh, made with hands,
 12 * That ye were, * I say, at that time without
 Christ & were aliens from the common wealth
 of Israel, & were strangers from the covenants
 of promise, and had no hope, and were without
 13 God in the world. * But now in Christ Iesus, ye
 which once were farre off, are made neere by
 14 the blood of Christ, * For he is our peace, which
 hath made of both one, & hath broken the wall
 15 of the partition wall, * In abrogating through

CHAP. III.

the hatred that is, the Law of commandments which standeth in ordinances, for to make of twaine one newe man in him selfe, so making peace, * And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by his crosse, & slay them thereby, * And came, & preached peace vnto them which were as farre off, and to them that were nere. * For through him, we both haue access vnto the Father by one Spirit. Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God, * And are built vpon the foundation of the Apostles & Prophets, Iesus Christ him selfe being the chiefe corner stone, in whom all the building coupled together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord, * In whom ye also are built together, to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

On this cause, I Paul am the prisoner of Iesus Christ for you Gentiles, * If ye haue heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to youward, * That is, that God by revelation hath shewed this mysterie vnto me, as I wrote aboue in few wordes, * Whereby whome ye reade, ye may knowe mine vnderstanding in the mysterie of Christ, * Which in other ages was not opened vnto the sonnes of men, as it is nowe reueiled vnto his holy Apostles & Prophets by the Spirit, * That the Gentiles should be inheritors also, & of the same blessing, & partakers of his promise in Christ by the Gospel,

TO THE EPHESIANS

- 7 Gospell, * Whereof I am made a minister by
the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto me
through the effectuall working of his power.
- 8 * Euen vnto me the least of all Saintes in this
grace giuen, that I should preach among the
Gentiles the vnsearchable riches of Christ, * And
to make cleare vnto all men what the fellow-
ship of the mysterie is, which from the begin-
ning of the worlde hath bene hid in God, who
- 10 hath created all things by Iesus Christ, * To the
intent, that now vnto principalities & power
in heavenly places, might be knownen by the
Church the manifold wisdom of God, * Ac-
cording to the eternall purpose, which he
- 12 wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord: * By whom
we haue boldnes and entrance with confidence
by faith in him. * Wherefore I desire that ye
faint not at my tribulation for your sake,
- 14 which is your glorie. * For this cause I bow my
knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,
- 15 *(Of whom is named the whole familie in hea-
uen & in earth) * That he might grant you ac-
cording to the riches of his glorie, that ye may
be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,
- 17 * That Christ may dwell in your heartes by
faith: * That ye being rooted and grounded in
loue, may be able to comprehend with all Saints
what is the breadth, & length, and depth, and
height: * And to knowe the loue of Christ,
- 19 which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled
with all fulnesse of God. * Vnto him therefore
that is able to do exceeding abundantly above

CHAP. IIII.

that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs, * Be praise in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for euer, Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

I therefore, being prisoner in the Lorde, pray you that ye walke worthie of the vocation whereun^o ye are called, * With all humblenes of mind, & meeknes, with long suffering, supporting one another through loue, * Endeavouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirite in the bond of peace. * There is one bodie, & one Spirite, even as ye are called in one hope of your vocation. * There is one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme, * One God and Father of all, which is aboue all, & through all, and in you all. * But vnto every one of vs is given grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ. * Wherefore he saith, When he ascended vp on high, he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue giftes vnto men. * (Now, in that he ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest parts of the earth? * He that descended, is euen the same that ascended, far aboue all heauens, that he might fill all thinges) * He therefore gaue some to be Apostles, and some Prophetes, and some Euangelists, and some Pastours, and Teachers, * For the repairing of the Saintes, for the worke of the ministerie, & for the edification of the body of Christ, * Till we all meete together (in the vnitie of faith and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfecte man,

TO THE EPHESIANS.

- man, & vnto the measure of the age of the fulnes of Christ, * That we henceforth be no more children, wauering and caried about with euery wind of doctrine, by the deceit of men, & with craftines, whereby they law in wait to deceiue. * But let vs follow the trueth in loue, & in all thinges growe vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ. * By whome all the body being coupled & knit together by euery ioynt, for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effectuall power, *which is* in the measure of euery part) receiueth increase of the body, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue. * This I say therefore & testifie in the Lorde, that ye henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke, in vanitie of their minde, * Hauing their vnderstanding darkened, & being strangers fro the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardnesse of their heart: * Which being past feeling, haue giuen them selues vnto wantonnesse, to worke all vncleannesse, *even* with greedinesse. * But ye haue not so learned Christ, * If so be ye haue heard him & haue bin taught by him, as the trueth is in Iesus. * *That is* that ye cast off, concerning the conuersation in time past, that olde man which is corrupt through the deceiueable lustes, * And be renewed in the spirit of your mind, * And put on the new man, which after God is created vnto righteousness, & true holinesse. * Wherefore cast off lying, and speake euery man trueth vnto his neighbour: * Because

the but f
from you
drill. * I
let him
the thing
groe vnto
commun
but that
that it
* And g
whome
tion. * f
ing, and
with all
another
another
gave yo

BE ve
childe
both lo
be an o
ling fac
cleanne
med an
ther fil
ielling
giving
where
tation
herita
* Let

grie

CHAP. V.

get but fume not : let not the sunne go downe
 upon your wrath, * Neither giue place to the
 euill. * Let him that stole, steale no more : but
 let him rather labour, & worke with his handes
 the thing which is good, that he may haue to
 giue vnto him that needeth. * Let no corrupt
 communication proceed out of your mouthes:
 but that which is good, to the vse of edifying,
 that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.
 * And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by
 whome ye are sealed vnto the day of redemp-
 tion. * Let all bitterness, & anger, & wrath, cry-
 ing, and euill speaking be put away from you,
 with all maliciousnesse. * Be ye courteous one
 to another, & tender harted, freely forgiving one
 another, euen as God for Christs sake freely for-
 giveth you.

CHAP. V.

BE ye therefore followers of God as deare
 children, * And walke in loue, euen as Christ
 hath loued vs, & hath giuen him selfe for vs, to
 be an offering and a sacrifice of a sweete smel-
 ling sauour to God. * But fornication, & all vn-
 cleannes, or couetousnes, let it not be once na-
 med among you, as it becometh Saints. * Nei-
 ther filthinesse, neither foolish talking, neither
 jesting, which are things not comely, but rather
 giuing of thanks. * For this ye know, that no
 whoremonger, neither vncleane person, nor co-
 uetous person, which is an idolater, hath any in-
 heritance in the kingdome of Christ, & of God.
 * Let no man deceiue you with vaine wordes :

for,

TO THE EPHESIANS.

- 7 for, for such things cometh the wrath of god vpon
 8 the children of disobedience. * Be not there-
 9 fore companions with them, * For ye were once
 10 darknes, but are now light in the Lorde: walke
 11 as children of light, * (For the fruite of the spi-
 12 rit is in all goodnesse, & righteousness, & truth)
 13 * Approouing that which is pleasing to the
 14 Lord. * And haue no fellowship with their
 15 fruitfull workes of darknes, but euen reprove
 16 them rather. * For it is shame euen to speake of
 17 the thinges, which are done of them in secre-
 18 t. * But all thinges when they are reproofed in
 19 the light, are manifest: for it is light that ma-
 20 keth all things manifest. * Wherefore he saith,
 21 Awake thou that sleepest, & stand vp from the
 22 dead, and Christ shall giue thee light. * Take
 23 heede therefore that ye walke circumspectly,
 24 not as fooles, but as wise. * Redeeming the
 25 sen: for the dayes are euill. * Wherefore, be
 26 ye not vnwise, but vnderstand what the will of
 27 the Lord is, * And be not drunken with wine,
 28 wherein is excess: but be fulfilled with the spi-
 29 rit, * Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes, and
 30 hymnes, & spirituall songs, singing, and making
 31 melodie to the Lord in your hearts, * Giving
 32 thanks alwayes for all thinges vnto God, euen
 33 the father, in the name of our Lord Iesus Christ,
 34 * Submitting your selues one to another in the
 35 feare of God. * Wines submit your selues vnto
 36 your husbands, as vnto the Lord. * For the hus-
 37 band is the wines head, euen as Christ is the
 38 head of the Church, and the same is the Saviour

C H A P. VI.

body. * Therefore, as the Church is in
 union to Christ, even so let the wiues be to
 their husbands in euery thing. * Husbands, loue
 your wiues, euen as Christ loued the Church, &
 gave himselfe for it, * That he might sanctifie it,
 & cleanse it by the washing of water through
 the word, * That he might make it vnto him
 a glorious Church, not hauing spotte or
 wrinkle or any such thing : but that it should
 be holy and without blame. * So ought men
 to loue their wiues, as their owne bodyes : he
 that loueth his wife, loueth him selfe. * For no
 man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nour-
 isheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lorde doeth
 the Church. * For we are members of his body,
 of his flesh, & of his bones. * For this cause shall
 a man leaue father & mother, & shall cleaue to
 his wife, & they twaine shalbe one flesh. * This
 is a great secret, but I speake concerning Christ,
 and concerning the Church. * Therefore euery
 one of you, do ye so: let euery one loue his wife,
 euen as him selfe, and let the wife see that she
 feare her husband.

C H A P. VII.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for
 this is right. * Honour thy father & mother
 (which is the first commandement with pro-
 mes) * That it may bee well with thee, and
 that thou mayest liue long on earth. * And ye,
 fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath:
 but bring them vp in instruction & informati-
 on of the Lorde. * Seruants, be obedient vnto
 them

TO THE EPHESIANS

- them that are *your* masters, according to the Lord in Christ, as to the flesh, with feare and trembling in singleness of heart, as unto Christ, * Not with eyeservice, as men pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the wil of God from the heart, * With good will, serving the Lord & not men, * And knowe ye that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, that same shal he receiue of the Lord, whether he be bond or free. * And ye masters do the same things vnto them, putting away threatening & know that eueryones master also is in heauen, neither is there respect of persons with him. * Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, & in the power of his might, * Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the assaults of the devils, * For we wrestle not against flesh & blood, but against principalities, against powers, & against the worldly gouernours, *the princes of the darknes of this worlde*, against spiritual wickednes, *which are in the hie places*. * For this cause take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the euill day, and hauing finished all things stand fast. * Stand therefore, and your loines gird about with veritie, and hauing on the brest plate of righteousness, * And your feete shod with the preparation of the Gospele of peace. * Aboue all, take the shield of faith, wherewith ye may quench all the fierie dartes of the wicked. * And take the helmet of saluation and the sword of the Spirit which is the word of God, * And pray alwayes with all manner

CHAP. VI.

prayer and supplication in the Spirit: &
 therunto with all perseverance and sup-
 plication for all Saintes, *And for me, that vt-
 19
 erance may be giuen vnto me, that I may o-
 pen my mouth boldly to publish the secret of
 the Gospell. *Whereof I am the ambassadour 20
 & bondes, that therein I may speake boldly, as
 I ought to speake. *But that ye may also know 21
 mine affaires, & what I do, Tychicus my deare
 brother & faithfull minister in the Lorde, shall
 22
 shew you of all things, *Whom I haue sent vn-
 to you for the same purpose, that ye might
 know mine affaires, and that he might comfort
 your hearts. *Peace be with the brethren, & loue 23
 with faith frō God the Father, & from the Lord
 Iesus Christ. *Grace be with all the which loue 24
 our Lord Iesus Christ, to their immortality, amē.
 Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians
 and sent by Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO the Philippians.

CHAP. I.

PAUL & Timotheus the seruants
 of IESVS CHRIST, to all
 the Saintes in Christ Iesus which
 are at Philippi, with the Bishops
 & Deacons *Grace be with you, 3
 and peace from God our Father, and from the
 Lord Iesus Christ. *I thanke my God hauing 3
 you in perfect memory, * (Alwaies in all my 4
 prayers for all you, praying with gladnes) *Be- 5

- cause of the fellowship which yee haue in the
 6 Gospell, from the first day vnto now. * And I
 am perswaded of this same thing, that he that
 hath begun *this* good worke in you, will per-
 7 forme it vntill the day of Iesus Christ, * As it
 becommeth me so to iudge of you all, because
 I haue you in remembrance, that both in my
 bandes, and in my defence, and confirmation of
 8 the Gospell you all were partakers of my
 grace. * For God is my record, how I long af-
 ter you all from the verie heart roote in Iesus
 9 Christ, * And this I pray that your loue may a-
 bound, yet more and more in knowledge, and
 10 in all iudgement, * That yee may allow those
 things which are best, that ye may be pure, and
 11 without offence vnto the day of Christ, * Filled
 with the fruites of righteousness, which are by
 Iesus Christ vnto the glorie and praise of God.
 12 * I would ye vnderstande, brethien, that the
 things which *haue come* vnto me, are turned ra-
 13 ther to the furthering of the Gospell, * So that
 my bandes in Christ are famous throughout all
 14 the iudgement hall, and in all other places, * In
 so much that many of the brethre in the Low
 are boldned through my bandes, & dare more
 15 frankly speake the word. * Some preach Christ
 euē through enuy & strife, & some also of good
 16 will. * The one part preacheth Christ of con-
 tention & not purely, supposing to adde more
 17 affliction to my bands, * But the others of loue,
 knowing that I am let for the defence of the
 18 Gospell. * What then? yet Christ is preached

any manner wayes, whether it be vnder a pre-
tence or sincerely: and I therein ioy: yea, & will
* For I know that this shall come to my 19
saluation through your prayer, & by the helpe
of the Spirit of Iesus Christ, * As I seruerly 20
looke for, and hope, that in nothing I shall be
shamed, but that with all confidence, as al-
wayes, so now Christ shall be magnified in my
bodie, whether it be by life, or by death. * For 21
Christ is to me both in life, & in death aduan-
tage. * And whether to liue in the flesh were 22
profitable for me, & what to chuse I know not.
* For I am distressed betweene both, desiring to 23
be loosed & to be with Christ, which is best of
all. * Neuertheles. to abide in the flesh is more 24
needfull for you. * And this am I sure of, that I 25
shall abide, and with you all continue, for your
sufferance and ioy of *your* faith, * That ye may 26
more abundantly reioyce in Iesus Christ for
my comming to you againe, * Only let 27
your conuersation be, as it becommeth the gos-
pell of Christ, that whether I come & see you,
or is be absent, I may heare of your matters
that ye continue in one Spirit, & in one minde
fasting together through the faith of the Gos-
pell. * And in nothing feare your aduersaries, 28
which is to them a token of perdition, and to
you of saluation, and that of God. * For vnto 29
you it is given for Christ. that not onely yee
should beleue in him, but also suffer for his
sake. * Hauing the same fight, which ye sawe in 30
me, and nowe heare to be in me.

TO THE PHILIPPIANS

CHAP. II.

IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ,
 if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of
 the Spirit, if any compassion and mercie, * Ful-
 fill my ioye, that yee be like minded, hauing
 the same love, being of one accord, and of one
 iudgement, * That nothing be done through con-
 tention, or vaine glorie, but that in meeknes
 of minde every man esteeme other better then
 himselfe. * Looke not every man on his owne
 thinges, but every man also on the things of o-
 ther men. * Let the same minde be in you that
 was euen in Christ Iesus, * Who being in the
 forme of God, thought it no robberie to bee
 equall with God: * But he made himselfe of no
 reputation, & tooke on him the forme of a ser-
 uant, and was made like vnto men, and was
 found in shape as a man. * He humbled himselfe
 and became obedient vnto the death, euen the
 death of the Crosse. * Wherefore God hath al-
 so highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name
 aboue every name, * That at the name of Iesus
 should every knee bow, both of things in hea-
 uen, & things in earth, and things vnder the
 earth, * And that every tongue should confess
 that Iesus Christ is the Lord, vnto the glorie of
 God the Father. * Wherefore my beloued, as ye
 haue alwaies obeyed me, not as in my presence
 onely, but now much more in mine absence, so
 make an end of your owne saluation with feare
 & trembling. * For it is God which worketh in
 you, both the will & the deed, euen of his good
 pleasure.

measure. *Do all things without murmuring & 14
 reasonings, *That ye may be blameles, & pure, 15
 of the sonnes of God without rebuke in the
 midst of a naughty & crooked nation, among
 whom ye shine as lights in the world, *Hol- 16
 ding forth the word of life, that I may reioice
 in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in
 vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine. *Yea, & 17
 though I be offered vp vpon the sacrifice, and
 seruiſe of your faith, I am glad, & reioice with
 you all. *For the same cause also be ye glad, & 18
 reioyce with me. * And I trust in the Lord le- 19
 ſt to ſend Timotheus ſhortly vnto you, that
 ſhall ſo may be of good comfort, when I knowe
 your ſtate. *For I haue no man like minded, 20
 who will faithfully care for your matters. *For 21
 all ſeek their owne, & not that which is Jeſus
 Chriſtes. *But ye know the prooſe of him, that 22
 is a ſonne with the father, he hath ſerued with
 me in the Goſpell. *Him therefore I hope to 23
 ſend aſſoone as I knowe how it will goe with
 me. *And truſt in the Lord that I alſo my ſelfe 24
 ſhall come ſhortly. *But I ſuppoſed it neceſſa- 25
 rie to ſend my brother Epaphroditus vnto you,
 my companion in labour, & fellow ſouldier,
 even your meſſenger, and he that miniſtered vn-
 to me ſuch things as I wanted. *For he longed 26
 after all you, and was full of heauines, becauſe
 ye had heard, that he had bene ſicke. *And no 27
 doubt he was ſick, very nere vnto death: but
 God had mercy on him, and not on him onely,
 but on me alſo, leſt I ſhould haue ſorow vpon

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

28 sorow. * I feare him therefore the more diligently, that when ye should see him again, ye might
 29 reioyce, & I might be the lesse sorowfull. * Receiue him therefore in the Lorde with all glad-
 30 nes, & make much of such. * Because that for the worke of Christ he was neere vnto death, & regarded not his life, to fulfill that seruise which was lacking on your part toward me.

C H A P. III.

1 **M**OREouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. It grieveth mee not to write the same
 2 things to you, & for you it is a sure thing. * Beware of dogges, beware of euill workers: be-
 3 ware of the concision. * For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and re-
 4 ioyce in Christ Iesus, & haue no confidence in the flesh. * Though I might also haue confidence
 5 in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, much
 6 more I. * Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew
 7 of the Hebrewes, by the Law a Pharise. * Concerning zeale, I persecuted the Church: touching
 8 the righteousness which is in the Lawe, I was vnbukeable. * But the things that were vantage
 9 vnto mee, the same I counted losse for Christes sake. * Yea, doubtes I thinke all things but losse
 for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whō I haue counted all things losse,
 & do iudge them to be dongre, that I might win Christ, * And might be found in him, *that is*, not hauing mine owne righte-
 ousnes.

CHAP. III.

which is of the Law, but that which is
 through the faith of Christ, *even* the righteous-
 nes which is of god through faith, * That I may
 know him, & the vertue of his resurrectiō, & the
 fellowship of his afflictions, & be made confor-
 mable vnto his death, * If by any means I might
 attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead. * Not
 as though I had already attained *to it*, either
 were already perfect: but I follow, if that I may
 comprehend *that* for whose sake also I am cō-
 prehended of Christ Iesus. * Brethre, I count not
 my selfe, that I haue attained *to it*, but one thing
 I do: I forget that which is behind & indēour
 my selfe vnto that which is before, * And fol-
 low hard toward the mark, for the price of the
 hic calling of God in Christ Iesus. * Let vs ther-
 fore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: &
 if yee be otherwise minded, God shall reueile
even the same vnto you. * Neuertheles, *in that*
 whereunto we are come, let vs proceed by one
 rule, that we may minde one thing. * Brethren,
 be followers of me, & looke on them, which
 walk so, as ve haue vs for an ensample. * For ma-
 ny walk, of whō I haue told you often: & now
 tell you weeping. *that they are* the enimies of
 the Crosse of Christ. * Whose end is damnnati-
 on, whose God is *their* belly, & whose glory is to
 their shame which minde earthly things. * But
 our conuersation is in heauē, from whence also
 we looke for the Saniour, *even* the Lord Iesus
 Christ. * Who shal change our vile body, that it
 may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body,

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

according to the working, whereby he is able
euen to subdue all things vnto himselfe.

CHAP. IIIL.

THerefore, my brethrē, beloued & longed for,
my ioy & my crown, so continue in the lord,
ye beloued. *I pray Euodias, & beseech Synty-
che, that they be of one accorde in the Lorde.
*Yea, & I beseech thee, faithfull yokefellow, help
those *women*, which laboured with me in the
Gospell, with Clement also, & with other my
fellow labourers, whose names *are* in the book
of life. *Reioice in the Lord alway, again I say,
reioyce. *Let your patient minde be knowne
vnto all men. The Lord *is* at hand. *Be nothing
carefull, but in all things let your requests be
shewed vnto God in prayer, & supplicatiō with
giuing of thāks. *And the peace of God which
passeth all vnderstanding, shall preserue your
hearts & mindes in Christ Iesus. *Furthermore,
brethren, whatsoener things are true, whatsoe-
uer things *are* honest, whatsoeuer things *are*
iust, whatsoeuer things *are* pure, whatsoeuer
things *are* worthy loue, whatsoeuer things *are*
of good report if there be any vertue, or if there
be any praise think on these things, *Which ye
haue both learned, & receiued, & heard, & seene
in me: those things do, & the God of peace shall
be with you. *Now I reioice also in the Lorde
greatly, that now at the last your care for me
springeth a fresh, wherein notwithstanding ye
were carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie. *I
speak not because of want. for I haue learned in
what

CHAP. IIIL

whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.
 *And I can be abased, and I can abound: euery
 where in all things I am instructed, both to be
 full, & to be hungry, & to abound, & to haue
 want. *I am able to *doe* all things through the
 help of Christ, which strengtheneth me. *Not-
 withstanding ye haue wel done, that ye did co-
 municate to mine afflictio. *And ye Philippias
 know also that in the beginning of the Gospel,
 when I departed from Macedonia, no Church
 communicated with me, concerning the mat-
 ter of giuing & receiuing, but ye only. *For eue
 when I was in Thessalonica, ye sent once, & af-
 terward againe for my necessity, *Not that I
 desire a gift: but I desire the fruite which may
 further your reckoning. *Now I haue receiued
 all, & haue plentie? I was euen filled, after that
 I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which
 came from you, an odour that smelleth sweet,
 a sacrifice acceptable & pleasant to God. *And
 my God shal fulfill al your necessities through
 his riches with glory in Iesus Christ. *Vnto
 God euen our Father, be praise for euermore, A-
 men. *Salute all the Saintes in Christ Iesus.
 The brethren, which are with me, greete you.
 *All the Saintes salute you, & most of all they
 which are of Césars householde. *The grace of
 our Lord Iesus Christ, be with you all, Amen.
 *Written to the Philippians from Rome,
 and sent by Epaphroditus.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO

the Colossians.

CHAP. I.

- 1 **P**AUL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by
 2 the will of God, and Timotheus
 3 our brother, * To them which are
 4 at Colosse, Saints & faithfull bre-
 5 thren in Christ: Grace be with you,
 6 and peace from God our Father, and from the
 7 Lord Iesus Christ. * We giue thanks to God
 8 euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, al-
 9 waies praying for you: * Since we heard of your
 10 faith in Christ Iesus, and of your loue toward
 11 all Saints, * For the hopes sake, which is laid vpon
 12 for you in heauen, whereof ye haue heard before
 13 by the worde of trueth, which is the Gospell,
 14 * Which is come vnto you, euen as it is vnto
 15 all the world, & is fruitfull. as it is also among
 16 you, from the day that ye heard & truly knew
 17 the grace of God. * As ye also learned of Epa-
 18 phras our deare fellow seruant, which is for you
 19 a faithfull minister of Christ: * Who hath also
 20 declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit. * For
 21 this cause we also since the day we heard of it,
 22 cease not to pray for you and to desire that ye
 23 might be fulfilled with knowledge of his will,
 24 in all wisdome, and spirituall vnderstanding,
 25 * That ye might walke worthy of the Lorde,
 26 and please him in all things, breing fruitfull
 27 in all good works, and increasing in the know-
 28 ledge of God, * Strengthened with all might
 29 thorough his glorious power, vnto all pa-
 30 tience, and long suffering with ioyfulness

* Cinc

OF IVACHAP. I.

* Giving thanks vnto the Father, which hath
made vs meete to be partakers of the inheri-
tance of the Saints in light, * Who hath deliue-
red vs from the power of darknes, & hath tran-
sferred vs into the kingdom of his deare Sonne,
* In whome we haue redemption through his
blood, *that is*, the forgiveness of sinnes, * Who is
the image of the inuisible God, the first begottē
of every creature. * For by him were all things
created, which are in heauen, and which are in
earth, things visible & inuisible: whether *they be*
Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities, or
Powers, all things were created by him, and for
him, * And he is before all things, and in him all
things consist. * And he is the head of the body
of the Church: hee is the beginning & the first
begottē of the dead, that in all things he might
haue the preeminēce. * For it pleased *the Father*,
that in him should all fulnesse dwell, * And tho-
ugh peace made by that blood of that his
crosse, to reconcile to himself through him, tho-
ugh him, *I say*, all thinges, both which *are* in
earth, & which *are* in heauen. * And you which
were in times past strangers & enemies, because
your mindes were set in euill workes, hath hee
now also reconciled, * In that bodie of his flesh
through death, to make you holy, & vnblame-
able & without fault in his sight, * If yee conti-
nue grounded & stablished in the faith, and be
not mooued away from the hope of the Gos-
pel, whereof ye haue heard, & which hath beene
promised to every creature which is vnder hea-

uen,

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

- 24** men, wherof I Paul am a minister. * Now reioyce
 I in my sufferings for you, & fulfil the rest of the
 afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies
25 sake, which is the Church, * Whereof I am
 minister, according to the dispensation of god,
 which is given me vnto youward, to fulfill the
26 word of God, * Which is the mysterie hid since
 the world begā, & frō all ages, but now is made
27 manifest to his Saints, * To whom God would
 make knowen what is the riches of his glorious
 mysterie among the Gentiles, which riches
28 is Christ in you, the hope of glorie, * Whom
 we preach, admonishing euery man, & teaching
 euery man in all wisdome, that we may present
29 euery man perfect in Christ Iesus, * Whereunto
 I also labour and strue, according to his working,
 which worketh in me mightilie.

C H A P. II.

- 1** **F**OR I would ye knew what great fighting I
 haue for your sakes, & for them of Laodicea.
 & for as many as haue not seene my person
2 in the flesh, * That their hearts might be comforted,
 & they knit together in loue, & in all riches
 of the full assurāce of vnderstāding, to know the
3 mysterie of God, euen the Father, & of Christ.
 * In who are hid all the treasures of wisdome &
4 knowledge. * And this I say, lest any man should
5 beguile you with enticing words: * For though
 I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the
 spirit, reioycing, & beholding your order, and
 your stedfast faith in Christ. * As yee haue
 therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, &

7
 8
 9
 10
 11
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17
 18
 and

in him, * Rooted and built in him, and
 grounded in the faith, as ye have beene taught,
 standing therein with thankesgiuing. * Be-
 cause least there be any man that spoile you
 through philosophie, & vain deceit, through the
 traditions of men, according to the rudiments
 of the world, & not after Christ. * For in him
 dwelleth all the fulnes of the Godhead bodily.
 * And ye are complete in him, which is the head
 of all principalitie and power. * In whome also
 ye are circumcised with circumcision made
 without hands, by putting of the sinnesful body
 of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ.
 * In that ye are buried with him through Bap-
 tisme, in whome yee are also raised vp together
 through the faith of the operatiō of god, which
 raised him frō the dead. * And you which were
 dead in sins, & in the vncircūcisiō of your flesh,
 hath he quickned together with him, forgiuing
 you all *your* trespasses. * And putting out the
 hand writing of ordināces that was against vs,
 which was contrary to vs, he euen tooke it out
 of the way, & fastened it vpon the crosse, * And
 hath spoiled the Principalities, & powers, and
 hath made a shew of them openly, and hath
 triumphed over them in the same *crosse*. * Let
 no man therefore condemne you in meate and
 drinke, or in respect of any holy day, or of the
 new moone, or of the Sabbath *daies*, * Which
 are *but* a shadowe of thinges to come: but the
 body is in Christ. * Let no man at his pleasure
 haue rule over you by humbleness of minde,

and worshipping of Angells, adorning himselfe in those things which he neuer saw, **29** putt vp with his fleshly minde. * And he is not the head, whereof all the bodie furnished and knit together by ioynts and bandes, **30** increaseth with the increasing of God. * Wherefore if yee be deade with Christ from the ordinances of the worlde, why, as though ye lived in the worlde, are ye burdened with traditions? * **31** As, Touch not, Tasse not, Handle not, **32** * Which all perill with the vsing, and are after the commaundements and doctrines of men. * Which things haue in deepe a shew of wisdome, in voluntarie religion and humbleness of minde, and not sparing the bodie, which are things of no value, *sith they pertaine to the filling of the flesh.*

CHAP. III.

IF yee then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at the right hand of God. * Set your affections on things which are aboue, and not on things which are on the earth. * For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. * When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glorie. * Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vncleannesse, the inordinate affection, euil concupiscence, and couetousnesse which is idolatrie. * For the which things sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience, * Wherein yee also walked **once,**

when yee liued in them. * But now put
away euen all these thinges, wrath, anger,
maliciousnes, cursed speaking, filthie speaking,
out of your mouth. * Lie not one to another,
saying that ye haue put off the olde man, with
deuises, * And haue put on the new, which
is renewed in knowledge after the image of him
that created him, * Where is neither Grecian
nor Iewe, circumcision nor vncircumcision,
Barbarian, Scythian, bond, free: but Christ is all,
and in all things. * Now therefore as the elect
of God holy and beloued, put on the bowels
of mercies, kindnes, humblenes of minde, meek-
nesse, long suffering: * Forbearing one ano-
ther, and forgiuing one another, if any man
haue a quarrell to another euen as Christ for-
gaue, euen so doe yee. * And aboue all these
things, put on loue, which is the bond of per-
fection. * And let the peace of God rule in your
hearts, to the which ye are called in one body,
and be ye thankfull. * Let the word of Christ
dwell in you plenteously in all wisedome, tea-
ching and admonishing your owne selues, in
psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, sing-
ing with a grace in your hearts to the Lorde.
* And whatsoener yee shall doe, in worde or
deede, doe all in the Name of the Lord Iesus;
giving thanks to God euen the Father by him.
* Wines, submit your selues vnto your hus-
bands, as it is comely in the Lord. * Husbands,
loue your wines, and be not bitter vnto them.
* Children, obey your Parents in all things: for
that

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

- 21 that is well pleasing vnto the Lord. * Fathers,
 22 prouoke not your children to anger, least they
 be discouraged. * Seruants, be obedient vnto
 them that are *your* masters according to the
 flesh in all things, not with eye seruice as
 23 pleasers, but in singlenes of heart, fearing God.
 * And whatsoever ye doe, do it hartily, as to the
 24 Lord, and not to men, * Knowing that of the
 Lord ye shall receiue the reward of the inheri-
 25 tance: for ye serue the Lord Christ. * But he that
 doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that
 he hath done: and there is no respect of person.

C H A P. I I I I.

- 1 **Y**E masters, do vnto your seruants, that which
 is iust, and equall, knowing that ye also haue
 2 a master in heauen. * Continue in praier, and
 3 watch in the same with thanksgiving. * Praying
 also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the
 doore of vtterance, to speake the mysterie of
 4 Christ: wherefore I am also in bondes, * That I
 may vtter it, as it becommeth me to speake.
 5 * Walk wisely toward them that are without,
 6 & redeeme the season. * Let your speech be gra-
 cious alwaies, and powdred with salt, that ye
 7 may know how to answer euery man. * Tychi-
 cas *our* beloued brother & faithfull minister,
 fellow seruant in the Lord, shall declare vnto
 8 you my whole state, * Whome I haue sent vnto
 you for the same purpose that hee might
 know your state, and might comfort your
 9 hearts, * With Onesimus a faithfull and a be-
 loued brother, who is one of you. They shall

CHAP. IIII.

Now you of all things here. * Aristarchus my
 prison fellow saluteth you, & Marcus, Barnabas
 cousin (touching whome ye receiued command-
 ments. If hee come vnto you, receiue him)
 * And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of
 the circumcision. These onely are my work fel-
 lows vnto the kingdome of God, which haue
 bene vnto my consolation. * Epaphras the ser-
 uant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth
 you, and alwaies strueth for you in prayers, that
 ye may stande perfect, and full in all the will
 of God. * For I beare him record, that he hath
 a great zeale for you, & for them of Laodicea,
 and them of Hierapolis * Luke the beloued Phi-
 lion greeteth you, and Demas. * Salute the
 brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas,
 and the Church which is in his house. * And
 when this Epistle is read of you, cause that it
 be read in the Church of the Laodiceans also,
 and that ye likewise reade the Epistle written
 from Laodicea. * And say to Archippus, Take
 heed to the ministerie, that thou hast receiued
 of the Lord, that thou fulfill it. * The salutation
 by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bands.
 Grace be with you, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossi-
 ans, and sent by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF

Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

PAUL and Silvanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is in god the Father, & in the Lord Iesus Christ.* Grace be with you, & peace from God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ. * We giue God thanks alwaies for you all, making mention of you in our prayers. * Without ceasing, remembring your effectual faith, & diligent loue, and the patience of your hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God, euen our Father. * Knowing, beloued brethren that ye are elect of God. * For our Gospel was not vnto you in word onely, but also in power & in the holy Ghost, & in much assurance, as ye know after what manner wee were among you for your sakes. * And ye became followers of vs, of the Lord, and receiued the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost. * So that yee were as ensamples to all that beleue in Macedonia & Achaia. * For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not in Macedonia & Achaia onely: but your faith also which is toward God, spread abroad in all quarters, that we need not to speak any thing. * For they themselues shew of vs what manner of entring in we had vnto you, & how yee turned to God from idols, to true the living & true God, * And to look for his Sonnes from heaven, whome hee raiseth

1031 CHAP. II. 117 3 11
from the dead, even Iesus which deliuereth vs
from that wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
109
110
111
112
113
114
115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
123
124
125
126
127
128
129
130
131
132
133
134
135
136
137
138
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147
148
149
150
151
152
153
154
155
156
157
158
159
160
161
162
163
164
165
166
167
168
169
170
171
172
173
174
175
176
177
178
179
180
181
182
183
184
185
186
187
188
189
190
191
192
193
194
195
196
197
198
199
200
201
202
203
204
205
206
207
208
209
210
211
212
213
214
215
216
217
218
219
220
221
222
223
224
225
226
227
228
229
230
231
232
233
234
235
236
237
238
239
240
241
242
243
244
245
246
247
248
249
250
251
252
253
254
255
256
257
258
259
260
261
262
263
264
265
266
267
268
269
270
271
272
273
274
275
276
277
278
279
280
281
282
283
284
285
286
287
288
289
290
291
292
293
294
295
296
297
298
299
300
301
302
303
304
305
306
307
308
309
310
311
312
313
314
315
316
317
318
319
320
321
322
323
324
325
326
327
328
329
330
331
332
333
334
335
336
337
338
339
340
341
342
343
344
345
346
347
348
349
350
351
352
353
354
355
356
357
358
359
360
361
362
363
364
365
366
367
368
369
370
371
372
373
374
375
376
377
378
379
380
381
382
383
384
385
386
387
388
389
390
391
392
393
394
395
396
397
398
399
400
401
402
403
404
405
406
407
408
409
410
411
412
413
414
415
416
417
418
419
420
421
422
423
424
425
426
427
428
429
430
431
432
433
434
435
436
437
438
439
440
441
442
443
444
445
446
447
448
449
450
451
452
453
454
455
456
457
458
459
460
461
462
463
464
465
466
467
468
469
470
471
472
473
474
475
476
477
478
479
480
481
482
483
484
485
486
487
488
489
490
491
492
493
494
495
496
497
498
499
500
501
502
503
504
505
506
507
508
509
510
511
512
513
514
515
516
517
518
519
520
521
522
523
524
525
526
527
528
529
530
531
532
533
534
535
536
537
538
539
540
541
542
543
544
545
546
547
548
549
550
551
552
553
554
555
556
557
558
559
560
561
562
563
564
565
566
567
568
569
570
571
572
573
574
575
576
577
578
579
580
581
582
583
584
585
586
587
588
589
590
591
592
593
594
595
596
597
598
599
600
601
602
603
604
605
606
607
608
609
610
611
612
613
614
615
616
617
618
619
620
621
622
623
624
625
626
627
628
629
630
631
632
633
634
635
636
637
638
639
640
641
642
643
644
645
646
647
648
649
650
651
652
653
654
655
656
657
658
659
660
661
662
663
664
665
666
667
668
669
670
671
672
673
674
675
676
677
678
679
680
681
682
683
684
685
686
687
688
689
690
691
692
693
694
695
696
697
698
699
700
701
702
703
704
705
706
707
708
709
710
711
712
713
714
715
716
717
718
719
720
721
722
723
724
725
726
727
728
729
730
731
732
733
734
735
736
737
738
739
740
741
742
743
744
745
746
747
748
749
750
751
752
753
754
755
756
757
758
759
760
761
762
763
764
765
766
767
768
769
770
771
772
773
774
775
776
777
778
779
780
781
782
783
784
785
786
787
788
789
790
791
792
793
794
795
796
797
798
799
800
801
802
803
804
805
806
807
808
809
810
811
812
813
814
815
816
817
818
819
820
821
822
823
824
825
826
827
828
829
830
831
832
833
834
835
836
837
838
839
840
841
842
843
844
845
846
847
848
849
850
851
852
853
854
855
856
857
858
859
860
861
862
863
864
865
866
867
868
869
870
871
872
873
874
875
876
877
878
879
880
881
882
883
884
885
886
887
888
889
890
891
892
893
894
895
896
897
898
899
900
901
902
903
904
905
906
907
908
909
910
911
912
913
914
915
916
917
918
919
920
921
922
923
924
925
926
927
928
929
930
931
932
933
934
935
936
937
938
939
940
941
942
943
944
945
946
947
948
949
950
951
952
953
954
955
956
957
958
959
960
961
962
963
964
965
966
967
968
969
970
971
972
973
974
975
976
977
978
979
980
981
982
983
984
985
986
987
988
989
990
991
992
993
994
995
996
997
998
999
1000

On yee your selues know, brethren, that our
entrance in vnto you was not in vaine. * But
after that we had suffered before, & were
humbly entreated at Philippi (as ye know)
we were bold in our God, to speake vnto you
the Gospel of God with much strining. * For
our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vi-
ciousness, not by guile. * But as we were allow-
ed of God, that the Gospel should be commit-
ted vnto vs, so we speak, not as they that please
us, but God, which approoueth our heartes.
Neither yet did we euer vse flattering words,
as ye know, nor coloured conuetousnes, Gods
word. * Neither sought we praise of men; nei-
ther of you, nor of others, when we might haue
been chargeable, as the Apostles of Christ. * But
we were gentle among you, euen as a nurse
disputeth her children. * Thus beeing affec-
tionate towards you, our good will was to haue
deliuered vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely,
but also our own soules, becaule ye were deare
vnto vs. * For ye remember, brethren, our la-
bour & trauaile: for we laboured day & night,
becaule we would not be chargeable vnto any
of you, and preached vnto you the Gospel of
God. * Ye are witnesses, & God also, how holily
& justly, & vblameably we behaued our selues
among you that beleue. * As yee know howe
we exhorted you, & comforted, & besought

I. T H E S S A L O N I A N S.

- 12 every one of you(as a father his childrē) * That
ye would walk worthy of god, who hath called
13 you vnto his kingdom & glory. * For this cause
also thanke we God without ceasing, that
ye receiued the worde of God, which yee heard
of vs, ye receiued it not as the word of men,
as it is in deede the worde of God, which
14 worketh in you that beleene. * For brethren
are become followers of the Churches of
which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because
haue also suffered the same things of your
countrie men, euen as they haue of the Lord
15 * Who both killed the Lord Iesus & their
Prophets, & haue persecuted vs away, and
they please not, and are contrarie to all
16 * And forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles
that they might be saued, to fulfill their sinne
alwaies: for the wrath of God is come on them
17 to the vtmost. * Forasmuch brethrē, as we were
kept from you for a season, concerning fight
but not in the heart, wee enforced the mouth
18 see your face with great desire. * Therefore
would haue come vnto you (I Paul at lest once
19 or twise) but Satan hindred vs. * For what
our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing is
not euen you in the presence of our Lord Iesus
20 Christ at his comming? * Yes, ye are our glorie
and ioy.

C H A P. III.

- 1 **W**herefore since wee could no longer
beare, wee thought it good to remaine
2 Athens alone, * And haue sent Timotheus

CHAP. IIE

our brother and minister of God, and
 our labour fellowe in the Gospell of Christ, to
 establish you, & to comfort you touching your
 faith, * That no man should be mooued with
 these afflictions: for ye your selues know, that
 we are appointed thereunto. * For verely when
 we were with you, we told you before that we
 should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to
 pass, & ye know it. * Euen for this cause, when
 we could no longer forbear, I sent *him* that I
 might know of your faith, lest the tempter had
 tempted you in any sort, & that our labour had
 been in vaine. * But nowe lately when Timo-
 thy came from you vnto vs, and brought vs
 good tidings of your faith & loue, and that ye
 had good remembrance of vs alwaies, desiring
 to see vs, as we also *do* you, * Therefore, brethre,
 we had consolation in you, in all our affliction
 & necessity through your faith. * For nowe are
 we aline, if ye stand fast in the Lord. * For what
 thanks can we recompense to God againe for
 you, for all the ioy wherewith we reioyce for
 your sakes before our God, * Night and day,
 praying exceedingly that we might see your
 face, & might accomplish that which is lacking
 in your faith? * Nowe God him selfe, euen our
 Father, & our Lord Iesus Christ, guide our iour-
 ney vnto you, * And the Lord increase you, and
 make you abound in loue one toward another,
 & toward all men, euen as we *do* toward you:
 * To make your heartes stable & vnblameable
 in holinesse before God, euen our Father, at the
 coming

I. THESSALONIANS.

comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all
Saintes.

CHAP. III.

- 1 **A**Nd furthermore we beleech you, brethren,
2 & exhort you in the Lord Iesus, that ye
3 increafe more and more, as ye haue receiued
4 vs, how ye ought to walke, and to please
5 * For ye know what comandements we
6 you by the Lord Iesus. * For this is the will
7 God, *even* your sanctification, & that ye
8 abstaine from fornication, * That euery one
9 you should know, how to possesse his
10 holinesse and honour, * And not in the
11 concupiscence eue as the Gentiles which
12 not God: * That no man oppresse or defraude
13 his brother in any matter: for the Lord
14 nenger of all such things, as we also haue tolde
15 you before time, and testified. * For God
16 not called vs vnto vncleannesse, but vnto
17 bennesse. * He therefore that despiseth *these things*
18 despiseth not man, but God who hath euery
19 uen you his holy Spirit, * But as touching
20 brotherly loue, ye need not that I write vnto you
21 for ye are taught of God to loue one another.
22 * Yea, and that thing verely ye do vnto all
23 brethren, which are throughout all Macedonia
24 but we beseech you brethren, that ye encrease
25 more & more. * And that ye studie to be quiet
26 & to meddle with your owne businesse, and
27 worke with your owne hands, as we comma
28 ded you, * That ye may behaue your selues
29 nestly toward them that are without, and
30

C H A P. V.

nothing be lacking vnto you. * I would not, 12
 brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them
 which are asleepe, that ye sorowe not enen as
 other which haue no hope. * For if we beleue 14
 that Iesus is dead, & is risen, euen so them which
 sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him. * For 15
 thus say we vnto you by the word of the Lord,
 that we which liue, & are remaining in the co-
 ming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which
 sleepe. * For the Lord himselfe shall descende 16
 from heauen with a shoute, & with the voyce
 of the Archangel, & with the trumpet of God:
 and the dead in Christ shall rise first: * Then 17
 shall we which liue and remaine, be caught vp
 with them also in the cloudes, to meeete the
 Lord in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with
 the Lord. * Wherefore, comfort your selues 18
 one another with these wordes.

C H A P. V.

But of the times & seasons, brethren, ye haue 1
 no neede that I write vnto you. * For ye 2
 your selues know perfectly, that the day of the
 Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.
 * For when they shall say, Peace, & safetie, then 3
 shall come vpon them sudden destruction, as
 the trauaile vpon a woman with child, & they
 shall not escape. * But ye, brethren, are not in 4
 darknes, that that day should come on you, as
 if we were a thiefe. * Ye are al the children of light, 5
 and the children of the day: we are not of the
 night, neither of darkenesse. * Therefore let vs 6
 not sleepe as do other, but let vs watch and be

I. THESSALONIANS.

- 7 sober. *For they that sleepe sleepe in the night,
and they that be drunken, are drunken in the
8 night. * But let vs which are of the day, be so-
ber, putting on the brest plate of faith, & loue,
9 & of the hope of saluation for an helmet. *For
God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to
obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lorde
10 Iesus Christ, *Which dyed for vs, that whether
we wake or sleep, we should liue together with
11 him. *Wherefore exhort one another, and edifi-
12 fie one another, euen as ye doe. *Nowe ye be-
seech you, brethren that ye acknowledge them,
which labour among you, and are ouer you in
13 the Lorde, and admonish you, * That ye haue
them in singular loue for their workes sake. Be
14 at peace among your selues. * We desire you,
brethren, admonish them that are out of order
comfort the feeble minded: beare with the
15 weake: be patient toward all men. * See that
none recompense euill for euill vnto any man
but euer followe that which is good, both to-
16 ward your selues, & toward all men. * Reioyce
17 euermore. * Pray continually. * In all thinges
18 giue thāks: for this is the will of God in Christ
19 Iesus toward you. * Quench not the Spirit.
20 * Despise not prophecying. * Trye all thinges,
21 & keepe that which is good. * Abstaine from
22 all appearance of euill. * Now the very God of
23 peace sanctifie you throughout: & I pray God
that your whole spirit & soule and body, may
be kept blamelesse vnto the comming of our
24 Lord Iesus Christ. * Faithfull is he which calleth
you,

CHAP. I.

you which will also do it. * Brethren, pray for
 25. * Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse. 26
 * I charge you in the Lord, that this Epistle be 27
 read vnto all the brethren the Saints. * The 28
 grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you, A-
 men. ¶ The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians
 written from Athens.

THE SECONDEPISTLE of Paul to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

PAUL and Siluanus, & Timothe-
 us, vnto th Church of the Thessa-
 lonians, *which is* in God our Fa-
 ther, and in the Lord Iesus Christ:
 * Grace be with you, and peace
 from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus
 Christ. * We ought to thanke God alwayes
 for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your
 faith groweth exceedingly, & the loue of euery
 one of you toward another aboundeth, * So
 that we our selues reioyce of you in the Chur-
 ches of God, because of your patience & faith
 in all your persecutions & tribulations that ye
 suffer, * *Which is* a manifest token of the righte-
 ous iudgement of God, that ye may be counted
 worthie of the kingdom of God, for the which
 ye also suffer. * For it is a righteous thing with
 God, to recompence tribulation to them that
 trouble you, * And to you which are troubled,
 rest with vs, when the Lorde Iesus shall shewe
 himselfe from heauen with his mightie Angels,
 * In

II. THESSALONIANS.

- 8 * In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them, that do not knowe God, and which obey not vnto the Gospell of our Lorde Iesus Christ;
- 9 * Which shalbe punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord and from the glorie of his power, * When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, & to be made manifest in all them that beleue (because our testimonie toward you was beleueed) in that day. * Wherefore, we also pray alwaies for you, that our God may make you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power.
- 12 * That the name of our Lord Iesus Christ, may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lorde Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

- 1 **N**OW we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him, * That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* minde, nor troubled, neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as *we* were from vs. as though the day of Christ were at hande. * Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come* except they come a departing first, & that that man of sinne be disclosed, *euē* in the sonne of perdition, * Which is an aduersarie, & exalteth him selfe against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing him selfe that he is God. * Remember

C H A P. II.

ye not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde
 you these things? * And now ye knowe what
 withholdeth that he might be reueiled in his
 time. * For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth al-
 ready worke: onely he which now withhol-
 deth, shall let till he be taken out of the way.
 * And then shall that wicked man be reueiled,
 whome the Lord shall consume with the spirit
 of his mouth, and shall abolish with the bright-
 ness of his coming. * *Euen him* whose com-
 ing is by the effectual working of Satan, with
 power, and signes, & lying wonders, * And
 in all deceiuablenesse of vnrighteousnesse, a-
 mong them that perish, because they receiued
 not the lone of the trueth, that they might be
 saved. * And therefore God shall send them
 strong delusion, that they should beleue lyes,
 * That all they might be damned which beleue
 not the truth, but had pleasure in vnrighte-
 ouenes. * But we ought to giue thanks alway
 to God for you, brethren beloued of the Lord,
 because that God hath frō the beginning cho-
 sen you to saluation, through sanctification of
 the spirit, and the faith of trueth, * Whereunto
 he called you by our Gospell, to obtaine the
 glorie of our Lorde Iesus Christ. * Therefore,
 brethren, stand fast, and keepe the instructions
 which ye haue bene taught, either by worde, or
 by our Epistle. * Nowe the same Iesus Christ
 our Lord, and our God euen the Father which
 hath loued vs, & hath giuen vs euermlasting con-
 solation & good hope through grace, * Com-

II. THESSALONIANS.

fort your heartes, and stablish you in every worde and good worke.

CHAP. III.

- 1 **F**Vrthermore, brethren, pray for vs, that the
word of the Lord may haue free passage: and
2 be glorified, euen as it is with you, * And that
we may be deliuered from vreasonable and
3 euill men: for all men haue not faith. * But
the Lorde is faithfull, which will stablish you
4 & keepe you from euill. * And we are persuaded
of you through the Lord, that ye both
and wil do the things which we warne you.
5 * And the Lord guide your hearts to the love
6 of God, and the waiting for of Christ. * We
warne you, brethren, in the name of our Lord
Iesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selues from
euery brother that walketh inordinately, and
not after the instruction, which he receiued of
7 vs. * For ye your selues know, how ye ought to
followe vs: for we behaued not our selues in-
8 ordinately among you, * Neither tooke ye
bread of any man for nought: but we wrought
with labour & trauaile night and day, because
we would not be chargeable to any of you,
9 * Not because we haue not authoritie, but that
we might make our selues an ensample vnto
10 you to followe vs. * For euen when we were
with you, this we warned you of, that if there
were any, which would not worke, that he
11 should not eate. * For we heare, that there are
some which walke among you inordinately, &
12 worke not at all, but are busie bodies, * That

CHAP. I.

For them that are such, we warne & exhort by
our Lorde Iesus Christ, that they worke with
quietnes, & eat their owne bread. * And ye, bre- 13
thren, be not wearie in well doing. * If any 14
man obey not this our saying in this letter, note
him; and haue no company with him, that he
may be ashamed. * Yet count him not as an e- 15
nemie, but admonish him as a brother. * Nowe 16
the Lord him selfe of peace giue you peace al-
wayes by all meanes. The Lorde be with you
all. * The salutation of me Paul, with mine 17
hand, which is the token in euery epistle:
I write. * The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ 18
be with you all, Amen. ¶ The second *Epistle* to
the Thessalonians, written from Athens.

THE FIRST EPISTLE of Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I.

PAUL an Apostle of Iesus Christ 1
by the commaundement of
God our Saviour, and of our
Lord Iesus Christ our hope, * Vn- 2
to Timotheus my naturall sonne
in the faith: Grace, mercie, & peace from God
our Father, & from Christ Iesus our Lord. * As 3
I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when
I departed into Macedonia, so doe, that thou
mayest warne some, that they teach none other
doctrine, * Neither that they giue heede to fa- 4
bles and genealogies which are endlesse, which
breede questions rather then godly edifying
which

I. TIMOTHEVS.

- 5 which is by faith. *For the end of the commendement is loue out of a pure heart, & of a good conscience, and of faith vnfained. * From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling. * They would be doctours of the Lawe, and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neither whereof they affirme. * And we know that the Law is good, if a man vse it lawfully, * Knowing this, that the law is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse, disobedient, to the vngodly, & to sinners, to the vnholly, and to the prophane, to murtherers, fathers & mothers to manlayers, * To whomongers, to buggers, to men stealers, to them to the periured, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to wholesome doctrine, * Which is according to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which is committed vnto me. * Therefore I thanke him, which hath made me strong, *that is*, Christ Iesus our Lorde: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in *his* seruice: * Where before I was a blasphemers, & a persecuter, and an oppresser: but I was receiued to mercie: *that is*, I did it ignorantly through vnbeleefe. * But the grace of our Lorde was exceeding abundant with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus. * This is a true saying, & by all meanes worthy to be receiued. that Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, of whome I am chief. * Notwithstanding, for this cause was I receiued to mercie, that Iesus Christ shoulde first shew on me all long suffering vnto the end.

of them, which shall in time to come be-
 come in him vnto eternall life. * Nowe vnto 17
 the King euerlasting, immortall, inuisible, vnto
 God onely wise, be honour & glory, for euer,
 and euer, Amen. * This commandement com- 18
 manded vnto thee, sonne Timotheus, according to
 the prophecies, which went before vpon thee,
 that thou by them shouldest fight a good fight,
 * Having faith and a good conscience, which 19
 we haue put away, and as concerning faith,
 we made shipwracke. * Of whome is Hyme- 20
 nus & Alexander, whom I haue deliuered vn-
 der the name of the Lord, that they might learne not to blas-

C H A P. II.

I exhort therefore, that first of all supplicati- 1
 ons, prayers, intercessions, & giuing of thanks
 be made for all men. * For kinges, and for all 2
 that are in authoritie, that we may lead a quiet
 & peaceable life, in all godlines, and honestie.
 * For this is good and acceptable in the sight 3
 of God our Sauour, * Who will that all men 4
 be saued, & come vnto the acknowledging
 of the trueth. * For there is one God, and one 5
 mediator betweene God & man, *which is the*
 Sonne of Christ Iesus, * Who gaue him selfe a ran- 6
 som for all men, to be that testimonie in due
 time. * Whereunto I am ordained a preacher 7
 & Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, &
 not) *even* a teacher of the Gentiles in faith
 & veritie. * I will therefore that the men 8
 of every where lifting vp pure hands with-
 out

I. TIMOTHEVS.

- 9 out wrath, or doubting. * Likewise also the
men, that they aray them selues in comely ap-
parell, with shamesfastnesse and modestie, not
with broyded haire, or gold, or pearles or cost-
ly apparell, * But (as becommeth women that
professe the feare of God) with good worker.
11 * Let the woman learne in silence with all sub-
12 iection. * I permit not a woman to teach, nei-
ther to vſurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to
13 be in silence. * For Adam was first formed, then
14 Eue. * And Adam was not deceiued, but the
woman was deceiued, & was in the transgression.
15 * Notwithstanding, through bearing of chil-
dren, she shall be ſaued if they continue in faith
and loue, and holinesse with modestie.

C H A P. III.

- 1 **T**His is a true ſaying, If any man deſire the of-
fice of a Biſhop, he deſireth a wortheie work.
2 * A Biſhop therefore muſt be vnreproouable,
the husband of one wife, watching, temperate,
3 modeſt, harberous, apt to teach, * Not giuen
to wine, no ſtriker, not giuen to filthie luſe,
4 but gentle, no fighter, not conetous, * One that
can rule his owne houſe honeſtly, hauing chil-
5 dren vnder obedience with all honeſtie. * For
if any cannot rule his owne houſe, howe ſhall
6 he care for the Church of God? * He may not
be a yong ſcholler, leaſt he being puffeſt vp
7 into the condemnation of the deuill. * He muſt
alſo be well reported of, euen of them which
are without, leaſt he fall into rebuke, and in
8 ſnare of the deuill. * Likewise muſt Deacons be

CHAP. VIII.

not double tongued, not giue vnto much
 wine, neither to filthy lucre, * Having the my- 9
 stery of the faith in pure conscience. * And let 10
 them first be proued, then let them minister, if
 they be found blameles. * Likewise their wines 11
 must be honest, not euill speakers, but sober,
 and faithfull in all things. * Let the Deacons 12
 be the husbands of one wife, & such as can rule
 their children well, & their owne households:
 as they that haue ministred well, get them- 13
 selves a good degree, and great liberty in the
 Lord, which is in christ Iesus. * These things write 14
 vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vn-
 to thee. * But if I tarie long, that thou mayest 15
 knowe, how thou oughtest to behaue thy
 self in the house of God, which is the Church
 of the liuing God, the pillar and grounde of
 truth. * And without controversie, great is the 16
 mystery of godlines, which is, God is manifested
 in the flesh, inlified in the Spirit, seene of An-
 gels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleueed on
 in the world, & receiued vp in glory.

CHAP. IIII.

Now the Spirit speaketh euidently, that in 1
 the latter times some shall depart from the 2
 faith, & shall giue heed vnto Spirits of error,
 & doctrines of devils, * Which speake lies tho- 3
 ugh hypocrisie, & haue their consciences bur-
 ned with an hote yron, * Forbidding to marry, 4
 & commanding to abstaine from meats which
 God had created to bee receiued with gi-
 ding thanks of them which beleue & knowe

M. D. I.

the

I. TIMOTHEVS.

4 the truth. *For euerie creature of God is good
 & nothing ought to be refused, if it be receiued
 5 with thankesgiuing. *For it is sanctified by the
 6 word of God, & prayer. *If thou put the bre-
 thren in remembrance of these things, thou
 shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which
 hast bene nourished vp in the wordes of faith
 & of good doctrine, which thou hast continu-
 7 ally followed. *But cast away prophane, and
 8 old wiues fables, & exercise thy selfe vnto god-
 lines. *For bodily exercise profiteth little:
 9 godlines is profitable vnto all things, which
 hath the promes of the life present, & of the
 10 that is to come. *This is a true saying, and
 11 all meanes worthy to be receiued. *For the-
 fore we labour & are rebuked, because we trust
 12 in the liuing God, which is the Saviour of
 men, specially of those that beleeue. *These
 13 things warne & teach. *Let no man despise
 youth, but be vnto them that beleeue as a
 sample, in worde, in conuersation, in love, in
 14 rit, in faith, & in purenesse. *Till I come,
 attendance to reading, to exhortation, & to
 15 chastitie. *Dispile not the giste that is in thee,
 which was given thee by propheticie with
 laying on of the handes of the company of
 16 Eldership. *These things exercise, & giue
 selfe vnto them, that it may be seen how
 17 thou profitest among all men. *Take heed vnto
 thy selfe, & vnto learning, continue therein: for
 doing this thou shalt both save thy selfe,
 & them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 **Th**inke not an Elder, but exhort him as a fa-
 2 **ther,** & the yonger men as brethren, *The
 3 **older** women as mothers, the yonger as sisters,
 4 **with** all purenesse. * Honour widowes, which
 5 **are** widowes in deed. * But if any widow haue
 6 **children** or nephewes, let them learne first to
 7 **follow** godlines toward their owne house, and
 8 **to** recompense their kinred: for that is an honest
 9 **thing** & acceptable before God. * And she that
 10 **is** a widow in deede, and left alone, trusteth in
 11 **God** & continueth in supplications & pray-
 12 **er** night & daie. * But shee that liueth in plea-
 13 **sure** is dead, while shee liueth. * These things
 14 **before** warn *them* of, that they may be blame-
 15 **less.** * If there be any that prouideth not for his
 16 **owne** & namely for them of his household, hee
 17 **denieth** the faith, and is worse then an insidell.
 18 **Let** not a widowe be taken into the number
 19 **when** threescore yeere old, that hath bene the
 20 **wife** of one husband, * And well reported of
 21 **for** good works: if she haue nourished her chil-
 22 **dren,** if shee haue lodged the strangers, if she
 23 **haue** washed the Saintes feet, if she haue mini-
 24 **stered** vnto them which were in aduersitie, if she
 25 **haue** continually given vnto every good work,
 26 **let** vs receiue the yonger widowes: for when they
 27 **begin** to wax wanton against Christ, they
 28 **fall** in marrie, * Having damnation, because they
 29 **haue** broken the first faith. * And likewise also
 30 **the** idle they learne to go about from house
 31 **to** house: yea, *they* are not onely idle, but also
 32 **gossips,** & busie bodies: speaking things which
 33 **are**

I. TIMOTHEVS.

- 9 out wrath, or doubting. * Likewise also the
men, that they aray them selues in comely ap-
parell, with shامتائنه and modestie, not
with broyded haire, or gold, or pearles or col-
ly apparell, * But (as becommeth women that
professe the feare of God) with good workes.
11 * Let the woman learne in silence with all sub-
12 iection. * I permit not a woman to teach, nei-
ther to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to
13 be in silence. * For Adam was first formed, the
14 Eue. * And Adam was not decciued, but
woman was decciued, & was in the transgre-
15 sion. * Notwithstanding, through bearing of
children, she shall be saued if they continue in
faieth and loue, and holinesse with modestie.

C H A P. III.

- 1 **T**His is a true saying, If any man desire the
office of a Bishop, he desireth a wortheie wo-
2 * A Bishop therefore must be vnreproouea-
the husband of one wife, watching, temperate,
3 modest, harberous, apt to teach, * Not gi-
to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lu-
4 but gentle, no fighter, not conetous, * One that
can rule his owne house honestly, hauing
5 children vnder obedience with all honestie. * For
if any can not rule his owne house, howe shall
6 he care for the Church of God? * He may
be a yong scholler, least he being puffed vp
7 into the condemnation of the deuil. * He must
also be well reported of, euen of them which
are without, least he fall into rebuke, and
8 snare of the deuil. * Likewise must Deacons

CHAP. IIII.

not double tongued, not giue vnto much
 wine, neither to filthy lucre, * Having the my- 9
 joy of the faith in pure conscience. * And let 10
 them first be proued, then let them minister, if
 they be found blameles. * Likewise their wines 11
 must be honest, not euill speakers, but sober,
 and faithfull in all things. * Let the Deacons 12
 be the husbands of one wife, & such as can rule
 their children well, & their owne households:
 that they that haue ministered well, get them- 13
 selves a good degree, and great liberty in the
 Lord, which is in christ Iesus. * These things write 14
 vnto thee, trusting to come very shortly vn-
 to thee. * But if I tarie long, that thou mayest 15
 knowe, how thou oughtest to behaue thy
 self in the house of God, which is the Church
 of the liuing God, the pillar and grounde of
 truth. * And without controuersie, great is the 16
 mystery of godlines, which is, God is manifested
 in the flesh, indwelt in the Spirit, seene of An-
 gels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleued on
 the world, & receiued vp in glory.

CHAP. IIII.

Now the Spirit speaketh evidently, that in 1
 the latter times some shall depart from the
 faith, & shall giue heed vnto Spirits of error,
 & doctrines of devils, * Which speake lies tho- 2
 ugh hypocrisie, & haue their consciences bur-
 dened with an hote yron, * Forbidding to marry, 3
 & commanding to abstaine from meats which
 God had created to bee receiued with gi-
 uing thanks of them which beleue & knowe

I. TIMOTHEVS.

4 the truth. *For euerie creature of God is good,
 & nothing ought to be refused, if it be receiued
 5 with thanksgiuing. *For it is sanctified by the
 6 word of God, & prayer. *If thou put the bre-
 thren in remembrance of these things, thou
 shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which
 hast bene nourished vp in the wordes of faith,
 & of good doctrine, which thou hast continu-
 7 ally followed. *But cast away prophane, and
 8 old wiues fables, & exercise thy selfe vnto god-
 lines. *For bodily exercise profiteth little: but
 godlines is profitable vnto all things, which
 hath the promes of the life present, & of that
 9 that is to come. *This is a true saying, and by
 10 all meanes worthy to be receiued. *For there-
 fore we labour & are rebuked, because we trust
 in the liuing God, which is the Saviour of all
 11 men, specially of those that beleue. *These
 12 things warne & teach. *Let no man despise thy
 youth, but be vnto them that beleue an ex-
 ample, in worde, in conuersation, in loue, in spi-
 13 rit, in faith, & in purenesse. *Till I come, give
 attendance to reading, to exhortation, & to do-
 14 ctrine. *Dispile not the gifte that is in thee,
 which was given thee by prophetic with the
 laying on of the handes of the company of the
 15 Eldership. *These things exercise, & giue thy
 selfe vnto them, that it may be seen how thou
 16 profitest among all men. *Take heed vnto thy
 selfe, & vnto learning, continue therein: for in
 doing this thou shalt both save thy selfe, and
 them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 Blenke not an Elder, but exhort him as a fa-
 2 ther, & the yonger men as brethren, *The
 3 elder women as mothers, the yonger as sisters,
 4 with all purenesse. * Honour widowes, which
 5 are widowes in deed. * But if any widow have
 6 children or nephewes, let them learne first to
 7 keepe godlines toward their owne house, and
 8 recompense their kinned: for that is an honest
 9 thing, & acceptable before God. * And she that
 10 is a widow in deepe, and left alone, trusteth in
 11 God, & continueth in supplications & pray-
 12 ers night & daie. * But shee that liueth in plea-
 13 sure, is dead, while shee liueth. * These things
 14 before warn them of, that they may be blame-
 15 lesse. * If there be any that prouideth not for his
 16 owne. & namely for them of his household, hee
 17 denieth the faith, and is worse then an infidell.
 18 Let not a widow be taken into the number
 19 vnder threescore yeere old, that hath bene the
 20 wife of one husband, * And well reported of
 21 for good works: if she haue nourished her chil-
 22 dren, if shee haue lodged the strangers, if she
 23 haue washed the Saintes feet, if she haue mini-
 24 stered vnto them which were in aduersitie, if she
 25 haue continually giuen vnto every good work.
 26 But refuse the yonger widowes for when they
 27 haue begun to wax wanton against Christ, they
 28 will marrie, * Having damnation, because they
 29 haue broken the first faith. * And likewise also
 30 being idle they learne to go about from house
 31 to house: yea, they are not onely idle, but also
 32 talkers, & busibodies: speaking things which
 33 are

I. TIMOTHEVS.

14 are not comely. * I will therefore that the younger women marry, & beare children, & gouern the house, & giue none occasion to the aduersarie
 15 farie to speake euill. * For certaine are already so
 16 turned back after Satan. * If any faithfull man
 or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them be
 minister vnto them; and let not the Church be
 charged, that there may be sufficient for them
 17 that are widowes in deed. * The Elders that
 rule well, let them be had in double honour,
 specially they which labour in the word & doctrine.
 18 * For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not
 mouel the mouth of the ox that treadeth out
 the corne: & The labourer is worthy of his
 19 wages. * Against an Elder receiue none accusation
 20 but vnder two or three witnesses. * Them that
 sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may
 21 feare. * I charge thee before God & the Lord
 Iesus Christ, & the elect Angels, that thou
 22 serue these things without preferring one
 another, & do nothing partially. * Lay hands
 suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of
 23 their mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure. * Drink
 no longer water, but vse a litle wine for thy
 24 mackes sake, & thine often infirmities. * Some
 mens sinnes are open before hand, & go be
 vnto iudgement: but some mens sinnes followe
 25 * Likewise also the good works are manifest
 fore hand, & they that are otherwise, can not
 hid.

C H A P. V L

1 **L**et as many seruants as are vnder the yoke
 count their masters worthy of all honour

CHAP. I.

e you at the Name of God, & his doctrine be not
 overmuch spoken of. *And they which haue bele- 2
 adoring masters, let the not despise them, because
 because they are brethren, but rather doe seruice, because
 all they are faithfull, & beloved, & partakers of
 the same benefite. These things teach & exhort. * If 3
 church any man teach otherwise, & consenteth not to
 the wholesome words of our Lord Iesus Christ,
 to the doctrine, which is according to god-
 oneness, *He is put vp & knoweth nothing, but 4
 & stirreth about questions & strife of words, wher-
 alt and commeth enuie, strife, railings, euill surmi-
 ses, *Froward disputations of men of corrupt 5
 mindes & destitute of the truth, which thinke
 that gain is godlines: from such separate thy
 self. * But godlines is great gain, if a man be 6
 content with that he hath. *For we brought 7
 into the worlde, & it is certen, that
 we can carie nothing out. *Therefore when we 8
 have food & raiment, let vs therewith be con-
 tent. *For they that will be rich, fall into ten- 9
 tion & snares, & into many foolish & noy-
 some lustes, which drown men in perdition &
 destruction. *For the desire of money is the root 10
 of all euill, which while some lusted after, they
 have fallen from the faith, & pierced themselves thro-
 ugh with many sorrowes. *But thou, O man 11
 of God, see these things, & follow after righte-
 ousnes, godlines, faith, loue, patience, & meeke-
 nes. *Fight the good fight of faith: lay hold of 12
 eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and
 hast professed a good profession before many

M m. 3.

witnes.

I. TIMOTHEVS.

- 13** witnesses. *I charge thee in the sight of god, who quickneth all things, & before Iesus Christ, who vnder Pontius Pilat witnessed a good confession
14 *That thou keep *this* commandement without spot, & vnrubkeable, vntil the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ, *Which in due time he sheweth, that is blessed & Prince only, the King of kings, & Lord of lords, *who only hath immortality, & dwelleth in the light that none can attain vnto, whom neuer man saw, neither can see vnto who be honour & power everlasting, Amen
17 *Charge them that are rich in this worlde, that they be not hie minded, & that they trust not in vncerten riches, but in the liuing god (which giveth us abundantly all things to enioy) * That they do good, & be rich in good works, & ready to distribute & communicate, *Laying vp treasure for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may obtaine eternal life
20 *O Timotheus, keep that which is committed vnto thee, & auoid prophane & vain babbling, & oppositiōs of science falsely so called, *While some profess, they haue erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee, Amen. ¶ The first Epistle to Timotheus written from Laodicea which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

Paul to Timotheus.

CHAP. I.

- 1** **P**AVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promises

CHAP. I.

of, which is in Christ Iesus, * To Timotheus 2
 it, which beloued sonne; Grace, mercy & peace from
 bleſſion God the Father, & from Iesus Christ our Lord.
 without I thanke God, whome I ſerue from mine el- 3
 g of oſers with pure conſcience, that without cea-
 be ſhing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers
 King night and day, * Deſiring to ſee thee, mindfull 4
 mind of thy teares, that I may bee filled with ioy:
 can When I call to remembrance the vnſained 5
 e cã ſaith that is in thee, which dwelt firſt in thy
 g, And grandmother Lois, & in thy mother Eunice, &
 de, thou art assured that it dwelleth in thee alſo. * Where 6
 e not ſore, I put thee in remembrance that thou ſtir
 rich vp the giſt of God which is in thee, by the put-
 * Thing on of mine hands. * For God hath not gi- 7
 & reuen to vs the Spirit of feare, but of power, &
 g vp loue, and of a ſound minde. * Be not therefore 8
 inſt ſhamed of the testimony of our Lord, neither
 al liſt of me his priſoner: but be partakers of the af-
 mitted ſſictions of the Goſpel, according to the power
 bling of God, * Who hath ſaned vs, and called vs 9
 Which with an holy calling, not according to our
 erniſ workes, but according to his owne purpoſe &
 he firſt grace, which was given to vs through Chriſt
 odice Iesus before the world was, * But is now made 10
 acian manifest by that appearing of our Saniour Iesus
 O Chriſt, who hath aboliſhed death, and hath
 brought life & immortalitie vnto light through
 the Goſpel, * Wherunto I am appointed a pre- 11
 cher, & Apoſtle, & a teacher of the Gentils. * For 12
 by the which cauſe I alſo ſuffer theſe things, but I
 nes am not ſhamed: for I know whom I haue be-

II. TIMOTHEVS.

leened, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed to him against that day. *Keep the true patterne of those wholesome words, which thou hast heard of me in vs. 24 in faith & loue which is in Christ Iesus. *This is a worthy thing, which was committed to thee, that thou keep through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs. 25 *This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia, be turned from me: of which sort were 26 Phygellus & Hermogenes. *The Lord giue mercy vnto the house of Onesiphorus: for he oft refreshed me, & was not ashamed of my chains. 27 *But when he was at Rome, he sought me very diligently, & found me. *The Lord graunt to him, that he may finde mercy with the Lord at that day, & in how many things he hath ministered vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

C A A P. II.

THOU therefore, my sonne, bee strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus. *And what things thou hast heard of me, by many witnesses, the same deliuer to faithful men, which shall be able to teach other also. *Thou therefore suffer affliction as a good soldier of Iesus Christ. *No man that warreth, entangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life, because he would please him that hath chosen him to be a soldier. *And if any man also strine for a mastery, he shall not be crowned, except he strine as he ought to do. *The husbandman must labour before he receiue the fruits. *Consider what I say & the Lord giue thee vnderstanding in all things. *Remember

C H A P. II.

ble that Iesus Christ made of the seed of Dauid, was
 raised again from the dead according to my Gos-
 pel. * Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, 9
 of men vnto bonds: but the worde of God is not
 bound. * Therefore I suffer all things, for the elects 10
 that they might also obtaine the saluation
 which is in Christ Iesus with eternal glory. * For 11
 which is true saying, For if we be dead together with
 him, we also shall liue together with him. * If we 12
 be ashamed, we shall also reigne together with him: If
 we denie him, he also will denie vs. * If we be- 13
 come false, yet abideth he faithfull: he can not
 be false himselfe. * Of these things put them in re- 14
 membrance, & protest before the Lorde, that
 they straine not about words, which is to no pro- 15
 fit, but to the periuering of the hearers. * Studie
 to shew thy selfe approued vnto God, a work- 16
 man that needeth not to be ashamed, diuiding
 the word of truth aright. * Stay prophane and 17
 idle babblings: for they shall increase vnto
 iracundie & enuies. * And their word shall fret as 18
 rotten timber: of which sort is Hymeneus & Philatus.
 Which as concerning the truth haue erred from 19
 Christ, saying that the resurrection is past
 already, & do destroy the faith of certaine. * But 20
 the foundation of God remaineth sure, & hath
 this seal, The Lord knoweth who are his, and,
 he will euenly one that calleth on the Name of 21
 Christ, depart from iniquitie. * Notwithstanding
 the great house are not only vessels of gold &
 of silver, but also of wood & of earth, & some
 to honour, & some vnto dishonour. * If any 22
 man

II. TIMOTHEVS.

man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shall
be a vessell vnto honour, sanctified, & meet
the Lord, & prepared vnto euery good worke.

- 22 *Flee also from the lustes of youth, & follow
after righteousness, faith, loue, & peace, with
23 the that cal on the Lord with pure heart, *And
put away foolish & vnlearned questions, know-
24 ing that they ingender strife. * But the seruice
of the Lord must not strine, but *must* be gentle
toward all men, apt to teach, suffering the
25 *Instructing them with meekenes that are con-
trary minded, *proving* if God at any time will
giue them repentance, that they may acknow-
26 ledge the truth, *And come to amendment
of that snare of the deuill, of whom they
taken prisoners, to *doe* his will.

CHAP. III.

- 1 **T**His know also, that in the last dayes shall
come perilous times. *For men shall be
2 uers of their owne selues, couetous, boasting
pronde, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents,
3 vnthankfull, vnholly; * Without naturall
4 affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, intem-
perate, fierce, no louers at all of them which
5 good, * Traitors, headie, hie minded, louers
pleasures more then louers of God, * Hauing
a shewe of godlinesse, but haue denyed the
power thereof: turne away therefore from
6 such. *For of this sort are they which creep
houses, and leade captiue simple women laden
with finnes, and led with diuers lusts, *Which
7 women are ever learning, & are never able
com

C H A P. II

come to the acknowledging of the truth.
 * And as Iannes & Iambres withstood Moses, 8
 so doe these also resist the truth, men of cor-
 rupt mindes, reprobate concerning the faith.
 * But they shall preuaile no longer: for their
 madness shall be euident vnto all men, as theirs
 also was. * But thou hast fully knowen my do- 10
 ctine, maner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffer-
 ing, loue, patience, * Persecutions, & afflictions 11
 which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium,
 and at Lyltri, which persecutions I suffered: but
 from them all the Lord deliuered me. * Yea, and 12
 all that wil liue godly in Christ Iesus, (shal suffer
 persecution. * But the euil men & deceiuers, that 13
 will waxe worse & worse, deceiuing & being de-
 ceived. * But continue thou in the thinges which 14
 thou hast learned, & which are committed vn-
 to thee: knowing of whome thou hast learned 15
 them: * And that thou hast knowen the holy
 Scriptures of a childe, which are able to make
 thee wise vnto saluation thorough the faith
 which is in Christ Iesus. * For the whole Scrip- 16
 ture is giuen by inspiration of God, & is profit-
 able to teach, to conuince, to correct, & to in-
 stru& in righteousness, * That the man of God 17
 may be absolute, beeing made perfect vnto all
 good works. C H A P. III.
 Charge thee therefore before God, & before 1
 the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the
 liue & dead at that his appearing, and in his
 kingdome, * Preach the word, in season, in sea- 2
 son, and out of season, in reproofe, in exhort
 with

II. TIMOTHY S.

1 with all long suffering and doctrine. * For the
 2 time will come, when they will not suffer whole
 3 some doctrine: but hauing their eares itching
 4 shal after their own lusts get them an heape
 5 teachers, * And shall turne their eares from the
 6 trueth, & shalbe giuen vnto fables. * But watch
 7 thou in all things: suffer aduersitie: do the work
 8 of an Euangelist: cause thy ministry to be thine
 9 roughly liked of. * For I am now readie to be
 10 offered, & the time of my departing is at hand.
 11 * I haue fought a good fight, & haue finished my
 12 course: I haue kept the faith. * For henceforth
 13 I haue laid vp for me the crown of righteousness, which
 14 the Lord the righteous iudge shall giue mee at
 15 that day, & not to me onely, but vnto al them
 16 that loue that his appearing. * Make speed
 17 come vnto me at once: * For Demas hath for-
 18 saken me, & hath embraced this present world:
 19 & is departed vnto Thessalonica. Crescens
 20 is gone to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia. * Onely
 21 Luke is with me. Take Marke & bring him with
 22 thee: for hee is profitable vnto mee to minis-
 23 ter. * And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.
 24 * The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpas,
 25 when thou comest, bring with thee, and the
 26 bookes, but specially the parchments. * Alex-
 27 ander the copper smith hath done me much
 28 wrong: the Lord rewarde him according to his
 29 works. * Of whome be thou ware also: for he
 30 withstood our preaching sore. * At my first
 31 answering no man assisted mee, but al forsooke
 32 me: I pray God, that it may not be laid to their
 33 charge.

CHAP. III.

large. *Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, 17
 & strengthened mee, that by me the preaching
 might be fully beleueed, & that all the Gentiles
 should heare: and I was deliuered out of the
 mouth of the Lyon. *And the Lord wil deliuer 18
 me from euery euil worke, & will preserve mee
 into his heavenly kingdome: to who be praise
 for ever & ever, Amen. *Salute Prisca, & Aquila, 19
 and the household of Onesiphorus. *Erastus a- 20
 bode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletu
 here. *Make speede to come before winter. Eu- 21
 phros greeteth thee, & Pudens, and Linus, and
 Claudia, and all the brethren. *The Lord Iesus 22
 Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you, A-
 men. ¶ The second *Epistle* written fro Rome
 unto Timotheus, the first Bishop elected of the
 Church of Ephesus, when Paul was presented
 the second time before the Emperour Nero.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to Titus.

CHAP. I.

PAUL a servant of God, & an A- 1
 postle of Iesus Christ, according
 to the faith of Gods elect, and the
 acknowledging of the trueth,
 which is according to godlinesse,
 vnto the hope of eternal life, which God that 2
 cannot lie, hath promised before the worlde
 began: * But hath made his word manifest in 3
 an time through the preaching which is com-
 mitted vnto me, according to the commande-

ment

T O T I T V S.

- ment of God our Saviour: *To Titus my natall sonne according to the comon faith, Grace & mercy & peace fro god the Father, & from our Lord Iesus Christ our Saviour. *For this cause left I thee in Creta; that thou shouldest continue to redresse the things that remain, & should ordein Elders in euery city, as I appointed thee.
- * If any be vnreproachable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of riot, neither are disobedient. * For as a Bishop must be vnreproachable, as Gods steward, arde, not froward, not angrie, not giue to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre, * But haue many followers, one that loneth goodnes, wise, righteous, holy, temperate, * Holding fast that faithful worde according to doctrine, that hee also may be able to exhort with wholesome doctrine, & conuince them that say against it. * For there are many disobedient & vaine talkers & deceiuers of mindes, chiefly they of the circumcision, whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching things, which they ought not, for filthie lucre sake. * One of them said, The Cretians are alwaies liars, euill belouers, slow bellies. * This witnes is true: wherefore conuince them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith. * And not taking heede to Iewish fables and commaundements of men, that turne away from the trueth. * Vnto the pure are all things pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vbeleewing, nothing pure, but euen their

CHAP. II.

names and consciences are defiled.* They pro- 16
fesse that they know God, but by works they
denie him, and are abominable and disobedient,
and are called vnto euery good worke reprobate.

CHAP. II.

1 Ve speake thou the thinges which become
 2 wholsome doctrine, * That the elder men be
 3 watchfull, graue, temperate, sound in the faith,
 4 reuerent, and in patience: * The elder womē like-
 5 wise, that they be in such behauiour as becom-
 6 eth holinesse, not false accusers, not subiect to
 7 much wine, *but* teachers of honest things, * That
 8 they may instruct the yong women to be sober
 9 minded, that they loue their husbands, that they
 10 reuerence their children, * *That they be* temperate,
 11 chaste, keeping at home, good & subiect vnto
 12 their husbandes, that the word of God be not
 13 despised. * Exhort young men likewise,
 14 that they be sober minded. * In all thinges
 15 shew thy selfe an ensample of good works, with
 16 pure doctrine, with grauitie, integritie,
 17 and with the wholsome worde, which can-
 18 not be condemned, that he which withstandeth
 19 thee may be ashamed, hauing nothing concerning
 20 thee to speake euill of. * Let seruants be subiect
 21 to their masters, and please *them* in all thinges,
 22 as vnto the Lord, answering againe, * Neither pykers, but
 23 as the Lord, that they shewe all good faithfulness, that they
 24 may adorne the doctrine of God our Saviour
 25 in all thinges. * For that grace of God, that bring-
 26 eth saluation vnto all men, hath appeared,
 27 And teacheth vs that we should deny vngod-
 28 liness

T O T T V S.

- lines and worldly lustes, & that we should live soberly & righteously, and godly in this present world. * Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of that glorie of that mightie God, and our Sauour Iesus Christ. * Who gave himselfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs to be a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes. * These things speake, and exhort, and continue with all authoritie. See that no man despise thee.

C H A P. III.

- P**Ut them in remembrance that they be subiect to the Principalities, & powers, and that they be obedient, and readie to euery good worke, * That they speake euill of no man, that they be no fighters, but soft, shewing all meeknes vnto all men. * For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceived, following the lustes and diuers pleasures, liuing in malicioufnes, and enuie, hatefull, & hating one another. * But when that bountifolnesse & that love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, * Not by the works of righteousness, which we had done, but according to his mercie hee saved vs, by the washing of the new birth, and the renewing of the holy Ghost. * Which he shed on vs abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Saviour, * That wee, being iustified by his grace, should be made heires according to the hope of eternall life. * This is a true saying, & these things I will thou shouldest affirme, that they

CHAP. I. III.

they which haue beloued God, might be care-
 full to shew forth good works. These things
 are good & profitable vnto men. * But stay for- 9
 such questions, & genealogies, and contentions,
 and braulings about the Law: for they are vn-
 profitable & vaine. * Reiect him that is an here- 10
 sike, after once or twice admonition. * Knowing 11
 that hee that is such, is peruertered & sinneth, be-
 ing damned of his owne selfe. * When I shall 12
 send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, he dili-
 gent to come to mee vnto Nicopolis: for I
 haue determined their to winter. * Bring Zenas 13
 the expounder of the Law, & Apollos on their
 journey diligently, that they lacke nothing.
 * And let ours also learne to shew forth good 14
 works for necessarie vses, that they be not vn-
 faithful. * Al that are with me salute thee. Greete 15
 them that loue vs in the faith. Grace be with
 you all, Amen. 16

¶ To Titus, elect the first Bishop of the
 Church of the Cretians, written from Ni-
 copolis in Macedonia. 17

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL

to Philemon.

CHAP. I.

PAUL a prisoner of Iesus Christ, 1
 & our brother Timotheus, vnto 2
 Philemon our deare friende, and 3
 fellow helper, * And to our deare 4
 sister Apphia, and to Archippus 5
 our fellow souldier, & to the Church that is in 6
 7
 8
 9
 10
 11
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17

N M I

thine

T O T I T U S.

- ment of God our Saviour. * To Titus my true
 4. rall sonne according to the comon faith, Grace,
 mercy & peace fro god the Father, & from the
 5. Lord Iesus Christ our Saviour. * For this cause
 left I thee in Creta; that thou shouldest continue
 to redresse the things that remain, & shouldest
 6. ordein Elders in euery city, as I appointed thee.
 * If any be vnreproachable, the husband of one
 wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not
 7. slandered of riot, neither are disobedient. * For
 a Bishop must be vnreproachable, as Gods stew-
 arde, not froward, not angrie, not giue to wine,
 8. no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre, * But haiti-
 rous, one that loneth goodnes, wise, righteous,
 9. holy, temperate, * Holding fast that faithfull
 worde according to doctrine, that hee also may
 be able to exhort with wholesome doctrine,
 10. to conuince them that say against it. * For there
 are many disobedient & vaine talkers & deui-
 11. sers of mindes, chiefly they of the circumci-
 on, * Whose mouthes must be stopped, who
 12. subuert whole houses, teaching thinges, which
 they ought not, for filthie lucre. * Of these
 themselves, *each* one of their owne sayeth
 said, The Cretians are alwaies liars, euill be-
 13. slow bellies. * This witnes is true: wherefore
 conuince them sharply, that they may be sound
 14. in the faith. * And not taking heede to Iewe-
 fables and commandments of men, that they
 15. may stay away from the truth. * Vnto the pure say
 thinges pure, but vnto them that are deui-
 and vbeleeting, say nothing pure, but euery

CHAP. II.

degrees and consciences are defiled. * They profess that they know God, but by workes they hate him, and are abominable and disobedient, and vnto every good worke reprobate.

CHAP. II.

We speake thou the thinges which become
 wholesome doctrine, * That the elder men be
 watchfull, graue, temperate, sound in the faith,
 in loue, and in patience: * The elder womē like-
 wise, that they be in such behauiour as becom-
 eth holinesse, not false accusers, not subiect to
 much wine, but teachers of honest thinges, * That
 they may instruct the yong women to be sober
 minded, that they loue their husbands, that they
 loue their children, * That they bee temperate,
 chaste, keeping at home, good & subiect vnto
 their husbandes, that the word of God be not
 blasphemed of. * Exhort young men likewise,
 that they be sober minded. * In all thinges
 let thy selfe an ensample of good works, with
 pure doctrine, with grauitie, integritie,
 and with the wholesome worde, which can-
 not be condemned, that he which withstandeth
 us be ashamed, hauing nothing concerning
 vs to speake euill of. * Let seruants be subiect
 to their masters, and please them in all thinges,
 as answering againe, * Neither pykers, but
 as they shewe all good faithfulness, that they
 may adorne the doctrine of God our Saviour
 in all thinges. * For that grace of God, that bringeth
 our saluation vnto all men, hath appeared,
 and teacheth vs that we should deny vngod-

lines

T O T I T V S.

- lines and worldly lustes, & that we should live soberly & righteously, and godly in this present world. * Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of that glorie of that mightie God, and our Saviour Iesus Christ. * Who gave himselfe for vs, that hee might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs to be a peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous of good workes. * These things speake, and exhort, and continue with all authoritie. See that no man despise thee.

C H A P. III.

- P**ut them in remembrance that they be subject to the Principalities, & powers, and that they be obedient, and readie to every good worke, * That they speake euill of no man, that they be no fighters, but soft, shewing all meeknes vnto all men. * For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceited, following the lustes and diuers pleasures, liuing in malicioufnes, and enuie, hatefull, & hating one another. * But when that beautifullnesse & the love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, * Not by the works of righteousness, which we had done, but according to his mercie he saved vs, by the washing of the new birth, and the renewing of the holy Ghost. * Which he shed on vs abundantly, through Iesus Christ our Saviour, * That wee, being iustified by grace, should be made heires according to the hope of eternall life. * (This is a true saying) these things I will thou shouldest affirme,

CHAP. IIII.

which have beloued God, might be enre-
 dited shew forth good works. These things
 are good & profitable vnto men. But stay for-
 th questions, & genealogies, and contentions,
 and brawlings about the Law: for they are vn-
 profitable & vaine. *Reiect him that is an here-
 sity once or twice admonition. *Knowing
 that he that is such, is peruerter, & sinne-
 ing damned of his owne selfe. * When I shall
 send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be dili-
 gent to come to mee vnto Nicopolis: for I
 have determined their to winter. *Bring Zenas
 the expounder of the Law, & Apollos on their
 journey diligently, that they lacke nothing.
 And let ours also learne to shew forth good
 works for necessarie vses, that they be not vn-
 fruitfull. *Al that are with me salute thee. Greete
 them that loue vs in the faith. Grace be with
 you all, Amen.

To Titus, elect the first Bishop of the
 Church of the Cretians, written from Ni-
 copolis in Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL

to Philemon.

CHAP. I.

P

A V L a prisoner of Iesus Christ,
 & our brother Timotheus, vnto
 Philemon our deare friende, and
 fellow helper, *And to our deare
 sister Apphia, and to Archippus
 our fellow souldier, & to the Church that is in


TO PHILEMON.

- 3 thine house. * Grace be with you, & peace from
 God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ.
 4 * I giue thanks to my God, making mention al-
 5 waies of thee in my prayers, * (When I hear of
 thy loue and faith, which thou hast toward the
 6 Lord Iesus, and toward all Saintes) * That the
 fellowship of thy faith may be made effectually,
 & that whatsoever good thing is in you thro-
 7 rough Christ Iesus, may be known. * For we
 haue great ioy & consolation in thy loue, be-
 8 cause by thee, brother, the Saintes bowels are
 comforted. * Wherefore, though I be very bold
 in Christ to command thee that which is con-
 9 venient, * Yet for loues sake I rather beseech
 thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged, & now
 10 a prisoner for Iesus Christ. * I beseech thee
 for my sonne Onesimus, who I haue begotten in
 11 my bonds. * Which in time past was to thee
 vnprofitable, but now profitable both to thee
 12 & to mee. * Who I haue sent againe: thou there-
 fore receive him, that is mine owne bowels,
 13 * Whom I would haue retained with me, that
 in thy stead he might haue ministered vnto me
 14 in the bonds of the Gospel. * But without thy
 minde would I doe nothing, that thy benefite
 should not be as it were of necessitie, but wil-
 15 lingly. * It may be that hee therefore departed
 for a season, that thou shouldest receive him
 16 for ever, * Not now as a seruant, but aboue
 seruant, euen as a brother beloued, specially to
 mee: how much more then vnto thee, both in
 17 the flesh, and in the Lord? * If therefore thou
 count

things common, seeing him as my
 If hee hath hurte thee, or oweth thee 18
 that put on mine accounts. * I Paul haue 19
 with mine owne hands: I will re-
 spond it, albeit I doe not say to thee, that
 thou owest moreover vnto mee any thing
 tolle. * Yea, brother, let me obtaine this 20
 of thee in the Lord, comfort my bow-
 in the Lord. * Trusting in thine obedience, I 21
 wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt doe
 as more then I say. * Moreover also prepare 22
 lodging: for I trust through your prayers I
 have freely given vnto you. * I here salute thee 23
 as my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus,
 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, & Luke my fellow 24
 labourers. * The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be 25
 with your spirit, Amen. * Writer from
 Rome to Philemon, and sent by Onesimus a ser-
 vant.

THE EPISTLE TO THE HE- brewes.

CHAP. I.

 T sundrie times and in diuerse
 manners God spake in the olde
 time to our Fathers by the Pro-
 phets: in these last daies hee hath
 spoken vnto vs by his Sonne,
 Whome hee hath made heire of all thinges, 2
 by whome also hee made the worldes, * Who 3
 being

TO THE HEBREWES.

- being the brightness of the glorie, and the
 gladdened forme of his person, and bearing vp
 things by his mightie worde, hath by himselfe
 purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand
 4 of the Maiestie in the highest places; * And is
 made so much more excellent then the Angels
 in as much as hee hath obtained a more excel-
 5 lent Name then they. * For vnto which of the
 Angels said he at any time, Thou art my Sonne,
 this day begate I thee? and againe, I will be thy
 6 Father, and he shalbe my Sonner. * And againe
 when hee bringeth in his first begotten Sonne
 into the world, hee saith, And let all the Angels
 7 of God worship him. * And of the Angels he
 saith, Hee maketh the Spirits his messengers,
 8 his ministers a flame of fire. * But vnto
 Sonne he saith, O God, thy throne is for euer,
 and the scepter of thy kingdome is a scepter
 9 of righteousness. * Thou hast loued righteousness
 and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, even
 God, hath anoynted thee with the oyle of glad-
 10 nesse about thy fellowes. * And, Thou, Lord,
 the begining hast established the earth, and
 the heauens are the workes of thine hands.
 11 * They shall perish, but thou doest remaine,
 they all shall waie olde as doeth a garment.
 12 * And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp,
 they shall be changed: but thou art the same,
 13 thy yeeres shall not faile. * Vnto which also
 the Angels said hee at any time, Sit at my
 hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.
 14 * Are they not all ministring spirits, sent

CHAPTER II

...for their sakes, which shalbe heires 14
...?

CHAP. II.

Therefore we ought diligently to give
heede to the things which we haue heard,
at any time we run out. * For if the word
spoken by Angels was stedfast, and every trans-
gression & disobedience receiued a iust recom-
pense of rewarde, * Howe shall we escape, if we
obey so great saluation? which at the first
was to be preached by the Lord, & after ward
was confirmed vnto vs by the that heard him.
God bearing witnesse thereto, both with
signes and wonders & with diuers miracles, and
power of the holy Ghost according to his owne
will. * For he hath put in subiection vnto
us Angels the worlde to come, whereof we
speak. * But one in a certaine place witnessed,
saith, What is man, that thou shouldst be
inuent of him? or the sonne of man that thou
shouldst consider him? * Thou madest him a
little inferior to the Angels: thou crownedst
him with glory & honour, & hast set him above
the workes of thine hands. * Thou hast put all
things in subiection vnder his feet. And yet that
thou hast put all things in subiection vnder him,
yet nothing that should not be subiect vnto
him. But we yet see not all things subdued vnto
him. * But we see Iesus crowned with glory &
honour, which was made a little inferior to the
Angels, through the suffering of death, that
by Gods grace he might talke of death for all

TO THE HEBREWS.

10 men. * For it became him, for whom are all these things, seeing
 that he brought many children vnto glory, that
 he should consecrate the Prince of their faith.
 11 on through afflictions. * For he that sanctified,
 and they which are sanctified, are all of one:
 wherefore he is not ashamed to call them bro-
 12 thers, * Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto
 my brethren: in the middes of the Church will
 13 sing praises to thee. * And againe, I will put my
 trust in him. And againe, Behold here am I,
 14 the children which God hath giuen me. * Re-
 as much then as the children are partakers
 of flesh and blood, he also himselfe likewise took
 part with them, that he might destroy the
 15 death, him that had the power of death, that
 is the deuil, * And that he might deliver all them
 which for feare of death were all their liues
 16 subject to bondage. * For he in no sort
 took the Angels nature, but he tooke on
 17 the seede of Abraham. * Wherefore in all things
 he was made like vnto his brethren, that he might be mercifull, & a merciful
 18 high Priest in things concerning God, that he
 might make reconciliation for the finnes of the
 19 people. * For in that he suffered, & was tempted,
 he is able to succour them that are tempted.

C H A P. III.

1 Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the
 heavenly vocation, consider the Apostle &
 2 Priest of our profession Christ Iesus: * Who
 was faithfull to him that hath appointed him

C H A P. III.

as Moses was in all his house. * For this
 man is counted worthe of more glorie then
 Moses, in as much as he which hath builded the
 house, hath more honour then the house. * For
 every house is builded of some man; & he that
 hath builded all things, is God. * Nowe Moses ye-
 rely was faithfull in all his house, as a servant,
 & a witnes of the things which should be spo-
 ken after. * But Christ is as the Sonne, ouer his
 fathers house, whose house we are, if we hold fast
 the confidence & that reioycing of that hope
 unto the end. * Wherefore, as the holy Ghost
 saith, To day if ye shall heare his voyce, * Har-
 den not your hearts, as in the prouocation, ac-
 cording to the day of the tentation in the wil-
 dernes. * Where your fathers tempted me, pro-
 ued me, & saw my workes fourtie yeeres long,
 & wherefore I was grieved, with that genera-
 tion, and said, They are ener in their hearts, nei-
 ther haue they knowen my wayes. * Therefore
 I swore in my wrath, If they shall enter in to
 my rest. * Take heed brethren, lest at any time
 there be in any of you an euill heart, & unfaith-
 full to depart away from the liuing God. * But
 comfort one another daily, while it is called To-
 day, lest any of you be hardened through the
 deceitfulness of Sinne. * For we are made per-
 takers of Christ, if we keepe firme vnto the ende
 that beginning, wherewith we are wpholden,
 so long as it is saide, To day if ye heare his
 voyce, harden not your hearts, as in the prouo-
 cation. * For spake when they heard, & doubted

TO THE HEBREWS.

him to anger: howbeit, not all that came out
 17 of Egypt by Moses: ⁹ But with whom was
 displeased foultie yeeres? Was he not displeased
 with them that sinned, whose carkeises lay
 18 in the wilderness? ¹⁰ And to whom swa he
 that they should not enter into his rest, but
 19 vnto them, that obeyed not? ¹¹ So as to see that
 they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

C H A P. I I I I.

1 **L**et vs feare therefore, leste at any time by
 forsaking the promise of entering into the
 rest, any of you should seeme to be deprived.
 20 ¹² For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as
 vnto them: but the word that they heard, profi-
 21 fited not them, because it was not mixed with
 22 faith in those that heard it. ¹³ For we which
 haue beleeued, doe enter into rest, as he saith
 23 the other, As I haue sworn truly vnto my selfe,
 I shall enter into my rest: although the workes
 24 were finished from the foundation of the world.
 25 ¹⁴ For he spake in a certaine place of the seventh
 day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh
 26 day from all his workes. ¹⁵ And in this place
 againe, If they shall enter into my rest. ¹⁶ Some
 therefore it remained, that some must come
 27 therein, and they so who found it was first
 28 preached, entered not therein for vnbeliefe. ¹⁷ Where-
 fore he appointed Iudas a certaine day.
 29 To day, after so long a time, saying, as it is said
 30 This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden not your
 31 heartes. ¹⁸ For if Iesus had giuen them rest, he
 32 would he not also this haue spoken of another
 mid

There remaineth therefore a rest to the
 people of God. * For he that is entered into his
 rest, is also crased from his owne workes, as
 God is from his. * Let vs studie therefore to
 enter into that rest; least any man fall after the
 same ensample of disobedience. * For the word
 of God is lively, and mightie in operation, and
 sharper then any two edged sword, and cutteth
 through, even vnto the deuiding asunder of the
 ioynt, and the spirite, and of the ioynts, and the
 sinews, & is a discerner of the thoughts, and
 intents of the heart. * Neither is there any
 creature, which is not manifest in his sight; but
 all things are naked and open vnto his eyes,
 and without any dreasure to doe. * Seeing then
 we haue such a great high Priest, which is en-
 tered into heauen, euen Iesus the Sonne of God,
 let us holde fast our profession. * For we haue
 such a high Priest, which can not be touched
 with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in
 all things tempted in like sort, yet without sinne.
 Let us therefore go boldly vnto the throne of
 grace, that we may receiue mercie, and finde
 grace to helpe in time of neede.

W G H A B V T O T

Every high Priest is taken from among
 men, he is ordained for men, in things pertaining
 to God, that he may offer both giftes and
 sacrifices for sinnes. * Which is able sufficiently
 to make compassion on them that are ig-
 norant, and that are out of the way, because that he
 is compassed with infirmities. * And for the

James

TO THE HEBREWES

James sake he is bound to offer for sinnes, as
 4 well for his owne sin, as for the peoples: And
 no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but
 5 he that is called of God, as ^{was} Aaron. So
 likewise Christ tooke not to him selfe this ho-
 6 nour, to be made the hie Priest, but he that
 vnto him, Thou art my sonne, this day began
 6 I thee, *gave it him.* * As he also in another place
 speaketh, Thou art a Priest for ever, after the or-
 7 der of Melchi-sedec. * Who in the dayes of his
 flesh did offer vp prayers & supplications, with
 strong crying & teares vnto him, that was able
 8 to save him from death, and was also heauy
 that which he feared. * And though he was
 9 the Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the
 things which he suffered, * And being con-
 10 crate, was made the authour of eternall salu-
 on vnto all them that obey him: * And is cal-
 11 led of God an hie Priest after the order of Mel-
 chi-sedec. * Of whome we haue many things
 to say, which are hard to be vttered, because ye
 12 are dull of hearing. * For when as concerning
 the time ye ought to be teachers, yet haue
 need again that we teach you what are the
 13 principles of the word of God: & are become
 such as haue neede of milke, and not of strong
 14 meate. * For every one that useth milke, is
 expert in the word of righteousness, for he is
 a babe. * But strong meate belongeth to them
 that are of age, which through long vse
 haue their wits exercised to discerne both good
 and euill.

Therefore, leaning the doctrine of the begin-
 ning of Christ, let vs be led forward vnto
 perfection, not laying againe the foundation of
 repentance from dead workes, and of faith to-
 ward God, * Of the doctrine of baptesme, and
 laying on of hands, & of the resurrection from
 the dead, & of eternall iudgement. * And this
 will we doe, if God permit. * For it is impossi-
 ble, that they which were once lightened, and
 have tasted of the heavenly gift, & were made
 partakers of the holy Ghost, * And have tasted
 the good word of God, & of the powers of
 the world to come, * If they fall away, should
 be renewed againe by repentance: seeing they
 crucifie againe to themselves the Sonne of God,
 and make a mocke of him. * For the earth
 which drinketh in the raine that cometh oft
 vpon it, & bringeth forth herbes meet for them
 by whome it is dressed, receiveth blessing of
 God. * But that which beareth thornes and bri-
 ars, is reprobued, & is neere vnto cursing, whose
 end is to be burned. * But beloved, we have
 perswaded our selues better things of you, and
 such as accompany saluation, though we thus
 speake. * For God is not vnrighteous, that he
 should forget your worke, and labour of love,
 which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye
 have ministered vnto the Saintes, and yet mini-
 ster. * And we desire that every one of you
 shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of
 hope vnto the end, * That ye be not fleshly,
 but followers of them, which through faith and
 patience,

TO THE HEBREWES.

13 patience, inherite the promises. * For when God
 made the promise to Abraham, because he had
 no greater to sweare by, he sware by himselfe,
 14 * Saying. Surely I will abundantly blesse thee,
 15 and multiplie thee maruailously. * And so after
 that he had taryed patiently, he enioyed the
 16 promise. * For men verely sweare by him that
 is greater *then them selues*, and an othe for con-
 17 firmation is among the an end of all strife. * For
 God willing more abundantly to shew unto
 the heier of promises the stablesse of his coun-
 18 sell, bound him selfe by an othe, * That by two
 immutable things, wherein it is vnposible that
 God should lye, we might haue strong confu-
 19 sion, which haue our refuge to lay holde vpon
 that hope which is set before vs. * Which hope
 we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and
 20 steadfast, & it entreth into that which is within
 the vail. * Whither the forerunner is for vs
 21 first in. *even* Iesus that is made an hie Priest
 after the order of Melchisedec.
 22 **C H A P. V I I.**
 23 **O**f this Melchisedec King of Salem, an
 Priest of the most hie God, who met Ab-
 24 ram, as he returned from the slaughter of the
 25 King, & blessed him: * To whom also Ab-
 ram gaue the tithes of all thinges: who first
 by interpretation King of righteousness, and
 26 that he is also King of Salem, that is, King of
 27 peace. * Without father, without mother, without
 28 beginning, and hath neither beginning of
 day, neither ende of life, but is likened vnto
 the Sonne of God.

CHAP. VII.

the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for
 ever. * Now consider how great this man was,
 to whom even the Patriarke Abraham gave
 the title of the spoyle. * For verely they which
 are the childre of Levi, which receive the office
 of the Priesthood, haue a commaundement to
 be according to the Law, tithes of the people
 (that is, of their brethren) though they came out
 of the loynes of Abraham. * But he whole kin-
 d is not counted among them, receiued tithes
 of Abraham, & blessed him that had the promi-
 se. * And without all contradiction the lesse
 is blessed of the greater. * And here men that
 receiue tithes: but there he *receiveth them*,
 of whome it is witnessed, that he liueth. * And
 as the thing is, Levi also which receiue-
 th, payed tithes in Abraham. * For he was
 in the loynes of his father *Abraham*, when
 Melchisedec met him. * If therefore perfection
 had bene by the Priesthood of the Levites, (for
 under it the law was established to the people)
 what needed it furthermore, that another Priest
 should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and
 not to be called after the order of Aaron? * For
 if the Priesthood be changed, then of necessitie
 must there be a change of the Law. * For he of
 whom these things are spoken, pertaineth vnto
 another tribe, whereof no man serued at the al-
 tar. * For it is euident, that our Lord sprung out
 of Iuda, concerning the which tribe Moses spake
 nothing, touching the Priesthood. * And it is
 yet a more euident thing, because that after the
 similitude

TO THE HEBREWES.

- 16 *similitude of Melchi-fedec, there is risen vpon*
 other Priest, * Which is not made Priest after
 the Law of the carnall commandement, but af-
 17 ter the power of the endlesse life. * For he testi-
 fied *thus*. Thou art a Priest for euer, after the
 18 order of Melchi-fedec. * For the commande-
 ment that went afore, is disanulled, because of
 19 the weaknesse thereof, & vnprofitableness. * For
 the Law made nothing perfite, but the bringing
 in of a better hope *made perfite*, whereby we
 20 draw neere vnto God. * And for as much as it
 is not without an othe (for these are made
 21 Priests without an othe: * But this is made with
 an othe by him that said vnto him, The Lord
 hath sworne, & wil not repēt, Thou art a Priest
 22 for euer, after the order of Melchi-fedec) * By so
 much is Iesus made a surety of a better Testa-
 23 ment. * And among them many were made
 Priests, because they were not offered to en-
 24 dure, by the reason of death. * But this man, be-
 cause he endureth euer, hath a priesthood which
 25 can not passe from one to another. * Where-
 fore, he is able also perfectly to saue them that
 26 come vnto God by him, seeing he euer liueth
 to make intercession for them. * For such
 his Priest it became vs to haue, *which is holy*
 harmlesse, vndefiled, separate from sinners, and
 27 made higher then the heauens: * Which needeth
 not daily as those his Priests to offer
 sacrifice, first for his owne finnes, & then for the
 peoples: for that did he once, when he offered
 28 vp him selfe. * For the Law maketh men high

Priests

22 CHAP. VIII.

which haue infirmitie : but the worde
of the one that was since the Law, *maketh* the
same, who is consecrated for euermore.

CHAP. VIII.

Nowe of the things which we haue spoken, 1
this is the summe, that we haue such an hie
priest, that sitteth at the right hande of the
throne of the Maiestie in heauens, * And is a 2
minister of the Sanctuary, and of that true Ta-
bernacle which the Lorde pight, and not man,
* For every hie Priest is ordained to offer both 3
giftes & sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessi-
tie, that this man should haue somewhat also
to offer. * For he were not a Priest, if he were 4
on the earth, seeing there are Priests that accor-
ding to the Law offer giftes, * Who serue vnto 5
the paterne and shadow of heauenly thinges as
Moses was warned by God, when he was about
to finish the Tabernacle. See, said he, that thou
make all things according to the paterne, shew-
ed vnto thee in the mount. * But nowe *our high* 6
Priest hath obtained a more excellent office,
in as much as he is the Mediatour of a better
Testament, which is established vpon better
promises. * For if that first *Testament* had bene 7
blameable, no place should haue bene sought
for the second. * For in rebuking them he saith, 8
Beholde, the dayes will come, saith the Lorde,
when I shall make with the house of Israel, and
with the house of Iuda a new Testament: * Not 9
the Testament, that I made with their fa-
thers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand,

TO THE HEBREWES.

- to leade them out of the land of Egypt: but they continued not in my Testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. * For this is the Testament that I will make with the house of Israel, After those dayes, saith the Lord, I will put my Lawes in their minde, & in their heart I will write them, & I will be their God, & they shall be my people, * And they shall not vex euery man his neighbour, and euery man his brother, saying, Knowe the Lorde: for all shall know me, from the least of them to the greatest of them. * For I will be mercifull to their vnrighteousnes, & I wil remember their sinnes, and their iniquities no more. * In that he maketh a newe Testament, he hath abrogate the old: nowe that which is disannulled and waxed old, is ready to vanish away.

C H A P. IX.

- 1 **T**Hen the first Testament had also ordinance
2 of religion, and a worldly Sanctuary. * In
the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was
candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread,
which Tabernacle is called the holy place.
3 * And after the second vail was the tabernacle,
4 which is called the holiest of all, * Where
had the golden censer, & the Arke of the Testament
ouersaid round about with gold, wherein
the golden pot which had Manna, and Aarons
rod that had budded, & the tables of the
5 Testament. * And ouer the Arke were the glorious
Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seat
of which things we will not now speake.

1. Nowe when these things were thus
 2. ended, the Priests went alwaies into the first
 3. tabernacle, and accomplished the service. * But 7
 4. the second went the hie Priest alone, once
 5. yere, not without blood which he offe-
 6. red for himselfe, and for the ignorances of the
 7. people. * Wherby the holy Ghost this signified, 8
 9. the way into the Holiest of all was not yet
 10. opened, while as yet the first tabernacle was
 11. standing. * Which was a figure for that present 9
 12. wherein were offered gifts & sacrifices that
 13. could not make holy, concerning the consciēce,
 14. that did the service, * Which onely stood 10
 15. meates & drinckes, & diuers washings, & car-
 16. minates, which were inioyned, vntill the time
 17. of reformation. * But Christ being come an hie 11
 18. Priest of good things to come, by a greater &
 19. more perfect Tabernacle, not made with
 20. hands, that is, not of this building. * Neither by 12
 21. the blood of goates & calves: but by his owne
 22. blood entred he in once vnto the Holy place,
 23. obtained eternall redemption for vs. * For if 13
 24. the blood of bulles & of goates, & the ashes of
 25. an heifer, sprinkling them that are vncleane,
 26. sanctifieth as touching the purifying of the
 27. flesh, Howe much more shall the blood of 14
 28. Christ, which through the eternall Spirit offe-
 29. red himselfe without fault to God, purge your
 30. consciēce from dead works, to serue the living
 31. God. * And for this cause is he the Mediator of 15
 32. the new Testament, that through death which
 33. was for the redemption of the transgressions

TO THE HEBREWEES.

that were in the former testament, they which
 were called, might receive the promises of eter-
 26 nal inheritance. *For where a Testament is, there
 must be the death of him that made the Testa-
 27 ment. *For the Testament is confirmed when
 men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long
 28 as he that made it, is alive. *Wherefore neither
 29 was the first ordained without blood. *For
 when Moses had spoken every precept to the
 people, according to the Lawe, hee took the
 blood of calves and of goates, with water and
 purple wooll, and hyssope, & sprinkled both
 30 the booke, and all the people, * saying, This
 is the blood of the Testament, which God hath
 31 appointed vnto you. *Moreover, he sprinkled
 likewise the Tabernacle with blood also, and
 32 all the ministring vessels. *And almost all things
 are by the Law purged with blood, and with-
 33 out shedding of blood is no remission. *It was
 then necessary, that the similitudes of heavenly
 things should be purified with such things: but
 the heavenly things themselves are purified
 34 with better sacrifices then are these. *For Christ
 is not entred into the holy places that are
 made with hands, which are similitudes of the
 true Sanctuary: but is entred into very heauen
 to appeare nowe in the sight of God for us.
 35 *Not that he shoulde offer himselfe often,
 as the hie Priest entred into the Holy place eu-
 36 ery yeere with other blood, * (For then he
 should haue often suffered since the foundation
 of the world) but now in the end of the world

C H A P. X.

he bene made manifest, once to put away
by the sacrifice of himselfe. * And as it is 27
appointed vnto men that they shall once die,
after that cometh the iudgement: * So 28
Christ was once offered to take away the finnes
many, and vnto them that looke for him,
he appeare the second time without sinne
of saluation.

C H A P. X.

Of the Lawe hauing the shadowe of good
things to come, and not the very image of
the things, can neuer with those sacrifices,
which they offer yere by yere continually, fan-
the commers thereunto. * For would they 2
then haue ceased to haue bene offered, be-
cause that the offerers once purged, shoulde
had no more conscience of finnes? * But in
these sacrifices there is a remembrance againe
of finnes euery yere. * For it is vnpossible that 4
blood of bulles and goates shoulde take a-
way finnes. * Wherefore when he cometh in
the worlde, he saith, Sacrifice and offering
thou wouldest not: but a body hast thou or-
dered me. * In burnt offerings, & sinne offer- 6
ings thou hast had no pleasure. * Then I saide, 7
I come (in the beginning of the booke it
is written of me) that I should doe thy will, O
God. * Aboue, when he saide, Sacrifice and of- 8
fing, and burnt offerings, and sinne offerings
thou wouldest not haue, neither haddest plea-
sure therein (which are offered by the Lawe.)
Then said he, Loe, I come to doe thy will, O 9

TO THE HEBREWES.

God, he taketh away the first, that he may
 10 blish the second. *By the which wil we are
 sanctified, *even* by the offering of Iesus Christ, once
 11 made. *And every Priest standeth daily mini-
 string, & oft times offereth one maner of offer-
 12 ring, which can neuer take away sinnes. *But
 this man after he had offered one sacrifice for
 sinnes, sitteth for ever at the right hand of God,
 13 *And from henceforth tatieth, till his enemies
 14 be made his foote stoole. *For with one offer-
 ring hath he consecrated for ever them, that are
 15 sanctified. *For the holy Ghost also beareth
 16 record: for after he had saide before, *This
 the Testament that I will make vnto them af-
 ter those daies, saith the Lorde, I will put
 lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I
 17 will write them, *And their sinnes & iniquities
 18 I remember no more. *Nowe where remission
 of these things is, there is no more offering for
 19 sinne. *Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the
 blood of Iesus we may be bold to enter into
 20 Holy place, *By the new & living way, which
 he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that
 21 is, his flesh: *And seeing we haue an high Priest
 22 which is ouer the house of God. *Let vs draw
 neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our
 heartes being pure from an euill conscience,
 23 *And washed in our bodies with pure water,
 let vs keepe the profession of our hope, without
 24 wauering, (for he is faithfull that promyseth)
 25 *And let vs consider one another, to proue
 vnto loue, and to good workes, *Not forsaking

fellowship that we haue among our selues,
 in the manner of some is: but let vs exhort one
 another, and that so much the more, because ye
 see that the day draweth neere: * For if wee 26
 haue willingly after that we haue receiued and
 acknowledged that trueth, there remaineth no
 more sacrifice for finnes; * But a fearefull looking 27
 for of iudgement, and violent fire; which shall
 consume the aduersaries. * He that despiseth Mo- 28
 ses law, dieth without mercy vnder two, or
 three witnesses: * Of how much sorer punish- 29
 ment suppose yee shall he bee worthy, which
 treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of God, and
 counteth the blood of the Testament as an vn-
 holy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and
 with despite the spirit of grace? * For we know 30
 that hath said, Vengeance *belongeth vnto*
me: I will recompence, saith the Lord. And a-
 gain, The Lord shall iudge his people. * It is a 31
 full thing to fall into the handes of the li-
 ving God. * Now cal to remembrance the daies 32
 that we passed, in the which, after ye had recei-
 ued light, yee indured a great fight in afflicti-
 on. * Partly while yee were made a gazing 33
 stocke both by reproches and afflictions, and
 partly while yee became companions of them
 which were so tossed too and fro. * For both ye 34
 grewed with me for my bonds & suffered with
 by the spoiling of your goods: knowing in
 your selues how that ye haue in heauen a bet-
 ter and an enduring substance. * Cast not away 35
 therefore your confidence which hath great re-

TO THE HEBREWES

36 compence of reward. *For ye haue need of
 37 patience, that after ye haue done the will of God,
 ye might receiue the promises. *For yet a very
 litle while, & he that shall come, wil come, and
 38 will not tary. *Now the iust shall liue by faith,
 but if any withdrawe himselfe, my soule shall
 39 haue no pleasure in him. *But we are not they
 which withdraw our selues vnto perdition, but
 follow faith vnto the conseruation of the soule.

C H A P. XI.

N Ow faith is the ground of things, which
 are hoped for, and the euidence of things
 which are not seene. *For by it our elders are
 well reported of. *Through faith we vnderstand
 that the world was ordeyned by the word of
 God, so that the things which we see, are
 made of things, which did appeare. *By faith
 Abel offered a greater sacrifice to God than
 Cain, by the which he obtained witnes that he
 was righteous, God testifying of his gift: by
 the which faith also he being dead, yet speaketh.
 *By faith was Enoch translated, that he should
 not see death: neither was hee founde, for
 God had translated him: for before hee was
 translated, he was reported of, that he had
 pleased God. *But without faith it is vnpossible
 to please him: for hee that cometh to God,
 must beleene that God is, and that hee is
 rewarder of them that seeke him. *By faith was
 7 being warned of God of the things which were
 as yet not seene, moued with reuerence, ob-
 ayed the Arke to the sauing of his household,

through

CHAP. XI.

through the which *Arke* hee condemned the
 world, & was made beire of the righteousness
 which is by faith. * By faith Abraham when he
 was called, obeyed God, to go out into a place,
 which he should afterward receiue for inheri-
 tance, & he went out, not knowing whether he
 went. * By faith hee abode in the land of pro-
 mise, as in a strange country, as one that dwelt
 between with Isaac and Iacob, heires with him
 of the same promises. * For he looked for a city
 having a foundation, whose builder & maker is
 God. * Through faith Sara also received strength
 to conceive seed, and was deliuered of a child
 when she was past age, because she iudged him
 truthfull which had promised. * And therefore
 being there of one, euen of one which was
 dead, *for many* as the starres of the skie in mul-
 titude, & as the sand of the sea shore which is
 innumerable. * All these died in faith, & receiued
 not the promises, but saw them a farre off and
 believed *them*, & receiued *them* thankfully, and
 confessed that they were strangers & pilgrims
 on the earth. * For they that say such things, de-
 clare plainly that they seeke a country. * And if
 they had bene mindefull of that *country*, from
 whence they came out, they had leisure to haue
 returned. * But now they desire a better, that is
 heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed of
 them to be called their God: for he hath prepa-
 red for the a city * By faith Abraham offered vp
 Isaac, when he was tryed. & hee that had recei-
 ued the promises, offered his onely begotten

TO THE HEBREWES

- 18** Sonne, *(To whome it was saide, In Isaac shall
19 thy seed be called.) * For hee considered that
 God was able to raise *him* vp euen from the
 dead: from whence he receiued him also after
20 sort. * By faith Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau
21 concerning things to come. * By faith Iacob
 when he was a dying, blessed both the sonnes
 of Ioseph, and *leaning* on the ende of his staffe
22 worshipped God. * By faith Ioseph when he
 died, made mention of the departing of the chil-
 dren of Israell, and gaue commandement
23 of his bones. * By faith Moses when he was borne
 was hid three moneths of his parents, because
 they saw he was a proper childe, neither feared
24 they the Kings commandement. * By faith Mo-
 ses when he was come to age, refused to be
25 called the sonne of Pharaos daughter, * And
 chose rather to suffer aduersitie with the peo-
 ple of God, then to enioy the pleasures
26 of sinnes for a season, * Esteeming the rebukes
 of Christ greater riches then the treasures of E-
 gypt: for he had respect vnto the recompence
27 of the reward. * By faith he forlooke Egypt,
 feared not the fiercenes of the king: for he en-
 dured, as he that sawe him which is invisible.
28 * Through faith he ordeined the Pascheuer,
 and the effusion of blood, lest he that destroyed
29 the first borne, should touch them. * By faith
 they passed through the red sea as by dry land,
 which when the Egyptians had assayed to do,
30 they were swallowed vp. * By faith the walls
 of Iericho fell downe after they were compa-

C H A P. XI.

About seuen daies. *By faith the harlot Ra- 35
 phael perished not with them which obeyed not,
 when shee had receiued the spies peaceably.
 *And what shal I more say? for the time woul- 36
 be too short for me to tell of Gedeon, of Barac,
 and of Sampson, and of Iephth, also of David,
 and Samuell, and of the Prophets: *Which tho- 37
 rough faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righ-
 teousnes, obteyned the promises, stopped the
 mouthes of lyons, *Quenched the violence of 38
 fire, escaped the edge of the sworde, of weake
 were made strong, waxed valiant in battell,
 turned to flight the armies of the aliants *The 39
 women receiued their dead rased to life: other
 were racked and would not be deliuered,
 that they might receiue a better resurrection.
 *And others haue bene tryed by mockings & 40
 scourgings, yea, moreouer by bondes and pri-
 sonment. *They were stoned they were hewen 41
 in sunder, they were tempted, they were slaine
 with the sworde, they wandred vp and downe
 in sheepes skinnies, and in goates skinnies being
 hungry, afflicted, & tormented: *Whome the 42
 worlde was not worthy of: they wandred in
 wildernesses and mountaines, and denes, and
 caves of the earth. *And these all through faith 43
 obtained good reporte, and receiued not the
 promises, *God prouiding a better thing for 44
 vs, that they without vs should not be made
 perfect.

C H A P.

TO THE HEBREWES.

CHAP. XII.

Wherefore, let vs also, seeing that we are
 compassed with so great a cloude of wit-
 nesses, cast away euery thing that presseth
 down, and the sinne that hangeth so fast on
 let vs runne with patience the race that is set
 before vs, *Looking vnto Iesus the author &
 finisher of our faith: who for the ioy that was
 set before him, endured the crosse, and despised
 the shame, and is set at the right hande of the
 throne of God. *Consider therefore him that
 endured such speaking against of sinners, lest
 ye should be wearied and faint in your minds.
 *Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, striving
 against sinne. *And ye haue forgotten the ex-
 hortation, which speaketh vnto you as vnto chil-
 dren, My sonne, despise not the chastening of
 the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked
 of him. *For whom the Lord loveth he chasten-
 eth: and he scourgeth euery sonne that he lo-
 ueth: *If ye endure chastening, God of his
 mercie treateth you as vnto sonnes: for what
 sonne is it whom the father chasteneth not?
 therefore ye be without correction, when
 all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and
 not true sonnes. *Moreover we haue had the fathers
 of our bodies which corrected vs, and we gave
 them reverence: should we not much rather
 be in subiection vnto the Father of spirits, that
 is the Lord? *For they verely for a few daies
 chastened vs after their own pleasure: but he
 chasteneth vs for our profit, that we might be
 partakers of his holie glory.

C H A P. XXII.

ion of his holines. *Now no chastising for the
 iust seemeth to be ioyous, but grieuous: but
 sheweth it bringeth the quiet fruit of righte-
 ones, vnto them which are thereby exercised.
 *Wherefore lift up your handes which hang
 down, & your weak knees, *And make straight
 stapes vnto your fette, least that which is hal-
 ting, be turned out of the way, but let it rather
 be healed. *Follow peace with all men, & holi-
 nes, without the which no man shall see the
 Lord. *Take heede, that no man fall away from
 the grace of God: let no roote of bitterneffe
 spring up & trouble you, least thereby many be
 defiled. *Let there be no fornicator, or prophane
 person as Esau, which for one portion of meate
 sold his birthright. *For ye know how that af-
 terward also when hee would haue inherited
 the blessing, he was reiected: for hee founde no
 way to repentance, though hee sought that
 way with teares. *For ye are not come vnto
 the mount that might be touched, nor vnto
 burning fire, nor to blacknes, & darknes, & tem-
 pest, *Neither vnto the sound of a trumpet, and
 the voyce of wordes, which they that heard it,
 feared themselves, that the worde should not
 be spoken to them any more. *(For they were
 not able to abide that which was command-
 ed. Yea, though a beast touch the mountaine,
 he shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart:
 *And so terrible was the sight which appea-
 red, that Moses said, I feare and quake.) *But ye
 are come vnto the mount Sion, and to the ci-
 ty

TO THE HEBREWES.

- sic of the living God, the celestially Hierusalem,
 and to the companie of innumerable Angels,
 23 * And to the assembly & congregation of the
 first borne, which are written in heauen, and to
 God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust
 24 and perfite men, * And to Iesus the Mediator
 of the new Testamēt, & to the blood of spirit-
 ling that speaketh better things then that of A-
 25 bel * See that ye despise not him that speaketh
 for if they escaped not which refused him, that
 spake on earth: much more shall we *not escape*,
 if we turne away from him, that *speakes* from
 26 heauen. * Whose voyce then shooke the earth,
 & now hath declared, saying, Yet once more will
 I shake, not the earth onely, but also heauen,
 27 * And this *worde*, Yet once more, signifieth the
 remouing of those things, which are shaken, as
 of those things, which are made *with hand*,
 that the thinges which are not shaken, may re-
 28 maine. * Wherefore seeing we receiue a kingdome,
 which can not be shaken, let vs haue grace
 whereby wee may so serue God, that wee may
 29 please him with reuerence and feare. * For our
 God is a consuming fire.

C H A P. XIII.

- 1 **L**et brotherly loue continue. * Be not forget-
 2 full to enterteine strangers: for thereby
 some haue receiued Angels into their houses
 3 vnwares. * Remember them that are in bonds,
 as though ye were bound with them: and them
 that are in affliction, as if yee were also afflicted
 4 in the bodie. * Mariage is honourable among

CHAP. XIII.

and the bod. vndeſiled: but whoremongers
 adulterers God will indge. * Let your con- 5
 ſcience be without couetouſnes, and be con-
 tent with thoſe things that ye haue, for he hath
 ſaid, I will not faile thee, neither forſake thee. 6
 So that wee may boldly ſay, the Lord is my
 helpe, neither will I feare what man can doe 7
 unto me. * Remember them which haue the o- 8
 uerſight of you, which haue declared vnto you
 the word of God: whoſe ſaith follow, confi-
 dering what hath bene the ende of their conuer-
 ſion. Ieſus Chriſt yeſterday, & to day, the ſame
 ſhall be for euer. * Be not caried about with di- 9
 vers and ſtraunge doctrines: for it is a good
 thing that the hart be ſtabliſhed with grace, and
 not with meates, which haue not profited them
 that haue bene occupied therein. * Wee haue 10
 an altar whereof they haue no authority to eat
 which ſerue in the Tabernacle. * For the bo- 11
 dy of thoſe beaſtes whoſe blood is brought
 into the Holy place by the hie Prielt for ſinne,
 is burnt without the campe. * Therefore euen 12
 ſo, that hee might ſanctifie the people with
 his owne blood, ſuffered without the gate. * Let 13
 us goe forth to him out of the campe, bearing
 his reproch. * For heere haue wee no continu- 14
 ing citie: but we ſeek one to come. * Let vs 15
 therefore by him offer the ſacrifice of praiſe al-
 waies to God, that is the fruit of the lips, which
 confeſſe his Name. * To doe good, and to di- 16
 ſtribute forget not: for with ſuch ſacrifices God
 is pleaſed. * Obey them that haue the over- 17
 ſight

TO THE HEBREWES.

- fight of you, and submit your selves for they
watch for your soules, as they that must give
accounts, that they may doe it with ioy, and
not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.
- 18 * Pray for vs: for wee are assured that we have
a good conscience in all thinges, desiring to
19 liue honestly. * And I desire you somewhat
the more earnestly, that ye so doe, that I may
20 be restored to you more quickly. * The God
of peace that brought againe from the dead
our Lorde Iesua, the greates shepheard of the
sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting
21 Covenant, * Make you perfecte in all good
workes, to doe his will, working in you that
which is pleasant in his sight thorough Iesus
Christ, to whome be praise for euer and euer
22 Amen. * I beseech you also brethren, suffer
wordes of exhortation: for I haue written to
23 you in few wordes. * Knowe that our brother
Timotheus is deliuered, with whom
24 hee come shortly) I will see you. * Salute
them that haue the oversight of you, and
25 the Saints. They of Italie salute you. * Greet
me with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes from
Rome, and sent by Timotheus.

T. H.

THE GENERAL EPI

le of James.

CHAP. I.

JAMES a seruant of God & of the
Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelue
Tribes, which are scattered a-
broad, salutation, * My brethren,
count it exceeding ioy, when yee
receiue diuers tētations, * Knowing that the try-
ing of your faith bringeth forth patience, * And
patience hane her perfect work, that ye may
be perfect and entier, lacking nothing. * If any
man lacke wisdom, let him aske of God,
and hee shall giue it him: but let him aske
with faith, and wauer not: for hee
that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tosse of
the winde, and caried away. * Neither let that
man thinke that hee shall receiue any thing of
the Lord. * A double minded man is vnstable
in all his waies. * Let the brother of low de-
gree ioyce in that he is exalted: * Again he
that is rich, in that hee is made low: for as the
floure of the grasse, shall hee vanish away.
For when the sunne riseth with heate, then
the grasse withereth, and his flower falleth a-
way, and the goodly shape of it perisheth: e-
uen so shall the rich man wither away in all
his waies. * Blessed is the man, that endureth
tētation: for when hee is tried, hee shall
receiue the crowne of life, which the Lorde
hath

JAMES.

- 13 hath promised to them that loue him. * Let
 no man say when hee is tempted, I am tempt-
 ed of God: for God cannot be tempted
 with euill, neither tempteth hee any man.
 14 * But euery man is tempted, when hee is
 drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and
 is entised. * Then when lust hath conceived,
 15 bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is full
 16 shed, bringeth forth death. * Erre not, my dear
 17 brethren. * Every good giuing, and euery per-
 fect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe
 from the Father of lightes, with whome
 no variablenes, neither shadowe of turning.
 18 * Of his owne will begat he vs with the word
 of truth, that wee should be as the first fruits
 19 of his creatures. * Wherefore my dear bre-
 thren, let euery man be swift to heare, slow to
 20 speake, and slow to wrath. * For the wrath of
 man doeth not accomplish the righteousness
 21 of God. * Wherefore lay apart all filthie
 and superfluitie of malicioufnes, and receiue
 with meekenes the word that is graffed in you,
 22 which is able to saue your soules. * And be
 ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely,
 23 deceiuing your owne selues. * For if any bee
 the worde, and doe it not, hee is like vnto
 man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glasse,
 24 * For when hee hath considered himselfe, he
 goeth his way, and forgetteth immediately
 25 what manner of one hee was. * But who
 looketh in the perfect Lawe of libertie, and
 continueth therein, hee not being a forgetter

CHAP. II.

26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100
 101
 102
 103
 104
 105
 106
 107
 108
 109
 110
 111
 112
 113
 114
 115
 116
 117
 118
 119
 120
 121
 122
 123
 124
 125
 126
 127
 128
 129
 130
 131
 132
 133
 134
 135
 136
 137
 138
 139
 140
 141
 142
 143
 144
 145
 146
 147
 148
 149
 150
 151
 152
 153
 154
 155
 156
 157
 158
 159
 160
 161
 162
 163
 164
 165
 166
 167
 168
 169
 170
 171
 172
 173
 174
 175
 176
 177
 178
 179
 180
 181
 182
 183
 184
 185
 186
 187
 188
 189
 190
 191
 192
 193
 194
 195
 196
 197
 198
 199
 200
 201
 202
 203
 204
 205
 206
 207
 208
 209
 210
 211
 212
 213
 214
 215
 216
 217
 218
 219
 220
 221
 222
 223
 224
 225
 226
 227
 228
 229
 230
 231
 232
 233
 234
 235
 236
 237
 238
 239
 240
 241
 242
 243
 244
 245
 246
 247
 248
 249
 250
 251
 252
 253
 254
 255
 256
 257
 258
 259
 260
 261
 262
 263
 264
 265
 266
 267
 268
 269
 270
 271
 272
 273
 274
 275
 276
 277
 278
 279
 280
 281
 282
 283
 284
 285
 286
 287
 288
 289
 290
 291
 292
 293
 294
 295
 296
 297
 298
 299
 300
 301
 302
 303
 304
 305
 306
 307
 308
 309
 310
 311
 312
 313
 314
 315
 316
 317
 318
 319
 320
 321
 322
 323
 324
 325
 326
 327
 328
 329
 330
 331
 332
 333
 334
 335
 336
 337
 338
 339
 340
 341
 342
 343
 344
 345
 346
 347
 348
 349
 350
 351
 352
 353
 354
 355
 356
 357
 358
 359
 360
 361
 362
 363
 364
 365
 366
 367
 368
 369
 370
 371
 372
 373
 374
 375
 376
 377
 378
 379
 380
 381
 382
 383
 384
 385
 386
 387
 388
 389
 390
 391
 392
 393
 394
 395
 396
 397
 398
 399
 400
 401
 402
 403
 404
 405
 406
 407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525
 526
 527
 528
 529
 530
 531
 532
 533
 534
 535
 536
 537
 538
 539
 540
 541
 542
 543
 544
 545
 546

CHÁP. II.

1 brethren, haue not the faith of our glo-
 2 rious Lord Iesus Christ in respect of per-
 3 * For if there come into your companie
 4 with a golde ring, and in goodly appa-
 5 and there come also a poore man in vile
 6 * And yee haue respect to him that
 7 with the gay clothing, and say vnto him,
 8 thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto
 9 poore. Stand thou there, or sit here vnder
 10 the footstole, * Are ye not partiall in your
 11 * Are become iudges of euill thoughtes?
 12 Iken, my beloued brethren, hath not God
 13 the poore of this world, *that they should*
 14 be rich in faith, and heires of the kingdome
 15 which hee promised to them that loue him?
 16 But yee haue despised the poore, Doe not they
 17 oppresse you by tyrannie, and do not they
 18 bring you before the iudgement seates? * Doe
 19 they blaspheme the worthy Name after
 20 which yee be named? * But if yee fulfill the
 21 Lawe, according to the Scripture, *which*
 22 Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy

JAMES.

- selfe, yee doe well. * But if yee regarde the
 persons, yee commit sinne, and are rebuked of
 10 the Lawe, as transgressours. * For whosoever
 shall keepe the whole Lawe, *and yet faileth in*
 11 *one point*, he is guiltie of all. * For he that said,
 Thou shalt not commit adulterie, saide also,
 Thou shalt not kill. Nowe though thou doest
 none adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art a
 12 transgressour of the Lawe. * So speake ye, and
 so doe, as they that shalbe iudged by the Lawe
 13 of libertie. * For there shall be condemnation
 merces to him that sheweth not mercie, and
 14 mercy reioyceth against condemnation. * What
 auaieth it, my brethren, though a man saith
 hee hath faith, when hee hath no workes? can
 15 that faith saue him? * For if a brother or a sister
 16 be naked, and destitute of daily foode, * And
 one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace:
 warne your selues, and fill your bellies: not-
 withstanding yee giue them not those things
 which are needefull to the body, what helpe
 17 it? * Euen so the faith, if it haue no workes, is
 18 deade in it selfe. * But some man might say,
 Thou hast the faith, and I haue workes: shewe
 me thy faith out of thy workes, and I will shew
 19 thee my faith by my workes. * Thou beleeuest
 that there is one God: thou doest well: the de-
 20 uils also beleeue it, and tremble. * But wilt thou
 vnderstande, O thou vaine man, that the faith
 21 *which is without workes, is deade?* * Was not
 Abraham our father iustified through workes,
 when hee offered Isaac his sonne vpon the

CHAP. III.

* Seest thou not that the faith wrought 22
with his workes? and through the workes was
the faith made perfect. * And the Scripture was 23
fulfilled which saith, Abraham beleueed God,
and it was imputed to him for righteousness: &
he was called the friend of God. * Ye see then 24
how that of workes a man is iustified. and not
of faith onely. * Likewise also was not Rahab 25
the harlot iustified through workes, when shee
had receiued the messengers, and sent them out
another way? * For as the bodie without 26
the spirite is dead, euen so the faith without
workes is dead.

CHAP. III.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing 1
that we shall receiue the greater condem-
nation. * For in many things wee sinne all: If 2
any man sinne not in word, he is a perfect man,
and able to bridle all the bodie. * Behold, wee 3
bit into the horses mouthes that they
should obey vs, and wee turne about all their
bodie. * Behold also the shippes, which though 4
they be so great, & are driuen of fierce windes,
yet are they turned about with a very small
rudder, whethersoeuer the gouernour listeth.
Euen so the tongue is a little member, and 5
boasteth of great things: beholde how great a
thing a little fire kindleth. * And the tongue is 6
fire, yea, a world of wickednes: so is the tongue
set among our members, that it defileth the
whole bodie and setteth on fire the course of
nature, & it is set on fire of hel. * For the whole 7

I A M E S.

- nature of beastes, and of birdes, and of creeping things, & things of the sea is tamed, & hath bin tamed of the nature of man. * But the tongue can no man tame. *It is* an vnruely euill, full of deadly poison, * Therewith blesse we God euen the Father, & therewith curse wee men, which are made after the similitude of God. * Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to bee.
- * Doeth a fountaine sende forth at one place sweete water and bitter? * Can the figge tree, my brethren, bring forth Oliues, either a vine figges? so can no fountaine make both salt water and sweete. * Who is a wise man & endued with knowledge among you? let him shew by good conuersation his works in meekenesse of wisdome. * But if yee haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be lyars against the trueth. * This wisdome descendeth not from aboue, but is earthly, sensuall, and deuillish. * For where enuying and strife is, there is sedition, and all manner of euil workes.
- * But the wisdome that is from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be entreated, full of mercie and good fruites, without iudging and without hypocrisie, * And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace, of them that make peace.

C H A P. I I I I.

- FROM whence are warres and contentions among you? are they not hence, *euen* of your pleasures, that fight in your members? * Yes

CHAP. IIII.

& haue not: ye enuie, & desire immoderat-
 & cannot obtaine: ye fight and warre, & get
 nothing, because ye aske not. * Ye aske, and re-
 ceive not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might
 by the same out on your pleasures. * Ye adalte-
 & adulteresses, knowe ye not that the ami-
 tie of the world is the enimitie of God? Who-
 soeuer therefore will be a friend of the world,
 maketh him selfe the enemy of God. * Doe ye
 thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The
 spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after glorie?
 But the Scripture offereth more grace, and
 therefore saith, God resisteth the proud, and gi-
 ueth grace to the humble. * Submit your
 selves to God: resist the deuill, & he will flee
 from you. * Draw neere to God. & he will draw
 neere to you. Clense your hands, ye sinners, and
 purge your hearts, ye double minded. * Suffer
 tribulations, & sorow ye, & weepe. let your laugh-
 er be turned into mourning, & your ioy into
 mourning. * Cast downe your selues before the
 Lord, & he will lift you vp. * Speake not euill
 of another, brethren. He that speaketh euill
 of his brother, or he that condemneth his bro-
 ther, speaketh euill of the Lawe, & condemneth
 the Law: & if thou condemnest the Lawe, thou
 art not an obseruer of the Lawe, but a iudge.
 * There is one Lawgiuer, which is able to saue,
 & to destroy. Who art thou that iudget another
 man? * Go to now ye that say, To day or
 morow we will goe into such a citie, & con-
 uerſe there a yere, and buy and sell, & get gaine,
 * And

JAMES.

14 * (And yet ye can not tell what *shall be* to morrow, For what is your life? It is quen a vapour that appeareth a little time, & alterward vanisheth away) * For that ye ought to say, If the Lorde will, and, if we liue, we will doe thus or that. * But ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euil. * Therefore, to him that knoweth how to do well, & doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

1 **G**O to now, ye rich men: weepe, and howle for your miseries that shal come vpon you.
 2 * Your riches are corrupt, & your garments are motheaten. * Your gold & siluer is cankered and the rust of them shalbe a witnes against you, & shall eate your flesh, as *it were* fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes. * Behold, the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped your fieldes (which is of you kept backe by fraude) cryeth, & the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of hostes.
 3 * Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and in wantonnes. Ye haue nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter. * Ye haue condemned & haue killed the iust, & he hath not resisted you.
 4 * Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, & hath long patience for it, until he receiue the former, & the latter raine. * Be ye also patient therefore and settle your hearts: for the comming of the Lord draweth neere. * Grudge not one against another,

CHAP. V.

father, brethren, least ye be condemned: be-
 holde, the iudge standeth before the doore.
 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an ensam- 10
 ple of suffering aduersitie, and of long patience,
 which haue spoken in the Name of the Lorde.
 Behold, we count them blessed which endure. 11
 Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue
 knowe what end the Lord made. For the Lord
 is very pitifull and mercifull. * But before all 12
 things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by hea-
 ven, nor by earth, nor by any other othe: but
 let your yea, be yea, & your nay, nay least ye fall
 into condemnation. * Is any among you afflic- 13
 ted? Let him pray. Is any merie? Let him sing.
 Is any sicke among you? Let him call for the 14
 Elders of the Church, & let them pray for him,
 and anoint him with oyle in the Name of the
 Lorde. * And the prayer of faith shall saue the 15
 sicke and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he
 haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiven
 him. * Acknowledge your faultes one to ano- 16
 ther, and pray one for another, that ye may be
 blessed: for the prayer of a righteous man avail-
 eth much, if it be seruent. * Helias was a man 17
 subiect to like passions as we are, & he prayed
 earnestly that it might not raine, and it rained
 not on the earth for three yeeres and sixe mo-
 neths. * And he prayed againe, and the heauen 18
 gaue raine, & the earth brought forth her fruite.
 Brethren, if any of you hath erred from the 19
 truth, and some man hath conuerted him, * Let 20
 him knowe that he which hath conuerted the

L P E T E R.

finer from going astray out of his way, and
save a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude
of sinnes.

T H E F I R S T E P I S T L E

generall of Peter.

C H A P. I.

- P**eter an Apostle of Iesus Christ
to the strangers that dwell here
and there throughout Pontus
Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia & Bithynia, * Elect according to the
foreknowledge of God the Father vnto sancti-
fication of the Spirit, through obedience and
sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace
and peace be multiplied vnto you. * Blessed
God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ
which according to his abundant mercie has
begotten vs againe vnto a lively hope by the
resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead, * To
an inheritance immortall & vndefiled, and that
withereth not, reserved in heauen for vs, * Which
are kept by the power of God through faith
vnto saluation, which is prepared to be shewed
in the last time. * Wherein ye reioyce, though
now for a season (if need require) ye are in tribu-
lation, through manifold tentations, * That the
triall of your faith, being much more precious
then golde that perisheth (though it be tryed
with fire) might be found vnto your praise, and
honor & glory at the appearing of Iesus Christ
* Whome ye haue not seene, and yet loue him,

CHAP. I.

in whom nowe, though ye see him not, yet doe
 you belecue, & reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable
 and glorious, * Receiving the end of your faith, 9
 in the saluation of *your* soules. * Of the which 10
 situation the Prophets haue inquired and fear-
 ned, which prophecied of the grace that should
 come vnto you, * Searching when or what 11
 time the Spirit which testified before of Christ
 which was in them, should declare the suffe-
 rings that should come vnto Christ, and the glo-
 ry that should followe. * Vnto whom it was 12
 willed, that not vnto them selues, but vnto
 they should minister the thinges, which are
 now shewed vnto you by them which haue
 preached vnto you the Gospell by the holy
 Ghost sent downe fro heauen, the which thinges
 the Angels desire to behold. * Wherefore, gird 13
 in the loynes of your mind: be sober, and trust
 stedfastly on that grace that is brought vnto
 you, is the reuelation of Iesus Christ, * As obe- 14
 dient children, not fashioning your selues vnto
 the former lustes of your ignorance: * But as 15
 the Father which hath called you, is holy, so be ye holy
 in all manner of conuersation, * Because it 16
 is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy. * And if 17
 ye call him Father, which without respect of per-
 sons,udgeth according to euery mans work, passe
 the time of your dwelling here in feare, * Know- 18
 ing that ye were not redeemed with corruptible
 things, as silver & gold, from your vaine conuer-
 sation, received by the traditions of the fathers,
 but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a 19
 lambe

I. P E T E R.

20 lambe vndefiled, and without spot. * Which
 was ordained before the foundation of the
 world, but was declared in the last times for
 21 your sakes, * Which by his meanes do beleue
 in God that raised him from the dead, and gaue
 him glorie, that your faith and hope might be
 22 in God. * Having purified your soules in obey-
 ing the trueth through the spirit, to loue bro-
 therly without fayning, loue one another with
 23 a pure heart feruently, * Being borne anew, not
 of mortall seede but of immortall, by the word
 of God, who liueth and endureth for euer.
 24 * For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glorie of
 man is as the flower of grasse. The grasse wither-
 25 eth, & the flower falleth away. * But the word
 of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the
 word which is preached among you.

C H A P. I I.

1 **W**herefore, laying aside all maliciousnesse &
 all guile, & dissimulation, & enuie, and all
 2 euill speaking, * As newe borne babes desire
 that sincere milke of the worde, that ye may
 3 grow thereby, * Because ye haue tasted that the
 4 Lord is bountifull. * To whom coming as vn-
 to a liuing stone disallowed of men, but chosen
 5 of God, & precious, * Ye also as liuely stones
 be made a spirituall house, an holy Priesthood
 to offer vp spirituall sacrifices acceptable to
 6 God by Iesus Christ. * Wherefore also it is co-
 tained in the Scripture, Behold, I put in Sion
 chiefe corner stone, elect & precious: & he that
 7 beleueth therein, shall not be ashamed.

CHAP. II.

as you therefore which beleene, it is precious
 vnto them which be disobedient, the stone
 which the builders disallowed, the same is made
 the head of the corner, * And a stone to stumble **8**
 at, & a rocke of offence, euē to *them* which stū-
 ble at the worde, being disobedient, vnto the
 which thing they were euen ordained. * But ye **9**
 are a chosen generation, a royall Priesthood, an
 holy nation, a people set at libertie, that ye
 should shew forth the vertues of him that hath
 called you out of darknesse into his marueilous
 light, * Which in time past were not a people, **10**
 yet are now the people of God: which in time
 past were not vnder mercie, but nowe haue ob-
 tained mercie. * Dearly beloved, I beseech you, **11**
 as strangers and pilgrims, abstaine from fleshly
 lustes, which fight against the soule, * And haue **12**
 your conuersation honest among the Gentiles,
 that they which speake euill of you as of euill
 doers, may by *your* good workes which they
 shall see, glorifie God in the day of visitation.
 * Therefore submit your selues vnto all maner **13**
 ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether
 it be vnto the King, as vnto the superiour, * Or **14**
 vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent of
 him, for the punishment of euill doers, and for
 the praise of them that do well. * For so is the **15**
 will of God, that by well doing ye may put to
 silence the ignorance of the foolish men, * As **16**
 free, and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke
 of malicionnesse, but as the seruants of God.
 * Honour all men: loue brotherly fellowship: **17**
 feare

I. P E T E R.

28 feare God: honour the King. * Servants, be sub-
 29 iect to your masters with all feare, not onely to
 the good and courteous, but also to the stro-
 30 ward. * For this is thanke worthy, if a man for
 conscience toward God endure grieve suffering
 31 wrongfully. * For what praise is it, if when ye
 be buffeted for your faults, ye take it patiently:
 but and if when ye do well, ye suffer *wrong* and
 take it patiently, this is acceptable to God. * For
 hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffered
 for you, leaving you an ensample that ye should
 followe his steppes. * Who did no sinne, nei-
 32 ther was there guile found in his mouth. * Who
 33 when he was reviled, reviled not againe: when
 he suffered, he threatned not, but committed it
 to him that iudgeth righteously. * Who his
 34 owne selfe bare our sinnes in his body on the
 tree, that we being dead to sinne, should live in
 righteousnesse: by whose stripes ye were hea-
 35 led. * For ye were as sheepe going astray: but
 are now returned vnto the shepheard & Bishop
 of your soules.

C H A P. III.

1 Likewise let the wines be subiect to their
 2 husbandes, that even they which obey not
 the word, may without the word be wonne by
 the conneration of the wines, * While they be-
 3 holde your pure conneration, which is with
 feare. * Whose apparelling, let it not be ou-
 4 warde, with broyded haire, & gold put about,
 in putting on of apparell: * But let it be the
 5 hid man of the heart, which consisteth in the
 incorruption

CHAP. III.

corruption of a meeke and quiet spirit, which
 is before God a thing much let by. * For euen
 after this manner in time past did the holy wo-
 men, which trusted in God, tire them selues, and
 were subiect to their husbands. * As Sara obey-
 ed Abraham, and called him Syr: whose daugh-
 ters ye are, whiles ye do well, not being afraide
 of any terror. * Likewise ye husbandes, dwell
 with them as men of knowledge, giuing honor
 vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessell, e-
 uen as they which are heires together of the
 grace of life, that your prayers be not interrup-
 ted. * Finally, be ye all of one minde: one suf-
 fer with another: loue as brethren: be pitifull:
 be courteous, * Not rendring euill for euill, nei-
 ther rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwise blesse,
 knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye
 should be heires of blessing. * For if any man
 long after life, & to see good dayes, let him re-
 straine his tongue from euill, & his lippes that
 they speake no guile, * Let him eschew euill, &
 do good: let him seeke peace, and follow after
 it. * For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righ-
 teous, & his eares are open vnto their prayers:
 and the face of the Lorde is against them that
 doe euill. * And who is it that will harme you,
 if ye followe that which is good? * Notwith-
 standing blessed are ye, if ye suffer for righteous-
 nesse sake. Yea, feare not their feare, neither be
 troubled. * But sanctifie the Lord God in your
 hearts: & be ready alwayes to giue an answer
 to euery man that asketh you a reason of the
 hope

I. P E T E R.

hope that is in you, with meekenesse and
 16 rence, * Having a good conscience, that when
 they speake euill of you as of euill doers, they
 may be alhamed, which slander your good con-
 17 uertation in Christ. * For *it is* better (if the will
 of God be so) that ye suffer for well doing, than
 18 for euill doing. * For Christ also hath once suf-
 fered for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he
 might bring vs to God, and was put to death
 concerning the flesh, but was quickened by the
 19 spirit. * By the which he also went, & preached
 20 vnto the spirites that *are* in prison. * Which
 were in time passed disobedient, when once the
 long suffering of God abode in the dayes of
 Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein
 fewe, that is, eight soules were saued in the wa-
 21 ter. * Whereof the baptisme *that* now we use, is
 swerung that figure. (*which is* not a putting
 way of the filth of the flesh, but a confident
 maunding which a good conscience maketh
 God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of
 22 his Christ, * Which is at the right hand of God,
 gone into heaven, to whome the Angels, and
 powers, and might are subiect.

C H A P. II.

7 FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for
 in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with
 the same minde, *which is*, that he which
 suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sin-
 8 That he henceforward should liue (as man
 time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the
 9 lusts of men, but after the will of God. * And

C H A P. IIIL.

It is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the
 yme past of the life, after the lust of the Gen-
 tiles, walking in wantonnes, lustes, drunkennes,
 in gluttonie, drinkings, & in abominable idola-
 tries. * Wherein it seemeth to them strange, 4
 that ye runne not with them vnto the same
 excess of riot: *therefore* speake they euill of
 you, * Which shall giue accounts to him, that is 5
 iudie to iudge quicke and dead. * For vnto 6
 this purpose was the Gospell preached also vn-
 to the dead, that they might be condemned,
 according to men in the flesh, but might liue
 according to God in the spirit, * Now the ende 7
 of all things is at hand. Be ye therefore sober, &
 watching in prayer. * But aboue all things haue 8
 earnest loue among you: for loue shall couer
 the multitude of sinnes. * Be ye harborers one 9
 to another without grudging. * Let euery man 10
 as he hath receiued the gift, minister the same
 one to another, as good disposers of the mani-
 fold grace of God. * If any man speake, *let him* 11
speake as the wordes of God. If any man mini-
 ster, *let him doe it* as of the abilitie which God
 ministreth, that God in all things may be glori-
 fied through Iesus Christ, to whome is praise &
 dominion for euer, & euer, Amen. * Dearly be- 12
 loued, thinke it not strange concerning the fire
 which shall, which is among you to prooue you, as
 though some strange thing were come vnto
 you: * But reioyce, inasmuch as ye are parta- 13
 kers of Christs sufferings, that when his glorie
 shall appeare, ye may be glad and reioyce. * If 14

I. P E T E R.

ye be railed vpon for the Name of Christ, blessed are ye: for the spirit of glory, & of God resteth vpon you: *which* on their part is euill
 25 spoken of: but on your part is glorified. * But let none of you suffer as a murderere, or as a thiefe, or an euill doer, or as a busie body in
 26 other mens matters. * But if *any man* suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed: but let him
 27 glorifie God in this behalfe. * For the time come, that iudgement must begin at the house of God. If it first *begin* at vs, what shall the end
 28 be of them which obey not the gospel of God? * And if the righteous scarcely be sau'd, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare?
 29 * Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit their soules to him as well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.

C H A P. V.

1 T H E Elders which are among you, I beseech you, which am also an Elder, and a witnes of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the
 2 glorie that shalbe reueiled, * Feede the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy
 3 lucre, but of a readie mind: * Not as though ye were lords ouer Gods heritage, but that ye may be ensamples to the flocke. * And when that chiefe Shepheard shall appeare, ye shall receive an incorruptible crowne of glorie. * Likewise ye younger, submit your selues vnto the elders, and submit your selues euery man one to another: decke your selues inwardly in low
 4
 5
 6
 7
 8
 9
 10
 11
 12
 13
 14
 15
 16
 17
 18
 19
 20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45
 46
 47
 48
 49
 50
 51
 52
 53
 54
 55
 56
 57
 58
 59
 60
 61
 62
 63
 64
 65
 66
 67
 68
 69
 70
 71
 72
 73
 74
 75
 76
 77
 78
 79
 80
 81
 82
 83
 84
 85
 86
 87
 88
 89
 90
 91
 92
 93
 94
 95
 96
 97
 98
 99
 100
 101
 102
 103
 104
 105
 106
 107
 108
 109
 110
 111
 112
 113
 114
 115
 116
 117
 118
 119
 120
 121
 122
 123
 124
 125
 126
 127
 128
 129
 130
 131
 132
 133
 134
 135
 136
 137
 138
 139
 140
 141
 142
 143
 144
 145
 146
 147
 148
 149
 150
 151
 152
 153
 154
 155
 156
 157
 158
 159
 160
 161
 162
 163
 164
 165
 166
 167
 168
 169
 170
 171
 172
 173
 174
 175
 176
 177
 178
 179
 180
 181
 182
 183
 184
 185
 186
 187
 188
 189
 190
 191
 192
 193
 194
 195
 196
 197
 198
 199
 200
 201
 202
 203
 204
 205
 206
 207
 208
 209
 210
 211
 212
 213
 214
 215
 216
 217
 218
 219
 220
 221
 222
 223
 224
 225
 226
 227
 228
 229
 230
 231
 232
 233
 234
 235
 236
 237
 238
 239
 240
 241
 242
 243
 244
 245
 246
 247
 248
 249
 250
 251
 252
 253
 254
 255
 256
 257
 258
 259
 260
 261
 262
 263
 264
 265
 266
 267
 268
 269
 270
 271
 272
 273
 274
 275
 276
 277
 278
 279
 280
 281
 282
 283
 284
 285
 286
 287
 288
 289
 290
 291
 292
 293
 294
 295
 296
 297
 298
 299
 300
 301
 302
 303
 304
 305
 306
 307
 308
 309
 310
 311
 312
 313
 314
 315
 316
 317
 318
 319
 320
 321
 322
 323
 324
 325
 326
 327
 328
 329
 330
 331
 332
 333
 334
 335
 336
 337
 338
 339
 340
 341
 342
 343
 344
 345
 346
 347
 348
 349
 350
 351
 352
 353
 354
 355
 356
 357
 358
 359
 360
 361
 362
 363
 364
 365
 366
 367
 368
 369
 370
 371
 372
 373
 374
 375
 376
 377
 378
 379
 380
 381
 382
 383
 384
 385
 386
 387
 388
 389
 390
 391
 392
 393
 394
 395
 396
 397
 398
 399
 400
 401
 402
 403
 404
 405
 406
 407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525
 526
 527
 528
 529
 530
 531
 532
 533
 534
 535
 536
 537
 538
 539
 540
 541
 542
 543
 544
 545
 546
 547
 548
 549
 550
 551
 552
 553
 554
 555
 556
 557
 558
 559
 560
 561
 562
 563
 564
 565
 566
 567
 568
 569
 570
 571
 572
 573
 574
 575
 576
 577
 578
 579
 580
 581
 582
 583
 584
 585
 586
 587
 588
 589
 590
 591
 592
 593
 594
 595
 596
 597
 598
 599
 600
 601
 602
 603
 604
 605
 606
 607
 608
 609
 610
 611
 612
 613
 614
 615
 616
 617
 618
 619
 620
 621
 622
 623
 624
 625
 626
 627
 628
 629
 630
 631
 632
 633
 634
 635
 636
 637
 638
 639
 640
 641
 642
 643
 644
 645
 646
 647
 648
 649
 650
 651
 652
 653
 654
 655
 656
 657
 658
 659
 660
 661
 662
 663
 664
 665
 666
 667
 668
 669
 670
 671
 672
 673
 674
 675
 676
 677
 678
 679
 680
 681
 682
 683
 684
 685
 686
 687
 688
 689
 690
 691
 692
 693
 694
 695
 696
 697
 698
 699
 700
 701
 702
 703
 704
 705
 706
 707
 708
 709
 710
 711
 712
 713
 714
 715
 716
 717
 718
 719
 720
 721
 722
 723
 724
 725
 726
 727
 728
 729
 730
 731
 732
 733
 734
 735
 736
 737
 738
 739
 740
 741
 742
 743
 744
 745
 746
 747
 748
 749
 750
 751
 752
 753
 754
 755
 756
 757
 758
 759
 760
 761
 762
 763
 764
 765
 766
 767
 768
 769
 770
 771
 772
 773
 774
 775
 776
 777
 778
 779
 780
 781
 782
 783
 784
 785
 786
 787
 788
 789
 790
 791
 792
 793
 794
 795
 796
 797
 798
 799
 800
 801
 802
 803
 804
 805
 806
 807
 808
 809
 810
 811
 812
 813
 814
 815
 816
 817
 818
 819
 820
 821
 822
 823
 824
 825
 826
 827
 828
 829
 830
 831
 832
 833
 834
 835
 836
 837
 838
 839
 840
 841
 842
 843
 844
 845
 846
 847
 848
 849
 850
 851
 852
 853
 854
 855
 856
 857
 858
 859
 860
 861
 862
 863
 864
 865
 866
 867
 868
 869
 870
 871
 872
 873
 874
 875
 876
 877
 878
 879
 880
 881
 882
 883
 884
 885
 886
 887
 888
 889
 890
 891
 892
 893
 894
 895
 896
 897
 898
 899
 900
 901
 902
 903
 904
 905
 906
 907
 908
 909
 910
 911
 912
 913
 914
 915
 916
 917
 918
 919
 920
 921
 922
 923
 924
 925
 926
 927
 928
 929
 930
 931
 932
 933
 934
 935
 936
 937
 938
 939
 940
 941
 942
 943
 944
 945
 946
 947
 948
 949
 950
 951
 952
 953
 954
 955
 956
 957
 958
 959
 960
 961
 962
 963
 964
 965
 966
 967
 968
 969
 970
 971
 972
 973
 974
 975
 976
 977
 978
 979
 980
 981
 982
 983
 984
 985
 986
 987
 988
 989
 990
 991
 992
 993
 994
 995
 996
 997
 998
 999
 1000

linck

CHAP. V.

of minde: for God resisteth the proud, & giveth grace to the humble. * Humble yourselves therefore vnder the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time. * Cast all your care on him: for he careth for you. * Be sober & watch: for your aduersarie the deuill as roaring lyon, walketh about, seeking whome he may deuoure: * Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren which are in the world. * And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a litle, make you perfect, confirme, strengthen, & stablish you. * To whom be glory & dominion for ever, & ever, Amen. * By Siluanus a faithful brother vnto you, and I suppose, haue I written briefly, exhorting & testifying how that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand. * *The Church* that is at Babylon elected together with you, salutes you, and Marcus my sonne. * Greete ye one another with the kisse of loue. Peace be with you which are in Christ Iesus, A M E N.

THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL of Peter.

CHAP. I.

Simon Peter a servant and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to you which haue obtained like precious faith with vs by the righteousness of our God and Saviour Iesus Christ:

Q. 1.

* Grace

II. PETER.

- 2 *Grace & peace be multiplied to you, through
the knowledging of God & of I E S V S our
3 Lord. *According as his diuine power hath gi-
4 uen vnto vs all things that pertain vnto life &
godlines, through the acknowledging of him
that hath called vs vnto glory and vertue.
5 *Whereby moste great, & precious promises
are giuen vnto vs, that by them yee should be
partakers of the diuine nature, in that ye flee
the corruption, which is in the world through
6 lust. *Therefore giue euen all diligence there-
7 to: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith: and
8 with vertue, knowledge: *And with know-
9 ledge, temperance: and with temperance, pati-
10 ence: & with patience, godlines: *And with
11 godlines, brotherly kindnes: and with brother-
12 ly kindnes, loue. *For if these things be among
you, and abound, they will make you that ye
neither shall be idle, nor vnfruitful in the know-
13 ledging of our Lord Iesus Christ: *For he that
hath not these things, is blind, and cannot see
far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged
14 from his olde finnes. *Wherefore, brethren,
giue rather diligence to make your calling & se-
lection sure: for if ye doe these things, ye shall
15 neuer fall. *For by this meanes an entering shall
be ministred vnto you abundantly into the e-
uerlasting kingdom of our Lord & Saviour Je-
16 sus Christ. *Wherefore, I will not be negligent
to put you alwaies in remembrance of these
things, though that ye haue knowledge, and are
17 stablished in the present truth: *For I thought

C H A P. II.

be as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir
 you vp by putting you in remembrance:
 *Seeing I know that the time is at hand that I
 must lay down this my tabernacle, even as our
 Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed me, *I wil ende-
 our therefore alwaies, that ye also may be a-
 ble to haue remembrance of these things after
 my departing. *For we followed not deceiue-
 able fables whē we opened vnto you the pow-
 er & comming of our Iorde Iesus Christ. but
 with our eyes we saw his maiestie: *For he re-
 ceived of God the Father honour and glory,
 whē there came such a voice to him from that
 excellent glory, This is my beloved Sonne in
 whom I am well pleased. *And this voice we
 heard when it came from heauen, being with
 him in the holy mount. *We haue also a most
 true word of the Prophets, to the which ye do
 well that ye take heed, as vnto a light that shi-
 neth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, &
 the day starre arise in your hearts. *So that ye
 may know this, that no prophecie of the Scrip-
 ture is of any private interpretation. *For the
 prophecie came not in old time by the will of
 man: but holy men of God spake as they were
 mooued by the holy ghost.

C H A P. II.

¶ But there were false prophets also among the
 people, even as there shall be false teachers
 among you: which priuily shall bring in dam-
 nable heresies, even denying the Lord that hath
 brought them, & bring vpon themselves swift

Q. 2.

damna-

II. PETER.

- 1 dānation.*And many shall follow their destruc-
 2 tions, by whom the way of truth shall be euil
 3 spoken of.*And through couetousnes shal they
 4 with fained wordes make marchandise of you,
 whose condemnation long since resteth not,
 5 their destruction slumbreth not.*For if God
 spared not the Angels that had sinned, but cast
 them downe into hell, & deliuered them into
 6 chaines of darkenes, to be kept vnto dānation:
 7 *Neither hath spared the old world, but saved
 8 Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteous-
 9 nes, & brought in the flood vpon the world of
 the vngodly,*And turned the cities of Sodom
 & Gomorre into ashes, condemned them and
 10 overthrew thē, & made them an ensample vnto
 11 them that after should line vngodly,*And deli-
 12 uered iust Lot vexed with the vncleanly con-
 13 uersation of the wicked:*(For he being righte-
 14 ous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and
 15 hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day
 16 to day with their vnlawfull deedes)*The Lord
 17 knoweth to deliuer the godly out of temptation
 & to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudg-
 18 ment vnder punishmēt.*And chiefly them that
 19 walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleanness
 and despise gouernment, *which are bolde*, and
 20 stand in their own conceit, & feare not to speake
 21 euill of them that are in dignitie.*Whereas the
 Angels which are greater both in power and
 22 might, giue not railing iudgement against them
 before the Lord.*But these, as naturall brutes
 beastes, led with sensualitie, & made to be like

CHAP. II.

destroyed, speake euill of those things which
 they know not, and shall perish through their
 own corruptiō,*And shall receiue the wages of
 vnrighteousnes, as they which count it pleasure
 daily to liue deliciously: Spots *they are* & blots,
 deluting themselves in their deceiuings, in sea-
 ding with you,*Hauing eies full of adultery,&
 that can not cease to siune, beguiling vnstable
 soules: they haue hearts exercised with coue-
 tousnes, *they are* the children of curse:*Which
 forsaking the right way, haue gone astray, fol-
 lowing the way of Balaam, *the sonne* of Bosor,
 which loued the wages of vnrighteousnes.*But
 he was rebuked for his iniquitie: for the dunne
 beast speaking with mans voice, forbade the
 foolishnes of the Prophet. * These are welles
 without water, & cloudes caried about with a
 tempest, to whom the black darkenes is refer-
 red for euer. *For in speaking swelling wordes
 of vanity, they beguile with wantōnes through
 the lustes of the flesh them that were cleane es-
 caped from them which are wrapped in error,
 Promising vnto them libertie, and are them-
 selues the seruants of corruption: for of whom-
 soeuer a man is overcome, euen vnto the same
 he is in bondage. *For if they, after they haue
 escaped from the filthines of the world, through
 the acknowledging of the Lord, & of the Sau-
 iour Iesus Christ, are yet tangled againe therein,
 & overcome, the latter end is worse with them
 then the beginning,*For it had bene better for
 them, not to haue acknowledged the way of

II. PETER.

righteousnes, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandment
 21 given vnto them. * But it is come vnto the according to the true prouerbe, The dogge is turned to his owne vomite: &, The sow that was washed, to the wallowing in the myre.

CHAP. III.

1 **T**His second Epistle I nowe write vnto you, beloved, wherewith I stirre vp & warne your
 2 pure mindes, * To call to remembrance the words, which were tolde before of the holy
 3 Prophets, & also the commandment of vs the Apostles of the Lord & Saviour. * This first
 4 deritand, that there shall come in the last day mockers, which will walke after their luste.
 5 * And will say, Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers died all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation.
 6 * For thus they willingly knowe not, that the heavens were of olde, & the earth that was by the water & by the water, by the word of god.
 7 * Wherefore the world that then was, perished ouerflowed with the water. * But the heavens & the earth which are nowe, are kept by the same word in store, & reserued vnto fire agnall the day of condemnation, & of the destruction of vngodly men. * Dearly beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord, as a thousand yeres, & a thousand yeres as one day. * The Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men count slacknes) but is patient towards vs, & would haue no man to perish.

CHAP. III.

would all men to come to repentance. *But the
 day of the Lorde will come as a thiefe in the
 night, in the which the heauens shall passe away
 with a noyse, & the elements shall melt with
 heat, & the earth with the works that are ther-
 in shall be burnt vp. *Seeing therefore that all
 these things must be dissolued, what manner
 persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation &
 godlines, *Looking for, & hastening vnto the co-
 ming of that day of God, by the which the hea-
 uens being on fire, shall be dissolued, & the ele-
 ments shall melt with heat? *But we looke for
 new heauens, & a newe earth, according to his
 promise, wherein dwelleth righteousness. *Where-
 fore, beloved, seeing that ye looke for such
 things, be diligent that ye may be found of him
 in peace, without spot, & blameles. *And sup-
 pose that the long suffering of our Lorde is sal-
 uation, even as our beloved brother Paul accor-
 ding to the wisdomne giuen vnto him wrote to
 you. *As one, that in all his Epistles speaketh
 of these things: among the which some things
 are hard to be vnderstand, which they that are
 vnlearned and vnstable, wrest, as they also
 other Scriptures vnto their owne destruction.
 *Ye therefore beloved, seeing yee know these
 things before, beware, least ye be also plucked
 away with the error of the wicked, & fall from
 your owne stedfastnes *But grow in grace, and
 in the knowledge of our Lorde and Saviour
 Iesus Christ: to him bee glory both nowe and
 for euermore, Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE GE.

nerall of John.

CAAP. I.



IHat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue seene with these our eyes, which wee haue looked vpon, and these hands of ours haue handled of that Word of life, *(For that life was made manifest, & we haue seene it, & beare witness, & shewe vnto you that eternall life, which was with the Father, & was made manifest vnto vs)* That, *I say*, which we haue seen & heard, declare we vnto you, that ye also may haue fellowship with vs, and that our fellowship also may be with the Father, & with his Sonne Iesus Christ. *And these things write we vnto you, that that your ioy may be full. *This then is the message, which we haue heard of him, & declare vnto you, that God is light, & in him is no darkenes. *If we say that we haue fellowship with him, & walke in darkenes, we lie, & doe not truly: *But if we walke in the light, as he is in the light. we haue fellowship one with another, & the blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne clemeth vs from all sinne. *If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiue our selues and truth is not in vs. *If we acknowledge our sinnes, he is faithfull and iust, to forgine vs. our sinnes, and to cleanse vs from all vnrighteousnes. *If we say we haue not sinned, we make him a lyar, and his worde is not in vs.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

MY litle children, these things write I vnto
 you, that ye sin not. & if any man sinne, we
 haue an aduocate with the Father Iesus Christ,
 the Iust. * And he is the reconciliation for our
 finnes: & not for ours only, but also for the sinne
 of the whol world. * And hereay we are sure that
 we know him, if we keep his commandemets.
 * He that saith I know him, & keepeth not his
 commandements, is a liar, & the truth is not
 in him. * But he that keepeth his word, in him
 is the loue of God perfect indeed: hereby we
 know that ye are in him. * He that saith, he re-
 maineth in him, ought euen so to walke, as hee
 hath walked. * Brethren, I write no new com-
 mandement vnto you: but an old commande-
 ment, which ye haue had from the beginning:
 this old commandement is that word, which
 ye haue heard from the beginning. * Againe, a
 newe commandement I write vnto you, that
 which is true in him, and also in you: for the
 darkenes is past, & that true light nowe shi-
 neth. * He that saith that he is in that light, &
 hateth his brother, is in darkenes vntill this
 time. * He that loueth his brother, abideth in
 that light, & there is none occasion of euill in
 him. * But he that hateth his brother, is in dark-
 nes, & walketh in darknes & knoweth not whi-
 ther he goeth, because that darknes hath blind-
 ed his eies. * Litle childre, I write vnto you be-
 cause your finnes are forgien you for his names
 sake. * I write vnto you, fathers, because ye haue
 known him that is from the beginning. I write

vnto

I. I O H N.

- vnto you, yong men because ye haue overcome
that wicked one. I write vnto you, litle children,
14 because ye haue knowen the Father. * I haue
writte vnto you, fathers, because ye haue known
him, that is from the beginning I haue written
vnto you, yong men, because ye are strong, and
the word of God abideth in you, & ye haue o-
15 uercome that wicked one. * Loue not this
world, neither the things that are in this world.
If any man loue this world, the loue of the Fa-
16 ther is not in him. * For all that is in this world
(as the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, & the
pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this
17 world. * And this world passeth away, & the lust
thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God,
18 abideth ever. * Litle children, it is the last time,
& as ye haue heard that Antichrist shall come,
even now are there many Antichrists: whereby
19 we know that it is the last time. * They were out
from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had
ben of vs, they should haue continued with vs.
But this *commeth to passe*, that it might appeare,
20 that they are not al of vs. * But ye haue an oin-
tment from that Holy one, & know all things.
21 * I haue not written vnto you, because ye know
not the truth: but because ye know it, and that
22 no lie is of the truth. * Who is a lyar, but he
that denieth that Iesus is that Christ? the same
is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and
the Sonne. * Whosoener denieth the Sonne,
23 the same hath not the Father. * Let therefore
24 abide in you that same which yee haue heard

C H A P. IIL

from the beginning. If that which yee haue
 heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you,
 ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the
 father. * And this is the promise that hee hath
 promised vs, *euen* that eternal life. * These things
 haue I written vnto you, concerning them that
 deceiue you. * But that annoynting which yee
 receiued of him, dwelleth in you: & ye need not
 that any man teach you. but as the same anoin-
 ting teacheth you of all things, & it is true, and
 is not lying, and as it taught you, ye shall abide
 in him. * And now little children, abide in him,
 that when he shall appeare, we may be bold, &
 not be ashamed before him at his comming.
 * If ye know that he is righteous, know ye that
 he which doth righteously, is borne of him.

C H A P. III.

Behold, what loue the Father hath giuen to
 vs, that wee should be called the sonnes of
 God: for this cause this worlde knoweth you
 not, because it knoweth not him. * Dearly be-
 loued, now are wee the sonnes of God, but yet
 it is not made manifest what we shall be: & wee
 know that when he shall be made manifest, we
 shall be like him: for we shall see him as hee is.
 * And euery man that hath this hope in him,
 purgeth himselfe, euen as he is pure. * Whoso-
 euer comitterh sinne, transgresseth also the Law:
 for sinne is the transgression of the Law. * And
 ye knowe that he was made manifest, that hee
 might take away our sinnes, & in him is no sin.
 * Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: who-
 soever

I. I O H N.

- 7 **Forer sinneth, hath not seene him, neither hath knowen him. * Little children, let no man deceiue you: he that doth righteousness, is righteous, as he is righteous. * Hee that committeth sinne, is of the deuill: for the deuill sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose was made manifest that Sonne of God, that hee might loose the workes of the deuill. * Whosoever is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seede remaineth in him, neither can he sinne, because he is borne of God. * In this are the children of God knowne, & the children of the deuill: whosoever doeth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother. * For this is the message, that ye heard fro the beginning, that we should loue one another. * Not as Cain *which* was that wicked one, & slew his brother: & wherefore slew he him? because his own workes were euill, and his brothers good. * Marueile not, my brethren, though this world hate you. * We know that we are translated from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: he that loueth not *his* brother, abideth in death. * Whosoever hateth his brother, is a manslayer: and ye know that no manslayer hath eternall life abiding in him. * Hereby haue we perceined loue, that he laid downe his life for vs: therefore we ought also to lay downe *our* liues for the brethren. * And whosoever hath this worldes good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth up his compassion from him, how dwelleth he in the loue of God in him? * My little children,**

C H A P. I I I I.

not loue in worde, neither in tongue *only*,
 but in deede & in trueth. * For thereby we know
 that we are of the trueth, and shall before him
 shew our hearts. * For if our heart condemne
 vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth
 all things. * Beloued if our heart condemne vs
 not, then haue we boldnes toward God: * And
 whatsoeuer we aske we receiue of him, because
 we keepe his commaundements, and doe those
 things which are pleasing in his sight. * This is
 his commaundement. That we belcene in
 the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue
 one another, as hee gaue commaundement.
 * For he that keepeth his commaundementes
 dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we
 know that he abideth in vs, *euery* by that Spirit
 which he hath giuen vs.

C H A P. I I I I.

Dearly beloued, belcene not enery spirit, but
 trie the spirits whether they be of God: for
 many false prophetes are gone out into this
 worlde. * Hereby shall ye know the Spirit of
 God, Enery spirit which confesseth that Iesus
 Christ is come in the flesh, is of God. * And en-
 ery Spirit that confesseth not Iesus Christ to be
 come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the
 spirit of Antichrist, of whome yee haue heard,
 how that he should come, and now already he
 is in this worlde. * I little children, yee are of
 God, and haue overcome them: for greater is
 he that is in you, then he that is in this worlde.
 * They are of this world, therefore speake they

I. I O H N.

of this worlde, and this worlde heareth him.
 2 * We are of God, hee that knoweth God, heareth vs: hee that is not of God, heareth vs not.
 Hereby know we the Spirit of truth, and the
 7 spirit of error. * Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and every
 one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth
 8 God. * He that loueth not, knoweth not God
 9 for God is loue. * Herein was that loue of God
 made manifest amongst vs, because God sent
 that his onely begotten Sonne into this world,
 10 that wee might line through him. * Herein
 that loue, not that we loved God, but that he
 loved vs, and sent his Sonne to be a reconcili-
 11 tion for our finnes. * Beloued, if God so loued
 12 vs, we ought also to loue one another. * No
 man hath seene God at any time. If wee loue
 one another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue
 13 is perfect in vs. * Hereby know wee, that we
 dwell in him, and he in vs: because he hath
 14 given vs of his Spirit. * And we have seene and
 doe testifie, that the Father sent that Sonne
 15 to be the Saujour of the worlde. * Whosoever
 confesseth that Iesus is the Sonne of God, in
 16 him dwelleth God, and he in God. * And we
 haue knowen, and beleued the loue that God
 hath in vs. God is loue, and hee that dwelleth
 in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.
 17 * Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we shall
 haue boldnes in the day of iudgement: for
 18 he is, euen so are we in this world. * There is
 feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare

C H A P. V.

he feare hath painefulnesse: and he that feareth,
is not perfect in loue. * We loue him, because
he loued vs first. * If any man say, I loue God,
& hate his brother, he is a lyar: for howe can he
that loueth not his brother who he hath seene,
loue God whom he hath not seene? * And this
commanndement haue we of him, that he that
loueth God, should loue his brother also.

C H A P. V.

WHosoener beleueth that Iesus is that
Christ, is borne of God, & every one that
loueth him, which begate, loueth him also
which is begotten of him. * In this we know
that wee loue the children of God, when wee
loue god, & keep his comāundements. * For this
is the loue of God, that we keepe his comāde-
ments: & his comādemēts are not burdenous.
* For al that is born of God, ouercommeth this
world: & this is that victory that hath overcom-
the world, *euē* our faith. * Who is it that over-
cometh this world, but he which beleueth that
Iesus is that Sonne of God? * This is that Ie-
sus Christ that came by water & blood: not by
water only, but by water & blood: & it is that
Spirit that beareth witness: for that Spirit is
truth. * For there are three, which beare record
in heauen, the Father, the *W*orde, and the holy
Ghoſt: and these three are one. * And there are
three, which beare record in the earth, the spirit,
and the water, & the blood: and these three a-
gree in one. * If wee receiue the witness of
men, the witness of God is greater: for this is
the

K I O H N

- the witnesse of God, which hee testified of his
 16 Sonne. * Hee that beleeueth in that Sonne of
 God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: hee that be-
 leueth not God, hath made him a lyar, because
 he beleeued not the record, that God witnessed
 17 of that his Sonne. * And this is that recorde,
 to wit, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall
 18 life, and this life is in that his Sonne. * He that
 hath that Sonne, hath that life: and hee that
 hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.
 19 * These things haue I written vnto you, that
 beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God,
 that ye may know that yee haue eternall life,
 that ye may beleeue in the Name of that Son
 20 of God. * And this is that assurance, that we
 haue in him, that if wee aske any thing accord-
 21 ing to his wil, he heareth vs. * And if we know
 that hee heareth vs, whatsoeuer we aske, we
 know that we haue the petitions that we haue
 22 desired of him. * If any man see his brother
 sinne a sinne that is not vnto death, let him
 aske, and hee shall giue him life for them that
 sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto
 death: I say not that thou shouldest pray for it.
 23 * All vnrighteousnesse is sinne, but there is
 24 sinne not vnto death. * We knowe that who-
 loeuer is borne of God sinneth not: but he that
 is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and the
 25 wicked one toucheth him not. * Wee knowe
 that we are of God, and this whole world lyeth
 26 in wickednesse. * But we know that that Sonne
 of God is come, and hath giuen vs a minde to

CHAP. L.

know him which is true: and wee are in him
that is true, *that is*, in that his Sonne Iesus
Christ this same is that very God, and that e-
uall life. * Little children, keepe your selues
from idoles, Amen.

THE SECOND EPI-

stle of John.

THe Elder to the elect Lady, and
her children, whom I lone in the
trueth: and not I onely, but also
all that haue knowen the trueth,
* For the trueths sake which
dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for euer:
Grace be with you, mercie and peace from
God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ
the Sonne of the Father, with trueth and loue.
I reioyced greatly, that I founde of thy chil-
dren walking in trueth, as wee haue receiued
commandement of the Father. * And nowe
I beseech I thee, Lady, (not as writing a newe
commandement vnto thee, but that same
which we had from the beginning) that we loue
one another. * And this is that loue, that wee
should walke after his commandements. This
commandement is, that as ve haue heard from
the beginning, ye should walke in it. * For many
receiuers are entred into this worlde, which
confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the
flesh. Hee that is such one, is a deceiuer and an
Antichrist. * Looke to your selues, that wee
loose not the things which we haue done, but
R r i that

II. I O H N.

- that we may receive a full reward. * Whoso
 ver transgresseth, & abideth not in the doctrine
 of Christ, hath not God. He that continueth in
 the doctrine of Christ, hee hath both the Father
 and the Sonne. * If there come any vnto you,
 and bring not this doctrine, receive him not to
 house, neither bid him, God speede: * For he that
 biddeth him God speede, is partaker of his euil
 deedes. Although I had many things to write
 vnto you, yet I would not write with paper &
 ynke but I trust to come vnto you, and speake
 mouth to mouth, that our ioy may be full.
 * The sonnes of thine elect sister greeete thee
 men.

THE THIRD EPL

Epl of John.

- T**He Elder vnto the beloued Gi-
 ius, whome I loue in the truth.
 * Beloued, I wish chiefly, that
 thou prosperedst and faredst well
 as thy soule prospereth. * I was
 reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and
 testified of the trueth that is in thee, how thou
 walkest in the trueth. * I haue no greater ioy
 then this, *that is*, to heare that my sonnes walke
 in veritie. * Beloued, thou doest faithfully
 whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and
 strangers. * Which bare witnes of thy loue be-
 fore the Churches. Whome if thou bringest
 their journey as it becometh according to
 thou shalt doe well, * Because that for
 Names sake they went forth, & tooke nothing

I V D E.

of the Gentiles. * We therefore ought to receive
such, that wee might be helpers to the trueth.

* I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes
which loueth to haue the preeminence among
them, receiueth vs not. * Wherefore if I come, I

will cal to your remembrance his deeds, which
he doeth, prating against vs with malicious
words, & not therewith content, neither he him
self receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth the

same would, and thrusteth them out of the
Church. * Beloued, follow not that which is e-
uill, but that which is good: he that doth well,

is of God: but he that doeth euill, hath not seene
God. * Demetrius hath good report of all men,
& of the trueth it selfe: yea, and wee our selues

bear record, & ye know that our record is true.
* I haue many thinges to write: but I will not
with yncke, & penne write vnto thee. * For I

must I shall shortly see thee, & we shall speake
mouth to mouth. Peace be with thee. The
friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

THE GENERAL

EPISTLE OF

Iude.



Vde a seruant of Iesus Christ, and
brother of Iames, to them which
are called & sanctified of God the
Father, & reserued to Iesus Christ:

* Mercie vnto you, and peace
of our Father be multiplied. * Beloued, when
I began to write vnto you, of the

IVDE.

1 common saluatiō, it was needeful for me to write
 vnto you, to exhort you, that ye should earnestly
 2 contende for *the maintenance* of the faith,
 which was once giuen vnto the Saintes. * For
 there are certaine men crept in, which were be-
 fore of old ordeined to this condemnation: *vi-*
 godly men *they are* which turne the grace of
 our God into wantonnesse, and denie God the
 3 onely Lord, and our Lord Iesus Christ. * I will
 therefore put you in remembrance, forasmuch as
 ye once knew this, how that the Lord, after that
 hee had deliuered the people out of Egypt, de-
 4 stroied the afterward which beleened not. * The
 Angels also which kept not their first estate, but
 left their owne habitation, hee hath reserved in
 5 euermolting chaines vnder darkenesse vnto the
 iudgement of the great day. * As Sodom and
 Gomorreh, and the cities about them, which in
 like manner as they did, committed fornicati-
 6 on, and followed strange flesh, are set forth
 for an ensample, and suffer the vengeance of
 7 eternall fire. * Likewise notwithstanding that
 sleepers also defile the flesh, and despise gou-
 8 ernment, and speake euill of them that are in au-
 thoritie. * Yet Michael the Archangel, when he
 stroued against the deuill, and disputed about the
 body of Moses, durst not blame him with re-
 9 sed speaking, but saide, The Lord rebuke thee.
 10 * But these speake euill of those things, which
 they knowe not: and whatsoeuer things they
 know naturally, as beastes which are without
 reason, in those things they corrupt themselves.

IVDE.

*Wo be vnto them: for they haue followed 12
the way of Cain, & are cast away by the deceite
of Balaams wages, & perish in the gainfaying of
Core. * These are spots in your leasts of chari- 13
tie when they feast with you, without all feare,
feeding them selues: cloudes *they are* without
water, caryed about of windes, corrupt trees &
without fruite, twise dead, & plucked vp by the
rootes. * *They are* the raging waues of the sea, 14
soming out their owne shame: *they are* wan-
dering starres, to whome is reuernd the blacke-
nesse of darknes for ever. * And Enoch also the 15
seuenth from Adam, prophesied of such, saying,
Behold, the Lord commeth with thousandes of
his Saints, * To give iudgement against al men, 16
and to rebuke all the vngodly among them of
all their wicked doodes, which they haue vn-
godly committed, and of all their cruell spea-
kings, which wicked sinners haue spoken a-
gainst him. * These are murmurers, complai- 17
ners, walking after their owne lustes: whose
mouthes speake proude thinges, hauing mens
persons in admiration, because of aduantage.
* But, ye beloued, remember the words which 18
were spoken before of the Apostles of our
Lord Iesus Christ, * Howe that they tolde you 19
that there should be mockers in the last time,
which should walke after their owne vngodly
lustes. * These are they that separate themselves 20
from other, naturall, hauing not the Spirite.
* But, ye beloued, edifie your selues in your
most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

R: 3

*And

REVELATION.

- 21 * And keepe your selues in the loue of God,
looking for the mercy of our Lord Iesus Christ
22 vnto eternall life. * And haue compassion of
23 some, in putting difference: * And other saue
with feare, pulling them out of the fire, & liue
even that garmēt which is spotted by the flesh.
24 * Nowe vnto him that is able to keepe you,
that ye fall not, and to present you faultlesse
before the presence of his glorie with ioy,
25 * *That is*, to God onely wise, our Sauour, in
glorie, and maiestie, and dominion, & power,
both nowe and for ever, Amen.

THE REVELATION OF *John the Diuine.*

CHAP. I.

- 1 **T**HE Reuelation of IESVS
CHRIST, which God gaue
vnto him, to shewe vnto his ser-
uants things which must shortly
be done: which he sent, & shew-
ed by his Angel vnto his seruant Iohn, * Who
bare record of the word of God, and of the tes-
timonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that
he sawe. * Blessed is he that readeth, and they
that heare the wordes of this prophetic, and
keepe those things which are written therein:
2 for the time is at hande. * Iohn, to the seuen
Churches which are in Asia, Grace be with you,
and peace from him, Which is, and Which
was, and Which is to come, and from the se-
uen Spirits which are before his Throne, * And
from Iesus Christ, which is that faithfull wit-
nes

CHAP. I.

& that first begotten of the dead, and
 that prince of the Kings of the earth, vnto him
 that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in
 his blood, * And made vs Kings and Priestes
 vnto God euen his Father, to him, *I say, be glo-*
rie, and dominion for euermore, Amen. * Re-
 hold, he commeth with cloudes, and every eye
 shall see him: *yea* euen they which pearced
 him through: and all kindes of the earth shall
 waile before him, Euen so, Amen. * I am Al-
 pha and Omega, the beginning and the ending;
 both the Lorde, Which is and Which was, and
 Which is to come, *euen* the Almighty. * I
 Iohn euen your brother, and companion in tri-
 bulation, and in the kingdome and patience of
 Iesus Christ, was in the yle called Patmos, for
 the word of God, and for the witnessing of Ie-
 sus Christ. * And I was *raashed* in spirit on the
 Lordes day, & heard behind me a great voyce,
 as it had bene of a trumpet, * Saying, I am Al-
 pha and Omega, that first and that last: & that
 which thou seest, write in a booke, and send it
 vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto
 Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Perga-
 mus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and
 vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea. * Then
 I turned backe to see the voyce, that spake with
 me: & when I was turned, I sawe seuen golden
 candlesticks, * And in the middes of the seuen
 candlestickes one like vnto the Sonne of man,
 clothed with a garment downe to the seete, &
 girded about, the pappes with a golden girdle,

R E V E L A T I O N .

14 * His head, and haire were white as white
 wool, & as snow, and his eyes were as a flame
 15 of fire, * And his feet like vnto fine brasle, burn-
 ing as in a forname: & his voyce as the sound
 16 of many waters. * And he had in his right hand
 seven starres: and out of his mouth went a
 sharpe two edged sword. and his face shone as
 17 the sunne shineth in his strength. * And when I
 saw him I fell at his feet as dead: then he laid
 his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare
 18 not: I am that first and that last. * And am a
 liue, but I was dead: and beholde, I am aliue for-
 euermore, Amen: and I haue the keyes of hea-
 19 uen and of death. * Write the thinges which thou
 hast seene, & the thinges which are, & the thinges
 20 which shall come hereafter. * The myserie of
 the seven starres which thou sawest in my right
 hand, and the seven golden candlestickes, & the
 21 The seven starres are the Angels of the seven
 Churches: and the seven candlestickes which
 thou sawest, are the seven Churches.

C H A P . I I .

2 V N T O the Angel of the Church of Ephesus
 write, These thinges saith he that holdeth
 the seven starres in his right hand, and walketh
 in the middes of the seven golden candlestickes.
 3 * I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy
 patience, and howe thou canst not beare with
 them which are euill, and hast examined them
 which say they are Apostles, and are not, and
 4 hast found them liars. * And thou wast bur-
 dened, and hast patience, and for my Names sake

false

C H A P. II.

Thou hast laboured, and hast not fainted. * Ne- 4
 vertheles, I haue *some what* against thee, because
 thou hast left thy first loue. * Remember there- 5
 fore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, &
 do the first workes: or els I will come against
 thee shortly, and will remooue thy candlestick
 out of his place, except thou amend. * But this 6
 thou hast, that thou hatest the workes of the
 Nicolaitanes, which I also hate. * Let him that 7
 hath an eare, heare what the Spirite saith vnto
 the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will
 I giue to eate of the tree of life, which is in the
 garden of the Paradise of God. * And vnto the 8
 Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write,
 These things saith he that is first, and last, which
 was dead and is aliue. * I know thy workes, & 9
 tribulation, and pouertie (but thou art rich) and
 knowe the blasphemie of them, which say they
 are Iewes, and are not, but *are* the Synagogues
 of Satan. * Feare none of those things, which 10
 thou shalt suffer: behold, it shall come to passe,
 that the deuill shall cast some of you into pri-
 son, that ye may be tryed, and ye shall haue tri-
 bulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the
 death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life.
 * Let him that hath an eare heare what the spi- 11
 rit saith to the Churches: He that ouercom-
 meth, shall not be hurt of the second death.
 * And to the Angel of the Church which is at 12
 Pergamus write, This saith he which hath that
 sharpe sword with two edges. * I knowe thy 13
 workes, and where thou dwellest, *even where*
Satan

REVELATION.

Satans throne is, and thou keepest my Name,
and hast not denied my faith, even in those
dayes when Antipas my faithfull martyr was
24 slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth. * But
I have a few things against thee, because thou
hast there them that maintaine the doctrine
of Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stum-
bling blocke before the children of Israel, that
they should eate of things sacrificed vnto idols,
25 and commit fornication. * Euen so hast thou
them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nico-
26 laitanes, which thing I hate. * Repent thy selfe,
or els I will come vnto thee shortly, and will
fight against them with the sworde of my
27 mouth. * Let him that hath an eare, heare what
the Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him
that overcommeth, will I giue to eate of the
Manna that is hid, and will giue him a white
stone, and in the stone a new name written
which no man knoweth sauing he that recei-
28 ueth it. * And vnto the Angel of the Church
which is at Thyatira write, These things saith
the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vn-
29 to a flame of fire, and his feet like fine brasse. *
know thy workes and thy loue and seruice, and
faith, and thy patience and thy workes, & that
30 they are mo at the last, then at the first. * Not-
withstanding I have a few things against thee,
that thou sufferest the woman Iezabel, which
calleth her selfe a prophetesse, to teach and to
31 deceiue my seruants, to make them commit for-
nication, & to eat meates sacrificed vnto idols.

* And

CHAP. III.

And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not. * Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes. * And I will kill her children with death: and all the Churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and heartes: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according vnto your workes. * And vnto you I say, the rest of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepnes of Satan (as they speake) I will put vpon you none other burden, * But that which ye haue alreadye, holde fast till I come. * For he that overcometh, and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I geue power ouer nations, * And he shall rule them with a rod of yron: & as the vessels of potter shall they be broken. * Euen as I receiued of my Father, so will I giue him the morning starre. * Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches.

CHAP. III.

And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, These thinges saith he that hath the seven spirits of God, and the seven starres, I knowe thy workes: for thou hast a name that thou liuest, but thou art dead. * Be awake, and strengthen the thinges which remaine, that are readye to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfite before God. * Remember therefore, how thou hast receiued and heard,

REVELATION.

heard, & hold fast and repent. If therefore thou wilt not watche, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not knowe what houre I will come vpon thee. * *Notwithstanding* thou hast a fewe names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they shall walke with me in white: for they are worthy. * He that ouercommeth shalbe clothed in white rai, and I will not put out his name out of the booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels. * *Tell* him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. * And write vnto the Angell of the Church which is of Philadelphia, These thinges saith he, that is Holy. and True, which hath the key of David, which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth, * I know thy workes: behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength and hast kept my worde, and hast not denyed my name. * Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call them selues Iewes, and are not, but doe lye: beholde, *I say*, I will make them, that they shall come and worship before thy seete, & shall know that I haue loued thee. * Because thou hast kept the worde of my patience, therefore I will deliuer thee from the houre of temptation, which will come vpon the worlde, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth. * Beholde. I come shortly: holde fast, which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

* Him

CHAP. III.

Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar 13
 in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no
 more out: and I wil write vpon him the name
 of my God, and the Name of the citie of my
 God, which is the new Hierusalem, which com-
 meth downe out of heauen from my God, and
 I will write vpon him my new Name. * Let 13
 him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirite
 saith vnto the Churches. * And vnto the Angel 14
 of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These
 things saith Amen, that faithfull and true wit-
 nes, that beginning of the creatures of God: * I 15
 know thy workes, that thou art neither colde
 nor hote: I would thou werest cold or hote.
 * Therefore, because thou art luke warme, and 16
 neither colde nor hote, it will come to passe,
 that I shall spewe thee out of my mouth. * For 17
 thou sayest, I am rich, & increased with goods,
 and haue neede of nothing, and knowest not
 how thou art wretched, and miserable, & poore,
 & blinde, and naked. * I counsell thee to buy of 18
 me gold tryed by the fire, that thou mayest be
 made rich: and white rayment, that thou maist
 be clothed, and that thy filthie nakednesse doe
 not appeare: and anoint thine eyes with eye
 salve, that thou mayest see. * As many as I loue, 19
 I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore &
 amende. * Beholde, I stande at the doore, and 20
 knocke. If any man heare my voyce and open
 the doore, I will come in vnto him, and wil sup
 with him, and he with me. * To him that ouer- 21
 commeth, will I graunt to sit with me in my
 throne,

REVELATION.

throne, euen as I ouercame, and sit with my Father in his throne. * Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

After this I looked, and behold, a doore was open in heaven, and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me, saying, Come vp hither. and I will shewe thee things which must be done hereafter. * And immediately I was *rauisht* in the spirit, and beholde, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat vpon the throne. * And he that sat, was to looke vpon, like vnto a lasper stone, and a sardine, and there was a rainbowe round about the throne, in sight like vnto an emeraud. * And round about the throne were foure and twentie seates, and vpon the seates I sawe foure and twentie Elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, & had on their heades crownes of gold. * And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there were seuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God. * And before the throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto crysell: and in the mids of the throne, and round about the throne were foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde. * And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calfe. & the third beast had a face as a man, & the fourth beast was like a flying eagle. * And the foure beasts had eche one of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes

within,

C H A P. V.

within, and they ceased not day nor night, saying, Holy, holy, holy Lorde God Almighty, Which was, and which is, and Which is to come. * And when those beastes gaue glorie, and honour, and thanks to him that sate on the throne, which lieth for euer and euer, * The foure and twenty Elders fel downe before him that sate on the throne, and worshipped him that lieth for euermore, & cast their crownes before the throne, saying, * Thou art worthie, O Lord, to receiue glorie and honour, & power, for thou hast created all things, and for thy willes sake they are, and haue bene created.

C H A P. V.

And I saw in the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne, a booke written within, & on the backside sealed with seuen scales. * And I sawe a strong Angel which preached with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the scales thereof? * And no man in heauen, nor in earth neither vnder the earth, was able to open the Booke, neither to looke thereon. * Then I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to reade the booke, neither to looke thereon. * And one of the Elders said vnto me, Weepe not: behold, that Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of Dauid, hath obtained to open the booke, and to loose the seuen scales thereof. * Then I behelde, and loe in the middes of the throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the middes of the Elders, stood a Lambe as though he had bene

REVELATION.

- bene killed, which had seven hornes, and seven
 eyes, which are the seven spirits of God, sent in
 7 to all the world. * And he came and tooke the
 Booke out of the right hand of him that sat
 8 vpon the throne. * And when he had taken the
 Booke, the foure beastes and the foure and
 twentie Elders fell downe before the Lambe,
 hauing euery one harpes and golden vials full
 of odours, which are the prayers of the Saints.
 9 * And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art
 worthe to take the Booke, and to open the
 scales thereof, because thou wast killed, and hast
 redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of euery
 kindred and tongue, and people, and nation,
 10 * And hast made vs vnto our God Kings and
 11 Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth. * Then
 beheld, & I heard the voice of many angels
 about the throne, & about the beastes, & the El-
 ders, and there were ten thousande times ten
 12 thousand, & thousand thousands, * Saying with
 a loud voyce, Worthe is the Lambe that was
 killed, to receiue power, & riches, & wisdom,
 13 strength, and honor, and glorie and praise. * And
 all the creatures which are in heauen, & on the
 earth, and vnder the earth and in the sea, and
 that are in them, heard I, saying, Praise, and ho-
 nour, and glory, and power be vnto him, that
 sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe
 14 for euermore. * And the foure beastes said,
 Amen, and the foure and twentie Elders
 fell downe and worshipped him that lieth for
 euermore.

CHAP. VI.

After, I beheld when the Lambe had opened
 one of the scales, & I heard one of the foure
 beasts say, as it were the noise of thunder, Come
 and see. * Therefore I beheld, & loe, there was a
 white horse, & he that sate on him, had a bow,
 and a crowne was giuen vnto him, & he went
 forth cōquering that he might ouercome. * And
 when he had opened the second scale, I heard
 the second beast say, Come & see. * And there
 went out another horse, that was red, & power
 was giue to him that sate thereon, to take peace
 from the earth, & that they shuld kil one another,
 & there was giue vnto him a great sword. * And
 when he had opened the third scale, I heard the
 third beast say, Come & see: Then I behelde, &
 a black horse, & he that sate on him, had ba-
 lances in his hand. * And I heard a voice in the
 mids of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheat
 for a peny, & three measures of barley for a peny,
 & oyle, & wine hurt thou not. * And when he
 had opened the fourth scale, I heard the voice of
 the fourth beast say, Come & see. * And I loo-
 ked, & behold, a pale horse, & his name that sate
 on him was Death, & Hel folowed after him, &
 power was giuen vnto the ouer the fourth part
 of the earth, to kil with sword, & with hunger, &
 with death, & with the beasts of the earth. * And
 when he had opened the fifth scale, I saw vnder
 the altar the soules of them that were killed for
 the word of god, & for the testimony which they
 maintained. * And they cried with a loud voice,
 saying, How long, Lord, which art holy & true!

REVELATION.

- doest thou not iudge & avenge our blood on the
 11 that dwell on the earth? * And long white robes
 were given vnto euery one, & it was said vnto
 the, that they should rest for a litle season vntill
 their fellow seruants, & their brethre that should
 12 be killed euē as they were, were fulfilled. * And
 I beheld whē he had opened the fixt scale & lo,
 there was a great earthquake, & the sunne was
 as blacke as sackcloth of haire, and the moone
 13 was like blood. * And the stars of heauē fel v
 to the earth, as a figtree casteth her greene figs
 14 whē it is shake of a mighty wind. * And heauē
 departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled &
 euery mountaine & yle were moued out of the
 15 places. * And the kings of the earth, & the great
 men, & the rich men, & the chiefe captaynes, &
 the mighty men, & euery bondma, & euery free
 man, hid theselues in dens, & among the rocks
 16 of the mountains. * And said to the mountains &
 rocks, Fall on vs, & hide vs frō the presēce of him
 that sitteth on the throne, & from the wrath of
 17 the Lambe. * For the great day of his wrath
 come, & who can stand? CHAP. VII.

- 1 **A**ND after that, I sawe 4. Angels stand on the
 foure corners of the earth, holding the foure
 winds of the earth, that the windes should not
 blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on
 2 any tree. * And I saw another Angel come
 from the East, which had the seale of the liuing
 God, & he cried with a loud voice to the foure
 Angels to whom power was given to hurt the
 3 earth, & the sea, saying, * Hurt ye not the earth,
 neither

CHAP. VII.

neither the sea, neither the trees, til we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. *And I heard the nūber of the which were sealed, & there were sealed an hundreth & foure & forty thousand of all the tribes of the childre of Israel. *Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed xij. thousand. *Of the tribe of Aser were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed xij. thousand. *Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Zabulō were sealed xij. thousand. *Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed xij. thousand. Of the tribe of Bēlamin were sealed xij. thousand. *After these things I beheld & lo, a great multitude, which no mā could nūber, of all natiōs & kinreds, & people, & tōgues, stood before the throne, & before the Lābe, clothed with long white robes, & palmes in their hāds. * And they cried with a loud voyce, saying, Salvation commeth of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, & of the Lambe. *And all the Angels stood round about the throne. & about the Elders, & the foure beasts, & they sel before the throne on their faces, and worshipped god, saying, Amen. Praise, & glory, & wisdom, and thanks, & honor, & power, & might, be vnto our god for euermore, Amē. *And one of the elders spake, saying vnto me, What are these which

R E V E L A T I O N.

are stayed in long white robes? & whence came they? * And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes, & haue made their lōg robes white in the blood of the Lābe. * Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, & serue him day & night in his Tēple, & he that sitteth on the throne wil dwel amōg thē. * They shal hūger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shal the sūne light on thē, neither any heat. * For the Lambe which is in the mids of the throne, shal gouerne thē, & shal lead thē vnto the liuely fountaines of waters, & God shal wipe away all teares from their eyes.

C H A P. VIII.

1 **A**ND when he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an
2 houre. * And I saw the seuē Angels which stood before God, & to them were giuen 7. trumpets.
3 * Thē another Angel came & stood before the altar, hauing a goldē cēser, & much odours was
4 giuē vnto him, that he shuld offer with the prayers of al saints vpō the goldē altar, which is before the throne. * And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the Saints, went vp before
5 god, out of the angels hād. * And the angel took the cēser, & filled it with fire of the altar, & cast
6 it into the earth, & there were voyces, & thundrings, & lightning, & earthquake. * Then the 7.
7 angels which had the 7. trūpets, prepared themselves to blow the trūpets. * So the first Angel
blew

CHAP. IX.

blew the trumpet, & there was haile & fire mingled with blood, & they were cast into the earth & the third part of trees was burnt, & all greene grasse was burnt. * And the second Angel blew the trumpet, & as it were a great mountaine burning with fire, was cast into the sea, & the third part of the sea became blood. * And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, & had life, died, & the third part of ships were destroyed. * Then the third angel blew the trumpet, & there fell a great starre from heauen burning like a torch, & it fell into the third part of the rivers, & into the fountains of waters. * And the name of the starre is called wormwood: therefore the third part of the waters became wormwood, & many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter. * And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, & the third part of the sunne was smitten, & the third part of the moone, & the third part of the starres, so that the third part of the was darkened: & the day was smitten, that the third part of it could not shine, & likewise the night. * And I beheld, & heard one Angel flying thorough the mids of heauen, saying with a loud voice Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the sounds to come of the trumpet of the 3. Angels, which were yet to blow the trumpets.

CHAP. IX.

And the fift Angel blew the trumpet, & I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth, and to him was given the key of the bottomlesse pit. * And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and there

REVELATION.

2 there arose the smoke of the pit, as the smoke
 of a great furnace, & the sunne, & the aire were
 3 darkened by the smoke of the pit. * And there
 came out of the smoke locusts vpon the earth,
 & vnto the was giue power, as the scorpions of
 4 the earth haue power. * And it was commanded
 the, that they should not hurt the grasse of the
 earth, neither any greene thing neither any tree
 but only those men which haue not the seale of
 5 God in their foreheads. * And to them was co-
 manded that they should not kill them, but that
 they should be vexed 3. moneths, & that their
 6 paine should be as the paine that cometh of
 a scorpion, when he hath stung a man. * There-
 fore in those dayes shall men seeke death, and
 shall not find it, & shall desire to die, & death shall
 7 bee from them. * And the forme of the locusts
 was like vnto horses prepared vnto battel, and
 on their heades were as it were crownes, like
 vnto gold, and their faces were like the faces of
 8 men. * And they had haire as the haire of wo-
 men, & their teeth were as the teeth of lions.
 9 * And they had habergions like to habergions
 of yron: and the sound of their wings was like
 the sound of charets when many horses run vnto
 10 battel. * And they had tails like vnto scorpions,
 there were stinges in their tails, & their power was
 11 to hurt men 3. moneths. * And they haue a king o-
 ver the, which is the angel of the bottomles pit,
 whose name in hebrue is Abaddō, & in greek he
 12 is named Apollyon, that is, destroying. * One was
 in the pit, & behold, yet 3. woes come after this.

* The

C H A P. IX.

¶ The first Angel blew the trumpet, & I heard
 a voice from the foure hornes of the golden al-
 tar, which is before god, * Saying to the first An-
 gel, which had the trumpet, Lose the foure An-
 gels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphra-
 tes. * And the foure Angels were loosed, which
 were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a mo-
 nth, & at a yere, to slay the third part of men.
 * And the number of horsemen of warre were
 twenty thousand times ten thousand: for I heard
 the number of them. * And thus I saw the hor-
 ses in a vision, & them that sat on them, hauing
 serie habergions, & of Iacinth. & of brimstone,
 & the heads of the horses were as the heads of
 lions: & out of their monthes went forth fire
 & smoke & brimstone. * Of these three was the
 third part of men killed, *that is*, of the fire, & of
 the smoke, & of the brimstone, which came out
 of their mouthes. * For their power is in their
 mouthes, & in their tailles: for there tailles were
 like vnto serpents, & had heads, wherewith they
 hurt. * And the remnant of the me which were
 not killed by these plagues, repented not of the
 works of their hands, that they shold not wor-
 ship demils. & idoles of gold & of siluer, and of
 brasse, & of stoncs & of wood, which neither ca-
 see, neither heare nor goe. * Also they repented
 not of their murther, & of their sorcery, neither
 of their fornication, nor of their theft.

C H A P. X.

A N D I sawe another mighty Angel come
 downe fro heauen, clothed with a cloude, &

REVELATION.

- the rainebowe vpon his head, & his face was as the sunne, & his feet as pillars of fire. * And hee had in his hand a little booke open, & hee put his right foote vpon the sea, and his left on the earth, * And he cryed with a loud voyce, as when a lyon roareth: & when he had cried, seuen thunders vttered their voyces. * And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voice from heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders haue spoken, & write them not. * And the Angel which I saw stande vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, list vp his hand to heauen, * And sware by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, & the things that therein are, & the earth, & the things that therein are, & the sea, & the things which therein are, that time should be no more. * But in the daies of the voyce of the seuenth Angel, when he shal begin to blow the trumpet, eue the mysterie of God shal be finished, as hee hath declared to his seruants the Prophets. * And the voice which I heard from heauen, spake vnto me againe, & said, Go & take the little booke which is open in the hande of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea & vpon the earth. * So I went vnto the Angel, & said to him, Giue me the little book. And he said, Take it, & eate it vp, & it shal make thy bellie bitter, but it shalbe in thy mouth as sweete as honie. * Then I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, & ate it vp, & it was in my mouth as sweet as honie, but when I had eaten it, my belly

CHAP. XI.

was bitter. * And he said vnto me, Thou shalt 1
prophecie againe among the people & nations,
and tongues, and to many Kings.

CHAP. XI.

Then was given me a reede, like vnto a rod, &
& the Angel stood by, saying, Rise & mete 1
the Temple of God, & the altar, and them that
worship therein. * But the court, which is with- 2
out the temple, cast out; & thou shalt not for it is
given vnto the Gentiles, & the holy cite shall 3
they tread vnder foot, two & forty moneths.
* But I wil giue power vnto my two witnesses, 4
& they shal prophesy a thousand, two hundred
& threescore daies, clothed in sackcloth. * These 5
are two olive trees, & two candlesticks, standing
before the God of the earth. * And if any man 6
will hurte them, fire proceedeth out of their
mouthes, & deuoureth their enemies: for if any 7
man would hurt them, thus must hee be killed.
* These haue power to shut heaven, that it rain 8
not in the daies of their prophesying, and haue
power ouer waters to turne the into blood, &
to smite the earth with all manner plagues, as
often as they wil. * And whē they haue finished 9
their testimony, the beast that cometh out of
the bottomlesse pitte, shall make warre against
them, & shal ouercome them, & kil them. * And 10
their corpses shal lye in the streetes of the great
cite, which spirituallie is called Sodo. & Egypt,
where our Lord also was crucified. * And they 11
of the people & kindreds, & tongues, & Gētiles
shall see their corpses three daies & an halfe, &
shall

R E V E L A T I O N.

- 27 That not suffer their carkeſes to be put in grom,
 28 * And they that dwell vpon the earth, ſhall re-
 ioyce ouer them & be glad, & ſhall ſende giſts
 one to another: for theſe two Prophets were
 29 them that dwell on the earth. * But after theſe
 30 daies & an halfe, the ſpirit of life comming from
 God, ſhall enter into them, & they ſhall ſtand vpon
 31 vpon their feet: & great feare ſhall come vpon
 32 which ſaw them. * And they ſhall heare a great
 voice from heauen, ſaying vnto them, Come vpon
 hither. And they ſhall aſcend vpon to heauen in a
 33 cloud, & their enemies ſhall ſee them. * And the
 ſame houre ſhall there be a great earthquake, &
 the tenth part of the citie ſhall fall, and in the
 earthquake ſhall be ſlain in nūber ſeuē thouſand
 & the remnant were fore feared, & gaue gloſſe
 34 the God of heauen. * The ſecond wo is paſſed,
 35 behold, the third wo will come anon. * And the
 ſeuenth Angel blew the trumpet, & there were
 great voices in heauen, ſaying, The kingdom
 of this world are our Lords, & his Chriſt, &
 36 he ſhall raigne for evermore. * Then the four
 & twentieth Elders which ſate before God, ſet vpon
 37 their faces, & worſhipped God, * Saying, We
 giue thee thanks, Lord God Almighty, Which
 art, & Which waſt, and Which art to come, for
 thou haſt receined thy great might, & haſt ob-
 38 tained thy kingdome. * And the Gentiles were
 angrie, & thy wrath is come, & the time of
 reuenge, that they ſhould be iudged, & that thou
 ſhouldeſt giue rewarde vnto thy ſeruautes
 the Prophets, & to the Saints, & to them that

CHAP. XXII.

And he, to smite & great, & shouldst destroy
which destroy the earth. * The the Tem-
ple of God was opened in heaven, & there was
in his Temple the Arke of his covenant,
there were lightnings, & voices, & thundings,
and earthquake, and much hail.

CHAP. XII.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven
A woman clothed with the sunne, and the
moon was vnder her feet, & vpon her head a
crown of xii. starres. * And she was with child,
travailing in birth, & was pained ready
to be deliuered. * And there appeared another
wonder in heaven: for behold, a great red dragon
having seven heads, & ten hornes, & 7. crownes
vpon his heads: * And his taile drew the 3. part
of the starres of heaven, & cast the to the earth.
And the dragon stood before the woman, which
was ready to be deliuered, to deuoure her child
when she had brought forth. * So she brought
forth a man child, which should rule all nations
with a rod of yron: & that her child was taken
vp vnto God and to his throne. * And the wo-
man fled into wildernes where she hath a place
prepared of God, that they should feede her
there a thousand, two hundreth and three score
daies. * And there was a battell in heauē, Micha-
el & his Angels, fought against the dragon, and
the dragon fought and his angels, * But they
preuailed not, neither was their place founde
any more in heauen. * And the great dragon
that olde serpent, called the doubleband Serpent,

was

REVELATION,

was cast out, which deceiveth all the world.
 hee was ~~ever~~ cast into the earth, and his an-
 gels were cast out with him. * Then I heard a
 loud voice in heaven, saying, Now is saluacion
 & strength, & the kingdome of our God, & the
 power of his Christ: for the accuser of our bre-
 thren is cast downe, which accused them before
 our God day & night. * But they overcame him
 by the blood of that Lamb, & by that word of
 their testimonie. & they loued not their liues
 vnto the death. * Therefore reioyce ye heauens,
 & ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants
 of the earth, & of the sea: for the deuill is come
 down vnto you, which hath great wrath, know-
 ing that he hath but a short time. * And when
 the dragon saw that he was cast vnto the earth,
 he persecuted the woman which had brought
 forth the man child. * But to the woman were
 giuen two wings of a great eagle, that she might
 flye into the wilderness, into her place, where she
 is nourished for a time, & times, & halfe a time,
 from the presence of the serpent. * And the ser-
 pent cast out of his mouth water after the wo-
 man, like a flood, that he might cause her to be
 caried away of the flood. * But the earth holpe
 the woman, & the earth opened her mouth, &
 swallowed vp the flood, which the dragon had
 cast out of his mouth. * Then the dragon was
 wroth with the woman, & went & made war
 with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the
 commandments of God, & haue the testimonie
 of Iesus Christ. * And I stood by the sea side.

CHAP. XIII.

And I saw a beast rise out of the sea, having
 seven heads, & ten hornes, & vpon his hornes
 were ten crownes, & vpon his heads the name
 of blasphemy. * And the beast which I saw, was
 like a Leopard, & his feet like a beastes, and his
 mouth as the mouth of a lyon: & the dragon
 gaue him his power & his throne, & great au-
 thoritie. * And I saw one of his heads as it were
 wounded to death, but his deadly wound was
 healed, & all the world wondred, & followed
 the beast. * And they worshipped the dragon
 which gaue power vnto the beast, & they wor-
 shipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the
 beast: who is able to war with him. * And there
 was ginen vnto him a month, that spake great
 things & blasphemies, & power was ginen vnto
 him, to doe two & fourtie moneths. * And he
 opened his mouth vnto blasphemy against
 God, to blaspheme his Name, & his tabernacle,
 and them that dwell in heauen. * And it was
 ginen vnto him to make warre with the saints,
 & to ouercome them, & power was ginen him
 ouer euery kinred, & tongue, & nation. * There-
 fore all that dwel vpon the earth, shall worship
 him, whose names are not written in the Book
 of life of that Lamb, which was slaine from the
 beginning of the world. * If any man haue an
 eare, let him heare. * If any lead into captivity,
 he shall goe into captiuitie: If any kill with a
 sword, he must be killed by a sword: here is the
 patience & the faith of the Saintes. * And I be-
 holde another beast comming vp out of the
 earth,

REVELATION.

- 7 death, which had two hornes like the Lamb,
 12 but he spake like the dragon. * And he did
 that the first beast could do before him, and he
 caused the raith, & them which dwell therein
 to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound
 13 was healed. * And he did great wonders, so that
 he made fire to come downe from heauen
 14 to the earth, in the sight of men. * And decreed
 them that dwell on the earth by the signs
 which were permitted to him to do in the sight
 of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the
 earth, that they should make the image of the
 beast, which had the wound of a sword, & did
 15 live. * And it was permitted to him to give
 spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that the
 image of the beast should speak, & should cause
 that as many as would not worship the image
 16 of the beast, should be killed. * And he made
 both small & great, rich & poore, free & bond
 to receiue a marke in their right hand, or
 17 their foreheads, * And that no man might buy or
 sell, saue he that had the marke, or the name of
 18 the beast, or the number of his name. * Here is
 wisdom. Let him that hath wit, count the num-
 ber of the beast: for it is the number of a man,
 & his number is sixe hundreth, threescore & sixe.

C H A P. XIIII.

- 1 **T**hen I looked & loe, a Lamb stood on mount
 Sion, & with him an hundreth, fourtie and
 soure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name writ-
 2 ten in their foreheads. * And I heard a voice frō
 heauen, as the sound of many waters, & as the
 sound

found of a great thundre: & I heard the voice of
harpers harping with their harpes. * And they
sing as it were a new song before the throne,
before the foure beastes, & the Elders, & no
man could learne that song, but the hundred
thirty & foure thousand, which were bought
from the earth. * These are they, which are not
defiled with women: for they are virgins: these
follow the Lamb whether soeuer he goeth these
were bought from men, being the first fruits vn-
to God, & to the Lamb. * And in their mouthes
was found no guile: for they are without spot
before the throne of God. * Then I saw another
Angell flie in the mids of heauen, hauing an e-
uangelizing Gospell, to preach vnto them that
dwell on the earth, & to euery nation, & kin-
dred, & tongue, & people, * Saying with a loude
voice, Feare God, & giue glory to him: for the
houe of his iudgement is come: and worship
him that made heauen and earth, and the sea,
& the fountaines of waters. * And there follow-
ed another Angell, saying, Babylon that great
citie is fallen, it is fallen: for shee made all na-
tions to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her
fornicatiō. * And the third Angell folowed them,
saying with a loud voice, If any mā worship the
beast & his image, & receiue his marke in his
forehead, or on his hand, * The same shal drinke
of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the
pure wine which is powred into the cup of his
wrath, & he shal be tormented in fire & brim-
stone before the holy Angels, and before the
Lamba.

REVELATION.

- 11** **Laube.** *And the smoke of their torment shall ascend evermore: & they shall have no rest day nor night, which worship the beast & his image, & whosoever receiveth the print of his Name.
- 12** *Here is the patience of Saintes: here are they that keepe the commandements of God, & the faith of Iesus.
- 13** *Then I heard a voice from heaven, saying vnto mee, Write, The dead which die in the Lord, are fully blessed. Even so saith the Spirit: for they rest from their labours, and their workes follow them.
- 14** *And I looked, and behold, a white cloude, & vpon the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, having on his head a golden crowne, & in his hand a sharp sickle.
- 15** *And another Angell came out of the Temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloude, Thrust in thy sickle & reape: for the time is come to reape: for the harvest of the earth is ripe.
- 16** *And he that sat on the cloude thrust in his sickle on the earth, & the earth was reaped.
- 17** *Then another Angell came out of the Temple, which is in heaven, having also a sharp sickle.
- 18** *And another Angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire, & cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, and saide, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, & gather the clusters of the vineyarde of the earth: for her grapes are ripe.
- 19** *And the Angell thrust in his sharp sickle on the earth, & cut down the vines of the vineyarde of the earth, and cast them into that great wine presse of the wrath of
- 20** **God.** *And the winepresse was troden without the

the citie, & blood came out of the winepresse,
into the horses bridles, by the space of a thou-
sand and six hundredth furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

And I sawe another signe in heauen, great &
marueilous, seuen Angels, hauing the seuen
last plagues for by them is fulfilled the wrath
of God. * And I saw as it were a glasse sea, min-
gled with fire, & them that had gotten victorie
of the beast, & of his image, and of his marke, &
of the number of his name, stand by the glasse
sea hauing the harpes of God. * And they sing
the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the
song of the Lambe, saying, Great & marueilous
are thy works, Lord God almightie, iust & true
are thy waies, King of Saints. * Who shall not
praise thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name, for
thou onely art holy, & all nations shall come &
worship before thee: for thy iudgements are
made manifest. * And after that, I looked & be-
held the temple of the tabernacle of testimo-
ny was open in heauen. * And the seuen Angels
came out of the Temple, which had the seuen
plagues, clothed in pure & bright linnen, & ha-
uing their breastes girded with golden girdles.
* And one of the foure beasts gaue vnto the se-
uen Angels seuen golden vialles full of the
wrath of God, which liueth for euermore. * And
the Temple was full of the smoke of the glory
of God & of his power, and no man was able
to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues
of the seuen Angels were finished.

REVELATION.

CHAP. XVI.

- 1 **A**ND I heard a great voyce out of the Tem-
ple, saying to the seven Angels, Goe your
waies, and powre out the seven vialles of the
wrath of god vpon the earth. * And the first went
2 & powred out his viall vpon the earth: & there
fell a noy some & a grievous sore vpon them
which had the marke of the beast, & vpon them
3 which worshipped his image. * And the second
Angel powred out his vial vpon the sea, and it
became as the bloode of a deade man: & every
4 living thing died in the sea. * And the third An-
gel powred out his vial vpon the riuers & foun-
5 taines of waters, & they became blood. * And I
heard the Angel of the waters say, Lorde thou
art iust, Which art, & Which wast: & holy, be-
6 cause thou hast iudged these things. * For they
shed the blood of the Saintes, and Prophetes,
and therefore hast thou giuen them blood to
7 drinke: for they are worthie. * And I heard an-
other out of the Sanctuary say, Euen so, Lord
God almightie, true & righteous are thy iudg-
8 ments. * And the fourth Angel powred out his
vial on the sunne, & it was giuen vnto him to
9 torment men with heat of fire. * And men be-
led in great heate, & blasphemed the Name of
God, which hath power ouer these plagues: &
10 they repented not, to give him glorie. * And the
fift Angel powred out his vial vpon the throne
of the beast, & his kingdom waxed dark, & they
11 gnawed their tongues for sorow, * And blasphemed
the God of heauen for their paines, & for

their fo-
the sixt
that
vpon
should
somes
ragon
the
the the
vnto t
world
say of
these
came
hinet
to a p
the se
ire &
he o
and
ings
was r
high
was
atio
mem
cup
And
were
like
men
the l
the

CHAP. XVI.

their sores, & repented not of their works. * And 12
 the sixth Angel powred out his viall vpon the
 great river Euphrates, & the water thereof dry-
 up, that the way of the Kings of the East
 should be prepared. * And I saw three vncleane 13
 spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of that
 dragon, & out of the mouth of that beast, & out
 of the mouth of that false prophet. * For they 14
 are the spirits of devils, working miracles, to go
 vnto the kings of the earth, and of the whole
 world, to gather the to the battel of that great
 day of God Almighty. * (Beholde, I come as a 15
 thiefe. Blessed is he that watcheth & keepeth his
 garments, lest he walk naked, & men see his fil-
 thinesse) * And they gathered them together in- 16
 to a place called in Hebrew Arma-gedon. * And 17
 the seventh Angel powred out his vial into the
 aire & there came a loude voice out of the Te-
 mple of heauē from the throne, saying, It is done.
 * And there were voices & thundrings, & light- 18
 nings, & there was a great earthquake, such as
 was not since men were vpon the earth, eue so
 mightie an earthquake. * And the greates citle 19
 was diuided into three parts, & the cities of the
 nations fell, and that great Babylon came in re-
 membrance before God, to giue vnto her the
 cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.
 * And every yle fled away, and the mountaines 20
 were not found. * And there fell a great haile, 21
 like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, and
 men blasphemed God because of the plague of
 the haile: for the plague thereof was exceeding
 great.

REVELATION.

CHAP. XVII.

- 1 **T**hen there came one of the seven Angels, which had the seven vialles, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come: I will shew thee the damnation of the great whore that sitteth vpon many waters,* With whome haue committed fornication the Kings of the earth, & the inhabitants of the earth are drunken with the wine of her fornication. *
- 2 So hee caryed me away into the wildernesse in the Spirit, and I sawe a woman sit vpon a skarlet coloured beast, ful of names of blasphemie, which had seven heades, and ten hornes. *
- 3 And the woman was arrayed in purple and skarlet, and gilded with golde, and precious stones, and pearles, and had a cuppe of gold in her hande, full of abominations and filthines of her fornication.* And in her forehead was a name written, A mysterie, that great Babylon, that mother of whoredomes, & abominations of the earth. *
- 4 And I sawe the woman drunken with the blood of Saints, and with the bloode of the martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great marueile. *
- 5 Then the Angel said vnto me, Wherefore marueilest thou? I will shew thee the mysterie of that woman, & of that beast, that beareth her, which hath seven heades, and ten hornes. *
- 6 The beast that thou hast seene, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pitte, and shall goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth, shall wonder (whose names are not written in the Booke of life,

from

CHAP. XVII.

from the foundation of the worlde) when they
 behold the beast that was, & is not, and yet is.
 Here is the minde that hath wildome. The seue
 heads are seuen mountaines, whereon the wo-
 man sitteth: they are also seuen Kings. * Five are
 fallen, & one is, & another is yet come: & when
 he cometh, hee must continue a short space.
 * And the beaste that was, & is not, is euen the
 eight, and is one of the seuen, & shall goe into
 destruction. * And the ten hornes which thou
 sawest, are ten kings, which yet haue not recei-
 ued a kingdom, but shal receiue power, as Kings
 in one houre with the beast. * These haue one
 minde, and shall giue their power, and au-
 thoritie vnto the beaste. * These shall fight
 with the Lambe, & the Lambe shall overcome
 them: for he is Lord of Lords, & King of Kings:
 & they that are on his side, called, & chosen, and
 faithfull. * And hee saide vnto mee, The waters
 which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are
 people, & multitudes, and nations, and tongues.
 * And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon
 the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, &
 shall make her desolate and naked, and shal eat
 her flesh, and burne her with fire. * For God
 hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, & to
 doe with one consent, for to giue their king-
 dome vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God
 be fulfilled. * And that woman which thou saw-
 est, is that great citie, which reigneth over the
 Kings of the earth.

T t 3

CHAP.

REVELATION

CHAP. XVIII

1 **A**Nd after these things, I saw another Angel
 2 come down fro heauen, hauing great pow-
 3 er, so that the earth was lightned with his glori-
 4 ry. * And hee cried out mightily with a loud
 5 voice, saying, It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylo that
 6 great citie, & is become the habitatio of devils,
 7 & the hold of al foule spirits & a cage of every
 8 vncleane & hatefull birde. * For al nations have
 9 drunken of the wine of the wrath of her forni-
 10 cation, & the kings of the earth have commis-
 11 sed fornication with her, & the marchants of
 12 the earth are waxed rich of the abundance of
 13 her pleasures. * And I heard another voice from
 14 heauen say, Goe out of her, my people, that ye
 15 be not partakers of her sinnes, & that ye receiue
 16 not of her plagues. * For her sinnes are come
 17 vp into heauen, & God hath remembred her in-
 18 quities. * Reward her, euen as she hath rewarded
 19 you, & giue her double according to her worke
 20 in the cup that she hath filled to you, fil hee
 21 the double. * In as much as thee glorified her
 22 false, & liued in pleasure, so much giue ye to her
 23 torment and sorrow: for she saith in her heart,
 24 I sit being a queene, & am no widowe, & shall
 25 see no mourning. * Therefore shall her plagues
 26 come at one day, death, & sorrow, & famine, &
 27 shee shall be burnt with fire: for that God which
 28 condemneth her, is a strong Lord. * And the
 29 Kings of the earth shall bewaile her, & lament
 30 for her, which haue committed fornication, &
 31 liued in pleasure with her, when they shall see
 32 the

CHAP. XVIII.

the smoke of that her burning, * And shall stand
 afar off for feare of her torment, saying, Alas,
 alas, that great citie Babylon, that mighty city:
 for in one houre is thy iudgement come. * And
 the marchants of the earth shall weep & waile
 ouer her, for no man buleth thir wares any
 more. * The wares of gold & silver, & of precious
 stone, & of pearls, & of fine linnen, & of purple, &
 of silke, & of skarlet; & of all manner of Thyne
 wood, & of all vessels of yorie, & of all vessels
 of most precious wood, & of bras, & of iron,
 & of marble, * And of cynamon, & odours, and
 ointments, and frankincense, & wine, and oyle,
 and fine flower, and wheate, & beasts, & sheepe,
 & horses, & charets, & servants, and soules of
 men, * (And the apples that thy soules lusted af-
 ter, are departed from thee, & all things which
 were fat & excellent, are departed from thee,
 & thou shalt finde them no more) * The mar-
 chants of these things which were waxed rich,
 shall stand a farre off from her, for feare of her
 torment, weeping & wailing, * And saying, Alas,
 alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine lin-
 nen & purple, & skarlet, & wiled with gold &
 precious stone, & pearles. * For in one houre so
 great riches are come to desolation. And eu-
 erie shippemaster, & all the people that occupy
 ships & shipmen, & whosoener trafike on the
 sea, shall stand a farre off, * And cry, when they see
 that smoke of that her burning, saying, What
 city was like vnto this great citie? * And they
 shall cast dust on their heads, & cry, weeping &
 way-

REVELATION.

wayling, & say, Alas, alas, that great city, where
in were made rich all that had ships on the sea
by her costlines: for in one houre thee is made
20 desolate. *O heauen, reioyce of her, & ye holy
Apostles & Prophets: for God hath punished
21 her to be reuenged on her for your sakes *The
almightie Angell tooke vp a stone like a great
millstone, & cast it into the sea, saying, with such
violence shall that great citie Babylon be cast, &
22 shall be found no more. *And the voice of har-
pers & musicians, & of pipers, & trumpetters
shall be heard no more in thee, & no craftsmā,
of whatsoeuer craft be, shall bee found anie
more in thee: & the sound of a millstone shall be
23 heard no more in thee. *And the light of a cā-
dle shall shine no more in thee: & the voice of
the bridegroom & of the bride shall be heard
no more in thee: for thy marchants were the
24 great men of the earth: & with thine inchant-
ments were deceiued all nations. *And in her
was found the blood of the Prophets, & of the
Saints, & of all that were slaine upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 And after these things I heard a great voice
of a great multitude in heauen, saying, Hal-
2 leluiah, saluation & glory, & honour, & power,
be to the Lord our God. *For true & righteous
are his iudgements: for hee hath condemned
that great whore, which did corrupt the earth
with her fornicatio, & hath auenged the blood
of his seruants shed by her hand. *And againe
they said, Halleluiah: & that her smoke rose vp
for

CHAP. XIX.

for evermore. * And the foure & twenty Elders; 4
 & the 4. beasts fell downe & worshipped God
 that sat on the throne, saying, Amen, Hallelu-
 iah. * Then a voice came out of the throne, say- 5
 ing, Praise our God ol ye his servants, & ye that
 feare him, both smal & great. * And I heard like 6
 a voice of a great multitude, & as the voice of
 many waters, & as the voice of strōg thūdrings;
 saying, Hallelu iah: for the Lord that God that
 Almightye one hath reigned. * Let vs be glad 7
 & reioyce, & giue glory to him: for the marri-
 age of that Lamb is come, & his wife hath made
 her selfe ready. * And to her was granted, that 8
 she should be craied with pure fine linnen & shi-
 ning, for the fine linnen is the righteousness of
 Saints. * Then he said vnto me, write, Blessed are 9
 they which are called vnto the Lambes supper:
 And he said vnto me, These words of God are
 true. * And I fel before his feet, to worship him: 10
 but he said vnto me, See thou doe it not: I am
 thy fellow servant, & one of thy brethrē, which
 haue the testimony of Iesus. Worship God: for
 the testimony of Iesus, is the spirit of prophecy.
 * And I saw heauen open, and beholde a white 11
 horse, & he that sat vpō him, was called, Faith-
 ful & true: & he iudgeth & fighteth righteously. 12
 * And his eies were as a flame of fire, & on his
 head were many crowns: & he had a name writ-
 ten, that no mā knew but himself. * And he was 13
 clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and his
 name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.
 * And the hostes which were in heauē, followed 14
 him

REVELATION.

- 15 **Men vpon white horses, clothed with fine lins**
white & pure. * And out of his mouth wēt out
 a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the
 heathen, for he shall rule thē with a rod of iron;
 for he it is that treadeth the winepresse of the
 16 **fiencenes & wrath of Almighty God.** * And he
 hath vpon his garmēt, & vpon his thigh a name
 written, **THE KING OF KINGS, AND**
 17 **LORD OF LORDS.** * And I saw an An-
 gel stand in the sunne, who cried with a loud
 voyce, saying to all the soules that did flye by
 the mids of heauen, Come, & gather your selues
 together vnto the supper of the great **G O D.**
 18 * That ye may eat the flesh of Kings, & the flesh
 of hie Captaines, & the flesh of mightie men,
 the flesh of horses, & of thē that sit on them,
 the flesh of al free men & bondmē, & of final-
 19 **great.** * And I saw the beast, & the Kings of the
 earth, & their hosts gathered together to make
 battel against him, that sat on the hors, & against
 20 **his army.** * But the beast was taken, & with him
 that falsie prophet that wrought miracles befoie
 him, whereby he deceined thē that receiued the
 beasts mark, & thē that worshipped his image.
 These both were alieue cast into a lake of fire,
 21 **burning with brimstone.** * And the rēnant were
 slain with the sworde of him that sitteth vpon
 the horse, which commeth out of his mouth, &
 all the soules were filled with their flesh.

C H A P. XX.

- 1 **And I saw an Angel come downe from he-**
uen, hauing the key of the bottomlesse pit,

CHAP. XX.

& a great chaine in his hand. * And he tooke the **2**
 dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and
 Satan, & he bound him a thousand yeres. * And **3**
 cast him into the bottomles pit, & he shut him
 vp, & sealed the doore vpon him, that he should
 deceiue the people no more, till the thousand
 yeres were fulfilled: for after that he must be
 loosed for a litle season. * And I saw seates: and **4**
 they sate vpon them, and iudgement was gi-
 uen vnto them, & I sawe the soules of the that
 were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, & for
 the worde of God, and which did not worship
 the beast, neither his image, neither had taken
 his marke vpon their foreheades, or on their
 hands: and they liued, & reigned with Christ a
 thousand yeres. * But the rest of the dead men **5**
 shall not liue againe, vtill the thousand yeres
 be finished: this is the first resurrection. * Bles- **6**
 sed & holy is he, that hath part in the first resur-
 rection: for ou such the second death hath no
 power: but they shalbe the priests of God, & of
 Christ, & shal reigne with him a thousand yeres.
 * And when the thousand yeres are expired, Satan **7**
 shalbe loosed out of his prison, * And shall go **8**
 out to deceiue the people, which are in the 4.
 quarters of the earth: *even* Gog and Magog to
 gather the together to battel, whose number is as
 the sand of the sea. * And they wet vp into the **9**
 plain of the earth, & they compassed the tents of
 the saints about, and the beloued city: but fire
 came down from God out of heauen, & deuoured
 the. * And the deuill that deceiued the, was cast **10**
 into

REVELATION.

into a lake of fire & brimstone, where that beast
& that false prophet are, & shalbe tormēted, day
11 & night for evermore. * And I saw a great
white throne, & one that sat on it, from whose
face fled away both the earth & heave, & their
12 place was no more found. * And I saw the dead,
both great & small stand before god: & the bookes
were opened, and another booke was opened,
which is the booke of life, & the dead were iudged
13 of those things, which were written in the
bookes, according to their workes. * And the sea
gaue vp her dead which were in her, & death &
hell deliuered vp the dead which were in the: &
they were iudged euery mā according to their
14 workes. * And death & hell were cast into the
lake of fire: this is the second death. * And what
soever was not found written in the booke of
life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 AND I saw a new heauen & a new earth: for
the first heauen, & the first earth were passed
2 away, & there was no more sea. * And I Iohn
saw the holy citie new Hierusalem come down
3 fro God out of heave, prepared as a bride trim-
med for her husband. * And I heard a great voice
out of heauen, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of
4 God is with me, & he wil dwel with the & they
shalbe his people, & God himselfe shalbe their
5 God with them, * And God shal wipe away all
teares from their eyes: and there shalbe no more
death, neither sorow, neither crying, neither shal
there be any more paine: for the first things are
passed,

CHAP. XXI.

passed: *And he that sate vpon the throne, said, 5
 Behold, I make all things new: & he said vnto
 me, Write: for these words are faithful & true.
 *And he said vnto me, It is done: I am Alpha & 6
 Omega, the beginning & the end. I will giue to
 him that is a thirst, of the well of the water of
 life freely. *He that ouercometh shal inherite al 7
 things, & I will be his God, & he shalbe my sone
 *But the fearfull & vnbeleeuing, & the abomi- 8
 nable & murtherers, & whoremogers, & force-
 ers & idolaters, & al liars shal haue their part in
 the lake, which burneth with fire & brimstone,
 which is the secod death. *And there came vn- 9
 to me one of the 7. Angels which had the seue
 nals ful of the 7. last plagues, & talked with me,
 saying, Come: I will shewe thee the Bride, the
 Lambes wife. *And he caryed me away in the 10
 spirit to a great & an hie mountaine, & he shew-
 ed me that great citie, that holy Hierusalem, des-
 cending out of heauen fro god, *Hauing the glory 11
 of God: and her shining was like vnto a stone
 most precious, as a lasper stone cleare as cristal,
 *And had a great wal & hie, & had xij. gates, & 12
 at the gates twelue angels, & the names writte,
 which are the xij. tribes of the childre of Israel.
 *On the East part *there were* 3. gates, & on the 13
 Northside 3. gates, on the Southside 3. gates, &
 on the Westside 3. gates. *And the wal of the 14
 city had xij. fudations, & in them the names of
 the Labs xij. Apostles. *And he that talked with 15
 me, had a goldē reed to measure the citie with-
 al, & the gates thereof, & the wall therof, *And 16
 the

REVELATION.

- the citie lay foure square, & the length is as large
as the bredth of it, & he measured the city with
the reed, xij. thousand furlongs : & the length &
27 the breadth & the height of it are equall. * And
he measured the wal thereof, an hūdreth, forty
& 4. cubits, by the measure of mā, that is, of the
28 Angel. * And the building of the wal of it was
of lasper: and the citie was pure gold, like vnto
29 cleare glasse. * And the fūdations of the wal of
the city were garnished with all maner of pre-
cious stones: the first fūdation was Iasper: the
second of Saphir: the third of a Chalcedonie
30 the fourth of an Emeraude: * The fift of a Sar-
donix: the sixt of a Sardius: the seuēth of a chris-
solite: the eight of a Beryl: the ninth of a To-
paze: the tenth of a Chrysoprasus: the eleuenth of
31 a Iacynth: the twelfth of an Amethyst. * And the
xij. gates were xij. pearles, & euery gate is of one
pearle, & the streete of the city is pure golde, a
32 shining glasse. * And I saw no Tēple therein for
the Lord God almighty & the Lambe are the
33 Tēple of it: * And this city hath no need of the
sunne, neither of the Moone to shine in it: for
the glory of God did light it & the Lābe is the
34 light of it. * And the people which are saved
shall walke in the light of it: & the kings of the
earth shall bring their glory & honour vnto it.
35 * And the gates of it shall not be shut by day:
36 for there shal be no night there. * And the glory
& honor of the Gētiles shalbe brought vnto it.
37 * And there shall enter into it none vncleane
thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abominati-

an of life, but they which are writtē in the liab
booke of life. C H A P. XXII.

And he shewed me a pure riuer of water of
life, cleare as cristall, proceeding out of the
throne of God, & of the Lambe. * In the mids
of the streete of it, & of either side of the riuer,
was the tree of life, which bare xij. manner of
fruits, & gane fruit euery moneth: & the leaues
of the tree *serued* to heale the natiōs with. * And
there shall be no more curse, but the throne of
God, & of the lambe shalbe in it, & his seruants
shall serue him. * And they shall see his face, and
his name shalbe in their foreheads. * And there
shalbe no night there. & they neede no candle,
neither light of the sunne: for the Lord God gi-
ueth thē light, & they shal reigne for evermore.
* And he said vnto me, These words are faithfol
& true: & the Lord God of the holy Prophets
set his angel to shew vnto his seruāts the things
which must shortly be fulfilled. * Behold, I come
shortly. Blessed is he that keepeth the words of
the prophecie of this booke. * And I am Iohn,
which saw & heard these things: & when I had
heard & seene, I fel down to worship before the
fet of the angel, which shewed me these things.
* But he said vnto me, See thou *do* it not: for I
am thy fellow seruāt, & of thy brethren the pro-
phets, & of them which keepe the wordes of this
booke: worship God. * And he said vnto me,
Seale not the wordes of the prophecie of this
booke: for the time is at hand. * He that is vn-
iust, let him be vnjust still: & he which is filthy, let
him

REVELATION.

- him be filthy still: & he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: & he that is holy, let him be holy still. * And behold, I come shortly, & my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. * I am Alpha & Omega, the beginning & the end, the first & the last. * Blessed are they, that do his commandments, that their right may be in the tree of life, & may enter in through the gates into the city. * For without shall be dogs, & enchanters, & whoremongers, & murderers & idolaters, & whosoever loveth & maketh lies. * I Jesus have sent mine Angel, to testify unto you these things in the Churches: I am the root, & the generation of David, & the bright morning starre. * And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come: & let whosoever will, take of the water of life freely.
- 18 * For I protest unto every man that heareth the wordes of the prophetic of this booke, if any man shall adde unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues, that are written in this booke: * And if any man shall diminish of the wordes of the booke of this prophetic, God shall take away his part out of the booke of life, & out of the holy citie, & from those things which are written in this booke. * He which testifieth these things saith, Surely, I come quickly.
- 21 Amen. I men so, come Lord Iesus. * The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

THE END.

the
co-
ced
vir
in
out
&
&
to
es:
the
the
day,
le
ly.
the
my
dote
thin
the
God
of
ings
te-
ckly
ce of
ren.